Arifureta Publication Commemoration SS

Publication Commemoration SS

Beloved people of Narou, good evening.

Recently, you know that I'm spending an increasingly good chuuni life.

This is Chuuni Suki, the one who have the privilege of posting「Arifureta Shokugyou de Sekai Saikyou」.

Now then, in this occasion, I have the privilege of reporting that「Arifureta Shokugyou de Sekai Saikyou」will be published by Overlap Bunko-sama.

It seems that there will be even a special site created at the official website of Overlap-sama.

The detail will be announced in the near future.

「Arifureta」will change shape to be on paper page, but please keep taking care of me from here on too.

I write a bit extra story for the commemoration of the book publication.

It's a what-if story unrelated with the main story.

「Haa, haa, kuu, what persistence-. I should just obediently follow Hajime-san's warning.」

Shia cursed while nimbly running with her beautiful faint bluish-white hair trailing behind her. Her usual innocent smile couldn't be seen on her face, her own failure and the evil hand that was currently cornering her into this bitter situation caused her prided rabbit ears to busily twitching around in vigilance against the surrounding.

Shia was pushing her way through the narrow path among the buildings while nimbly evading the trash cans and plumbing like an acrobat. It was as though she was in the middle of a desperate escape……no, in fact Shia was really forced to escape no matter how hard to believe it was.

Shia who was categorized as inhuman person along with Hajime and others didn't have any existence that could be a threat for her. Her ability was such that even made the magic cheat Yue to say「Your physical ability is bugged」. An existence that could force such Shia to escape……

「I, I found herrr! The rabbit-eared girl Shia-chaaaaan!」

「Hii!?」

A person carrying a backpack on his back, wearing a T-shirt with moe character design, blazing eye glint peeking from the gap of his long hair, with his hand carrying a tough camera——he was The Otaku.

Just before Shia could get out from the back alley, that otaku youth appeared from the back door of a building that opened roughly, which caused Shia to reflexively raise a pitiful shriek.

That was only natural. The reason was because Shia's rabbit ears detected his presence to be at the other side of the building just a moment ago. Yet despite so, he appeared before her eyes right after she got distracted for a moment. It wouldn't be that strange even if an absurd existence like this existed at the previous world, but that was impossible.

That was because this was earth, the home world of Hajime.

The otaku youth faced Shia whose face was shuddering. He readied his camera and suddenly he lowered his head in a snap.

「Pho, photo, please!!」

「I told you no already-!」

Shia reflexively retorted back. However, the otaku young man wasn't discouraged at all.「E, even so please-!」Even though he was stuttering, but he lowered his head even deeper with a force that strangely emitted a formidable will.

Seeing how she made no progress, Shia used the wall of the building to make a wall-kick jump and flew over the head of the otaku youth. She came out into a street somewhere.

Then, it seemed that the angry yell of Shia was heard, the fellows who were chasing after Shia until just now——the otaku group was gathering bustlingly.

「Ra, Rabbit ear-san, please, let me take a photo-!」

「One snap, just one snap is fine-」

「Ca, can I call you Shia-tan-」

「Tha, that gaze, please turn it over here!」

「Can I ask you, to pose? I, if possible please make gun shape with your fingers. Also, can you make the rabbit ear's shape to droop a bit more? Or rather, I, I have a uniform here, ca, can I ask you to change into it?」

In the blink of eye, otaku young men (middle-aged men included) and the curious onlookers who were wondering if there was some kind of event, were starting to form a crowd.

「Uu, just why this is happening desuu? Even though there are people wearing cat ear or dog ear, why is it only me……thi, this is just like what Hajime-san said, 『the neighborhood of Akiba is rough』desuu」

Shia's face contorted and about to cry. The surrounding was already packed with the warriors of Akiba, they were waiting impatiently for Shia's permission of photo opportunity.

Yes, the place where Shia was currently at, was Earth's Tokyo metropolis, right in the middle of Akibahara. If it was asked about why Shia who came to earth together with Hajime was now at Akibahara, it was because of a reason that wasn't particularly deep……

Putting that aside, Shia who was showing an interest to Akihabara was given a serious warning by Hajme. He said, if Shia entered the neighborhood of Akiba as she was, there would be a great commotion without a doubt.

'That was because Shia's rabbit ear was the real thing', that wasn't the only reason. Thinking normally, no matter how real it looked, surely there wouldn't be

anyone thinking that it was actually real. But, in this occasion, it was irrelevant whether it was the real thing or not.

Her beautiful long hair with faint bluish white color that could be mistaken as moonlight, her beautiful face that could make foreign idol to run away with tail between their legs, her perfect proportion that could put model to shame, her loveliness that came from her gentle atmosphere despite her beauty, which made anyone wanted to look at her forever. That kind of miraculous girl, was completed with twitching rabbit ears.

For the humans at Akiba, no, as long as someone was a man, it would be impossible for their heart to be not stolen!

That was why, Hajime firmly warned Shia to not go to Akiba by herself, and in the case she went anyway, Hajime handed her a disguise artifact to change her look.

Shia was thinking「This is exaggerated desuu」, even so she wore the artifact and in the end she went to Akiba by herself but……here she made a sorrowful miss. Everything at her surrounding was unusual, and her eyes were stolen by girls intentionally putting on animal ears by themselves, seeing that Shia carelessly took off her artifact.

When she did that, naturally Shia's beauty and charm were exposed. And then, the otakus swarmed like hyenas.

If here the warriors of Akiba committed rudeness to Shia and tried to force her, Shia would send them flying mercilessly and then she would vanish right away.

However, as expected from them who was a gentleman despite being a warrior. They would lower their head and ask for permission without fail before taking their camera, even though they were passionately making request without reservation, but they didn't bulldoze their way through.

Shia who had received warning from Hajime in the beginning, and what's more she even committed mistake of getting rid of her artifact, she became unable instead to act forceful toward the otaku group who was like that.

And so she attempted to escape from Akiba, but the warriors of Akiba weren't

that soft. Just like how the craftsmen of Hairihi Kingdom chased after Hajime before, they were earnestly coming to beg at Shia using wondrous tracking skill, physical ability, and coordination between fellow warriors that made Shia couldn't help but making retort「Are you guys really normal human!?」. Their figures made it as though the OTAKU nesting in AKIBA was really a different race.

Shia was thinking,「The station of Akiba is far away……」, like that.

「Fuu, it cannot be helped. I didn't really want to do preposterous thing in Hajime-san's world but……it's already too late for that like this.」

By the time the voice of「Please, let us take a picture」was starting to become a great chorus, Shia sighed deeply while starting to walk briskly. The crowd surrounding Shia in circle became noisy, but Shia walked straight ahead without minding that and came to a stop in front of a young man.

The young man was muttering「Eh, eh? M, me? By any chance, it's coming? My springtime is coming?」, but as expected Shia didn't pay that any attention and she firmly grabbed the shoulders of the young man.

The young man went beet red from having both his shoulders grabbed by a foreign super beautiful girl wearing rabbit ears that couldn't be compared even with the countless idols he had seen. The surrounding was getting noisier.

The young man was making an expression that was vaguely containing hope. However, Shia gifted him with words that were heartless, that could also be considered as reward for a part of peculiar kind of human.

「I'm sorry. Can I ask you to kneel for a bit?」

「Eh?」

「Can you kneel, for me?」

Shia smiled sweetly while putting on strength that was just barely the limit. The young man was befuddled for a moment, but for some reason his face got even redder, then he bent his knee while breathing roughly in excitement. It seemed that this young man was also "a part of peculiar kind of human".

Shia put her foot on the shoulder of that young man. The young man gulped his saliva seeing the beautiful leg peeking out from the skirt. The surrounding

people were also holding their breath, wondering if an abnormal play was really going to start in front of a crowd this big. Camera lenses were gleaming here and there.

But, the next moment, they were blinking in astonishment.

「Well then everyone, forgive me for making ruckus.」

Saying that, Shia put her weight on the foot stepping on the young man's shoulder, and then the next moment she leaped high. The young man surprisingly didn't feel the feedback that would normally come from getting used as footstool for jumping even though he was slightly lurching forward. He felt surprised while coming back to his senses and turned around quickly.

There, he saw the figure of Shia twirling through a rotation midair while making the head of a bald uncle at the back as the next footstool. Like that, Shia was making the warriors of Akiba as footstool while advancing rapidly through the crowd.

「I, I was used as footstool!?」

「Shi, Shia-tan's beautiful foot, o, on my head, haa haa」

「Ste, step on me toooo! Shia-tan's footsie, grind on meee!!」

「Rabbit ear going pyon pyon……it's the real thing. It's the real rabbit-eared GIRLLLLL!! I cannot hold it in-」

「Right now, I'm witnessing a miracle……」

The warriors were greatly stimulated by Shia hopping around overhead the crowd. Her rabbit ears twitching *pyoko pyoko*, her rabbit tail shaking left and right *furi furi*, and then the brutally prancing melons *barun barun* pushed them to the verge of madness.

Of course, Shia wasn't aiming for that by doing this. Originally it was something easy for her to break out of the crowd with a single jump. However, doing that was only possible for a true inhuman person. Using people as footholds and jumped around was barely still in the range that could be processed using common sense.

Ignoring the commotion from the warriors of Akiba, Shia landed firmly at the

end with a great jump that was accompanied with a splendid midair somersault that would make gymnastic athlete to go blue, and then without pause she sprinted away like a fleeing rabbit. The warriors who went ‘hah’ in realization started to move all at once.

「This time for sure, I swear I will reach Akiba stationnn! Don’t look down at the rabbit that overcame even the apostle of god desu!」

Surely the god apostles too would cry in the shadow if they knew they were compared with Akiba warrior.

Like that, Shia dashed through the last alley, and she caught the sight of Akihabara station ahead, her mouth burst into a broad smile thinking that she would quickly return to Hajime and receive punishment, it was at that time,

A second tale that was completely involuntary for Shia was starting.

In the shape of a hole that was like a pitch dark black hole suddenly appeared right under the foot of Shia who was stepping forward.

「Eh?」

Losing the place where her foot could step, Shia lurched forward and she was falling toward the hole. However, this person was one of the inhuman monsterr~s. She instantly activated the Air Force that was instilled into her shoes and used that as foothold in her attempt to escape to the opposite side.

But,

「Wha-!? I’m sucked!?」

Yes, the expression of black hole fitted that hole perfectly. It captured Shia with a radical absorbing force that was hard to oppose, as though it was the Absolute Catastrophe that Yue was controlling.

「Kuh, Hajime-san-!」

Because of the completely unexpected surprise attack, and because her combat senses had been receding since she came to earth, Shia was unable to deal with the absorption and in the end she called at the name of her beloved lover while being swallowed into the abyss.

Silence returned at the alley where Shia vanished. There was already no sign

remaining that Shia had been there, a breeze blew through the alley vainly.

◇◆◇◆◇◆◇◆◇◆◇◆

Shia felt a solid ground under her butt after a terrible sense of weightlessness. Light was overflowing her field of vision that she couldn't see clearly. However, her excellent sensing ability to detect presence detected multiple presences surrounding her at the other side of the light.

「It seems I avoided an instant death but……this place smell strongly with troublesomeness.」

Shia was smiling bitterly while pouring magic power into the ruby encrusted ring on her left hand's ring finger. At the same time she lifted her palm to the side and clenched it into fist. Vire Doryukken manifested with a superb timing and settled inside her grasp.

It was an unforeseen situation, but the profound weight of her partner caused a fearless smile to emerge on Shia's face. No matter what happened, she had the confidence that she would smash through all of them and her resolve that she would reunite with Hajime without fail was dwelling brightly inside her eyes as though it had been engraved there.

Like that, when Shia observed the situation while putting up her vigilance, the light was vanishing before long as though it was melting into the space.

'Now then, what kind of bunches had done the idiotic action of kidnapping me', ahead of Shia's gaze that narrowed dangerously was,

「Oo, is it a success!?」

「As expected from the palace's head magician-done.」

「Look at that beauty. It is as though she is the goddess of the moon.」

「No, more important than that, that thing growing at that person's head……it could be, that she is a retainer of Spinea-sama.」

There were around twenty people who seemed to be soldiers wearing clothes like priest robe and armor. They were making noise of shock and happiness. Shia was looking around at the surrounding while keeping silent. A young man that looked slightly exhausted stepped forward to such Shia.

The young man was wearing a robe that was decorated with geometrical pattern of splendid ultramarine and silver, his hand was holding a cane that was created from tree that seemed to be a twisted evergreen oak, a jewel that looked like sapphire was attached on its tip. His vibrant silver long hair was tied at its root. He was wearing a small pince-nez glasses and his eyes of long slits gave an intellectual impression. He was a dreadfully handsome man of intellectual type.

That kind of intellectual handsome man faced Shia and he opened his mouth, however, someone grabbed his shoulder from behind and stopped him from speaking.

「Wait Reed. Don't approach carelessly. That woman is holding a weapon. We don't know what she might do.」

The one who was saying that while sending vigilant and suspicious gaze at Shia was another dreadfully handsome man. He had vibrant blonde hair and golden eyes. His sharp gaze resembled carnivore beast, and his body was obviously well-trained even through the light armor he was wearing. He was a man that gave an impression as though he was a wild lion.

「Ee~, is that so? I think she is a really cute young woman though? I want to approach her right away.」

「Phil, just shut your mouth. I don't need to hear the opinion of a playboy.」

「Even though you said that, But Erick is also thinking inside your heart 'Su~per cute', right? Besides, look, Greg who normally has no interest to girl is completely charmed there.」

The one who spoke with frivolous tone was also a handsome man as expected. His appearance was slovenly with his chest greatly exposed and his hand playing around with his wavy deep green hair.

Furthermore, there was one more man whose body built was larger than the others, however, as expected he was also a handsome man as though it had been arranged beforehand. This man with short black hair was focusing his gaze at Shia.

Looking at them, Shia who was considerably growing impatient opened her

mouth while tapping Vire Doryukken on her shoulder.

「Excuse me, I don't know what is your objective in kidnapping me, but if you are not hostile, then can you explain the situation already? I also want to go home quickly, so if possible I want you to teach me the method to go home without any antagonism.」

Hearing that, the blonde haired man who seemed to have a really haughty and prideful personality might be taking offense from Shia's attitude, his eyes narrowed while he opened his mouth.

This time it was the silver haired gentle man who stopped the blond hair. He then made a gentle smile while speaking about their objective.

「My apologies. We are calling you here, is because we wish for you to save this world. My deepest apologies of our rudeness in doing this for our own convenience. But, please, I beg you to bring salvation to our world.」

Like that, the word that was the template, and in a sense was commonplace word was said decisively.

「——Hero-sama.」

After that, during the few months before Hajime was coming to pick her up, a great tale was unfolding, like splattering the monsters threatening the world, or splattering the fighting between countries, or splattering the handsome army that became the prisoner of Shia's charm, or splattering the demon king together with the handsome men who weren't discouraged even with the splattering they experienced, or getting showered with marriage proposals as the hero that saved the world from the princes of many countries, dragon king, spirit king, etc., anyway they were all handsome men, or having Hajime who came to pick her up going *DOPAN*- at them, but……all those would be told at another chance someday.

The End

'Thinking carefully, Shia is really made up with main character qualities huh', I tried to write this from that kind of thinking. If you like, please try to have your imagination run wild with a tale of Shia shooing off handsome men in another

world that is overflowing with them while playing an active role by grandly beating enemy to death.

Well then, please kindly treat well the published version too.

Table of Content

Arifureta Chapter 180

Arifureta After – Morning at the Nagumo House Part 1

AN: Thank you very much for a lot of the review about the completion.

From here on too, Shirakome will enjoy myself while discharging wild idea bit by bit, and it will make me happy if you readers can keep accompanying me.

「……Wake up. Wake up, Hajime.」

His dozing off awareness was led to awakening by a soft voice and a gentle shake. Because of the brightness seen through the back of his eyelids, he could tell the curtains had been opened. It was morning, and the sun was insisting on its presence.

「……Don't mind me. Go on, ahead.」(TN: Here Hajime is using a line like a hero who will stay behind so other can escape safely)

「……It's no good using clichéd line like that. Breakfast will get cold. So wake up.」

He tucked himself into the bed like a bagworm and tried to take a journey into the dream world, this man who was trying to journey to the dream world with a voice that was going to disappear anytime, was the eldest son of this household——Nagumo Hajime. And then, the one who was making a troubled smile to such Hajime even while kept urging him gently to get out of the bed, was Hajime's beloved vampire princess that came from another world——Yue.

Yue sat down beside the bed and she gently stroked the *black hair* of Hajime who was curling in to himself. Her slender fingertips caressed through Hajime's

hair, combing them down. And then, her eyes squinted affectionately and she quietly brought her lips toward Hajime's ear.

A small *chuu* sound resounded and Hajime twitched in reaction. Perhaps enjoying that reaction of Hajime, Yue's look was increasingly bursting open in happiness, next she held Hajime's earlobe into her mouth. Hajime once more twitched in reaction. Yue kept playfully nibbling then. And Hajime kept twitching from that.

Yue separated her lips from Hajime's ear with *chupa* sound before she opened her mouth while blowing a feverish sigh on Hajime's ear.

「……If you don't wake up……Hajime will be the breakfast.」

「I'll wake up.」

It was a lovely speech, but there were his parents downstairs, other than them there were also the freeloaders and his daughter. Making a ruckus complete with moaning sound「aah-」from morning would be problematic in various meaning. The neighbors too would be guaranteed to look at him later with grinning expression saying「oh my」. Therefore, Hajime pushed aside the futon with a snap and woke up.

「Good morning, Yue.」

「……Nn. Good morning.」

Hajime's hair that was curling up here and there was fixed attentively by Yue using her hand as comb. Since the morning the atmosphere of the two was already teeming with mushiness. It even felt like the morning sunlight brightly shining in through the window was growing dim in reservation from these two's lack in prudence.

Hajime who was exposing a dazed waking up face which was unthinkable if it was at the period when he was journeying the other world Tortus, was narrowing his eyes toward his lover that was caressing his head in front of his eyes. While he was at it he was also running his gaze through the surrounding relaxedly.

Inside the room, seventy percent of it was buried in bookshelves and the books and the games that were put there, and then there were a desk and reclining

chair, a good quality desktop PC, and also a closet between the bookshelves. A window was attached at the wall that was facing south, a navy blue curtain the same color with the bed was hanging over it.

(…..I'm still feeling that this room is 'nostalgic'. it must be because the experience at the other side is too strong. If I still feel like this after going home for a year, then it might take a half more year to be able to live without feeling anything is out of place.)

Hajime sighed a bit inside his heart. And then, he clenched his left hand repeatedly as though to ascertain it. That arm didn't shine with dull metallic gleam, *its appearance* was that of a normal human arm. It had elastic skin and slight mark of suntan similar with his right arm.

Furthermore, Hajime also gently traced his right eye with his fingertip. There, he didn't feel the sensation of eye patch that was in the process of becoming his trademark in Tortus. Far from that, there wasn't even the bluish white shine that was the trait of god crystal. The eye's appearance was a dark brown eyes that looked like the eye of a normal Japanese as expected.

「……Nn? Hajime, what's wrong? It feels uncomfortable?」

Yue noticed Hajime's state, she then brought her face closer until their nose tip almost touched while tilting her head. The sweet fragrance that tickled Hajime's nasal cavity made him got slightly bewitched while he shook his head.

「No, there is no discomfort in both my arm and my eye. Thanks to Yue and others' cooperation, the artificial skin and the artificial eyes are all in extremely excellent condition. No one would notice as long as they don't get scanned in detail at hospital. If I have to say, perhaps I'm feeling discomfort from this situation where there is no discomfort.」

「……? Hajime feel discomfort from the appearance of your body?」

「Yeah. After all the experience over there was just too dense. The metallic arm, the crystal eye, and also the white hair, all those were already *me*. That's why, rather than calling this appearance getting back to normal, it feels like that I changed again. Well, it going to be really bad if that kind of unknown automail and strange crystal eye get discovered in this modern earth, so that can't be helped though.」

While smiling wryly, Hajime tapped on his left hand using his right hand. The artificial skin that used metamorphosis magic had reproduced a splendid skin texture, making the one touching wouldn't be able to sense the existence of metallic artificial arm hidden behind it.

The one who accomplished this was Tio. The technique of Tio that was the only expert in metamorphosis magic among his comrades, added with Hajime and Yue's help, remade the artificial hand smartly and disguised it as a normal arm in outward appearance and texture.

Also, Hajime's artificial eye was something that was remade using creation magic, while his hair color was due to Kaori's regeneration magic returning the hair color to before.

Of course, for Kaori whose hand had reached to the territory of time intervention, if she used regeneration magic seriously then it was possible she could even restore Hajime's altered body to normal human body. Whether it was his loss of limb or his change due to eating monster, all of those could be reverted if Kaori just returned Hajime's body to its previous state.

But, Hajime didn't wish for that. Actually, by returning to earth, things like tough body was unneeded, but for some reason it felt like turning his body to how it was before was like making light of his journey at that other world. And above all else, he couldn't be growing senile first and left behind Yue who would be living for a long time.

In the end possessing a monster class body where it wasn't even definite that it had life span was in agreement with Hajime's own wish. By the way, if they were using Yue's secret technique of apostle creation, then the problem of life span could be resolved to a certain degree even if they were using their original normal body, so Kaori and others also didn't view this matter as a problem.

「……Nn. Personally, there is no problem for me because I can enjoy various Hajime. Rather I feel happy.」

Yue said that and gave kisses in turn at Hajime's left shoulder, right eye, and his head. Every single action of Yue was overflowing with affection.

At that day, after they established the method of going home, since that day when Yue was proposed under the great tree of [Haltina Sea of Trees], Yue's

expression of love was increasingly became polished. She had never been seen without the ring that was fitted in the ring finger of her left hand, and when Yue saw the matching ring that was fitted in Hajime's left ring finger, an aura of happiness would be scattered in full from her.

「Speaking of that, what about Yue? Have you get used with the world over here?」

「……Nn. There are still a lot of things, that I don't know, that I am not familiar with. This is really, a different world. There are a lot of unbelievable things……. But, it's fun. Every day is fun like opening jack-in-the-box.」

「I see.」

「……Nn. Besides, I will be happy anywhere if that is a place where Hajime is. Mother-in-law and father-in-law are also really kind. They treasured me like their real daughter, it feels really happy. Everywhere in Hajime's world, is filled with happiness.」

「I, I see……somehow, it feels hot even though it's morning huh.」

The gaze of Hajime who ate a straight punch of love was wandering around. Yue who understood that Hajime was being shy chuckled「Nfufu」while snuggling at him like a cat. Hajime's hand was subconsciously moving and gently caressed Yue's fluffy hair.

An atmosphere that was overflowing with sugar content was running rampant since the morning. Yue quivered her long eyelashes while quietly closing her eyelids, her faint pink lips were pushing out to Hajime. Hajime easily surrendered seeing that obviously coaxing pose. His face was approaching near……

「Geez~, Yue-oneechan! Is Papa still not awake nano!?」

The one who opened the door of the room loudly with a bang while entering with a huff was a five years old girl who puffed up her flat chest. She was Hajime's daughter Myuu. However, now her emerald green hair became emerald blond, while her fan shaped ears that were the trait of merman race had changed into small and cute human ears.

The cause of the change was the illusion that was created by the ring artifact hanging down from Myuu's neck. The artifact was something excellent that

surprisingly could reproduce even the touching sensation, so even if Myuu's ear was touched the person touching wouldn't feel the texture of fin, but the sensation of human ear instead. And so, Myuu's appearance was completely that of a beautiful little girl with blond hair.

The moment that Myuu energetically entered the room, she pointed her finger at the clichéd childhood friend morning scene which entered her eyes and raised a protesting voice「Aa~~!」.

「Geez-, Yue-oneechan! I always told you every time! Doing that to papa right from the morning is a no-no! Why aren't you protecting your promise nano!」 (TN: Here Myuu said 'me-' to Yue. This is the way people in Japanese scolded their naughty child or pet, it's like saying 'bad' with scolding tone in English, though I translated it into no-no here.)

「……uu. Tha, that is because Hajime is……」

「Blaming others is no-no!」

「……au. I'm sorry.」

Toward Myuu who pointed her index finger at Yue's nose while saying「Bad-」, Yue could only dejectedly hung her head down regardless of her big sister status.

It had been about a year since they moved into earth. Recently Myuu who had grown up remarkably was acting really proper and strict. When all the oneechan who often became hopeless character that couldn't read the atmosphere when they got entangled with Hajime, like Yue right now, Myuu would remonstrate them with 'Bad' like this.

Actually, in order for Myuu to become used with this world quickly, and also because it was desirable for Myuu to have education in good taste, she was then enrolled into a nursery school about two months ago, but it seemed that in the school Myuu became awakened as 'onee-san' for some reason.

There was the factor of how based on her age she was included in the senior group in school, but additionally there was also how she had been piling up experience that should be too dense for a mere infant. She had been kidnapped, auctioned, traveled through desert, struggling through a scene of carnage at the devil king castle, and even participated in a legendary decisive battle. Looking

from the point of view of such Myuu, the children the same age with her who were born in peaceful country like Japan were as expected looked really young and naïve.

Thinking ‘I have to be proper and strict!’, she imitated the outrageous oneechan group around her and her mother that was overflowing with kindness, like that she acted too helpful toward the other kindergarteners……when she noticed, she had became the trusted and beloved leader of the kindergarteners.

However, her call of「Gentlemen! And ladies of Myuu’s friend!」when she was gathering the kindergarteners, or how she said「Right now is exactly the time to blaze our soul!」when encouraging a child that felt down, or how she showed a fearless grin when there was a child that looked uneasy, those actions that looked a little bit unlike a kindergartener were conspicuous so the teacher there reported it to Nagumo household……regarding the state of Hajime when he received that contact from the teacher, let’s just say that he was rolling around on the floor for real at that time.

「Really it’s my bad, Myuu. Come on, I’ve already waking up here.」

Yue who possessed the absolute dignity as the legal wife toward the other wives was seriously feeling down from getting scolded by Myuu. Hajime sent a glance at such a Yue while crawling out from the futon. Myuu listened to Hajime’s words and nodded, she then faced Hajime and reached out both her hands.

「Myuu? What’s with those hands?」

「Papa, Myuu want to be carried nano.」

Even though she was scolding Yue just now, but right after that Myuu demonstrated a spoiled kid request. Yue went ‘hah’ in shock and moved her gaze to Myuu. Her eyes were clearly narrating her dissatisfaction「Even though I was scolded when acting spoiled……」which was looking a bit lacking in maturity.

Toward that, Myuu said,

「Mama said,『When Yue-san pulled back, immediately act spoiled(attack)』, like that nano.」

「……I’m going to ***speak*** a bit with Remia.」

Yue became enveloped with faint golden light, right after that she became adult mode. And then, in order to speak a few words with the mother who taught woman battle tactic to a little child, Yue silently, but quickly exited from the room.

And then, Myuu who kept holding her pose asking for hug directed a shuddering gaze toward Hajime who was left behind. This little girl in front his eyes was steadily mastering the lesson from the seniors around her. From here on, just what kind of growth this beloved daughter would show him after accepting the teaching of the women who had one or two peculiarities Hajime wondered……

「Papa, carry me nano.」

「……Okay」

With a cramped expression, Hajime hugged Myuu who was making a cute request with cute grin, and then he exited the room while listening to the tumult that was audible from downstairs.

Hajime who entered the living room at first floor with one of his arms carrying Myuu witnessed the scene of Yue laying down complaints incessantly to Myuu's actual mother Remia. In regard to Remia, similar with Myuu she was also exposing emerald blond hair and human ears, right now she was showing her usual「my my, ufufu」smile while dodging Yue's complaints flightily——was how it looked like, but her cheeks were faintly blushing.

With the adult mode Yue as her opponent, as expected even a professional widow would find herself at disadvantage. Even though they were the same gender, yet being stared by adult Yue fixedly from very close range would make anyone unable to calm down. Adult Yue-sama, how terrifying.

「Ah, you finally woke up Hajime-san.」

「Fumu, as I thought perhaps having Yue in charge of waking up art no good.」

Shia who was helping with the preparation of breakfast was saying such thing with an exasperated face while giving her morning greeting, and Tio who was watching morning news at the living room looked behind while also similarly greeting him.

There was no change in Tio's appearance, while Shia's prided rabbit ears were similarly hidden with artifact like Myuu and Remia. Right now her straight faint blue hair was put together using hair tie located around her neck and the bundle of hair was hung down forward.

「My, Shia-chan and also Tio-chan, you two are saying such thing, but if it's the two of you who are going to wake up Hajime won't you two also dive in?」

「Naturally desu, Kaa-sama.」

「Of course, Hahaue-dono」(TN: Both ways of calling have the same meaning of mother, but the kanji they are written with has the meaning of mother-in-law.)

Carrying breakfast from the kitchen……wasn't how she appeared, this person who appeared from the washroom as though to say that she had woken up just now, was Hajime's mother, Nagumo Sumire. Sumire was a famous shoujo manga artist, so there were a lot of times where she was staying until late at night in her workplace, she was extraordinarily weak in morning. Because of that, in Nagumo household there was no regular habit of taking breakfast properly but……

There, Shia who was in charge of cooking at Tortus and Remia who was a mother with a child came. Hajime took home Yue and others from the other world, and not long after the girls became freeloaders, the kitchen became entrusted to the two of them.

「Everyone, good morning. Maaan, it's great that the house is brilliant right from the morning. Even after a year has passed, my heart is still dancing every time I see this. You damn son, how dare you came home after becoming a great man! Really thank you very much-」

「You are full with energy from the morning huh, Tou-san. And then, don't grin like that while looking at them. You are going to get punch flying you know……by Kaa-san.」

The short haired middle-aged man with tall stature who had been continuously in a state of 'Right now, I'm intensely moved!' since a year ago, was the central pillar of Nagumo household, the company president who managed a game company, Nagumo Shuu.

He who was a pure otaku seemed to be deeply moved everyday from

witnessing Yue and others who seemed to come out straight from 2D. And then most likely, being called as「Otou-sama」by beautiful girls and women was also undoubtedly greatly related with that.

Shuu laughed in good mood from being surrounded by the daughters-in-law, Sumire was in a daze, and Hajime was doing Myuu's hairstyle while the breakfast was lined up on the dining table.

By the way, Shuu and Sumire's yearly income far surpassed the earning of average salary man, so Nagumo household was quite large. And so, even when their family increased all of a sudden, the home didn't feel that cramped even when all of them lived in one house.

Although, because of the sudden increase in residence right now the renovation of the house was in progress, after several months passed the house would surely be completed into a splendid building twice the previous size that the neighbors would notice.

In addition, regarding the administrative concern of Yue and others like their resident registration and the like, Hajime had sneaked into the government office and finished forging the documents. For their peace of mind, Yue even used her soul magic to the government workers to plant suggestion in them so there would be no problem. It was a hard work because there was a lot of kind of documents that needed to be put in order, for example passport and identification paper and so on, but at the very least there should be no one that could discover any unnaturalness with their existences in Japan.

Even for example that they got found out, they could just use soul magic to deal with it every time, they were also planning to slowly left behind evidence of their existences at the foreign governments too. The government officials of the world would be opposed by age of god magic!

「Yup, Shia-chan, Remia-chan, today the food is also delicious. Before this I thought that putting food into your stomach right from the morning, is that some kind of torture huh?, like that……but if it's like this then I can eat no matter how much.」

「I get what you mean. Hajime, Tou-san is happy. My son became a splendid cheat harem bastard when he returned back. There is nothing that I can teach

you anymore like this.」

「Tou-san, I don't understand whether you are praising me or speaking ill of me from your words, but I have never received any lesson or anything about being cheat harem bastard at all.」

Sumire sent an exaggerated praise at Shia and Remia excessively, while Shuu was sending Hajime words with condescending attitude, hearing that Hajime replied back with an exasperated state. To that, Shuu opened his mouth with irritating atmosphere as though to say「Good grief, yareyare daze」.

「What are you saying? Haven't I beaten up the soul of otaku into you since you have awareness of your surrounding? In other words, that was also me beating up the soul of cheat harem into you. The reason that you were able to create cheat harem at another world, is exactly because of that. How is that? Can you feel the gratitude for your Otou-sama keenly in your heart now?」

「I think I have already talked with you about my experience in another world, but where is otaku soul is proving useful there——」

Shuu and Sumire had listened to all that Hajime experienced at the other world. About how much effort it took to recover his normal appearance, about how his arm and eye were artificial, about how his gaze turned sharp now, and above all about how his atmosphere now was completely different from in the past, Hajime told all of those personally without any falsehood or manipulation, nor he was even trying to do those.

In other words, Shuu and Sumire should have known about the sequence of event of their son's grand experience starting from his experience in the abyss, in spite of that Shuu now declared that otaku knowledge was useful in those experiences, hearing that Hajime was a bit unable to accept it.

And so, Hajime normally objected to Shuu, but Shuu and Sumire immediately grinned widely while cutting off Hajime's words.

「『Ladies and gentleman-, all of you warriors-』」

「-」

「『Right now in this time, is exactly the time to blaze your soul-』」

「!!」

「『If you said you are going to get in my way, I'll kill you.』」

「!?」

「『I'll protect Yue, and Yue will protect me. With that we are——』」

「I got it already-! Otou-sama, really thank you very much-! That's why, stop it-」

Hajime writhed while asking them to stop with a voice that sounded like scream. Toward their son who was enduring his shame that much, the father and mother were mercilessly dealing the pursuing attack.

「Oi oi, what's wrong Hajime? What are you feeling ashamed for? You were cool you know? In real life, there is almost no chance to say those kind of speeches you know? When Tou-san watched the image recording Tio-san showed to me, my heart was trembling hard. Oh man, it was really an amazing chuu——cough-, really an amazing heroic you know?」

「Yes, truly. Not only to the girl partner, but you even said『she is my woman』to the girl's parent, when I watched that I thought, just from what galgame this conquering character came from. Really……」

After giving a glance at Hajime who was shaking in while holding his chopstick, Shuu and Sumire paused with a superb timing before continuing with splendid harmony.

「「Hajime-san, those were seriously awesome –ssu. Trully, thank you very much-!」」

「You two are noisy-. Don't screw around, stop messing with me using that material-」

Shuu and Sumire knew about the events in the other world not only from Hajime's story. While keeping it secret from Hajime, Tio used regeneration magic to leave behind recording image of every memory——obviously the events in the abyss were included, other than that, the time when Hajime accepted Shia, the time when Hajime spoke resolutely to Tio's grandfather Adol, and even Hajime's speech at his classmates in the devil king castle, etc.——and showed it to Shuu

and Sumire, since then at every opportunity Shuu and Sumire would praise Hajime「As expected from our son-!」with teasing mixed in it to mess with Hajime.

The corner of Hajime's eyes lifted up fiercely and brutally put pressure on Tio in an outburst of anger. With a cough, Tio choked in the middle of slurping her miso soup. Miso soup was dripping fromher nose while her breathing was getting rough 'haa haa'.

「A, as expected from the parents of Hajime-san. Recently I have become used to it, but as I thought seeing the figure of Hajime-san being toyed around, the uncomfortable feeling that I get is not half-baked desu.」

「……Nn. But, the bullied Hajime……is also nice.」

「My my, Yue-san. Recently, it feels like if it is about Hajime-san then everything is fine for you. Fufu, Myuu too has to work hard like this. Also Tio-san, this is the dining table you know? Please don't go haa haa while dripping snot like that, eat your food properly. Right now your face is looking quite "over the age limit" you know?」

Shia smiled wryly toward the exchange between Hajime and his parents, while Yue's cheeks reddened for some reason, Tio was going 'haa haa', and Remia was going 'my my, ufufu' smilingly. This was the ordinary day of Nagumo household recently.

Just when Hajime was going to snap from the mess, Shuu and Sumire easily drew back and concentrated on their breakfast as though nothing had happened. Hajime who was trembling from losing the target of his anger was then comforted by Yue and others altogether.

With a sidelong glance at their son who was being taken care by beautiful women and girls, Shuu and Sumire faced each other and their expression burst into a smile.

「Nevertheless, that time when Hajime suddenly returned home, and in addition he also introduced Yue and others, it was really shocking huh.」

「You're right. For him to really go to another world and went home bringing cheat harem, that's something that I had never even dreamed of.」

While exchanging words with small whisper, both of them recalled that time when Hajime came home.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

For the time being, I'm thinking of writing a bit about the story of post-going home.

After all there are considerable request and also hope for present-day story (lol)

Shirakome himself is swelling out with wild ideas.

Next will be the story of Hajime returning to his home and reunite with Shuu and Sumire.

I think it most likely can be posted at 6 P.M Saturday next week.

Please take care of me from here on too.

Arifureta Chapter 181

Arifureta After – Morning at the Nagumo House Part 2

AN: Regarding the autograph session at [Tora no Ana] that is planned to be carried out at 22 November, because Shirakome is diagnosed with influenza, it's suddenly cancelled in hurry.

Please see the detail at my action report.

Really, my deepest apologies to those who are looking forward to it.

I think I will get better if I can recuperate at home.

Please treat me well.

A year after a whole class of a certain high school was spirited away which made a stir in the world.

At first, the impossibleness of a group kidnapping in the middle of day inside a school within an instant without any other class noticing, and the unlikeliness of it being a group disappearance from the half-eaten lunch, the unfinished homework, the kicked down chairs, etc., all of those heated up the media excessively toward this modern time Mary Celeste case that happened in a school.

However, what was called as the flow of the society was quiet callous, even the interest toward such occult major incident didn't continue for long. After half a year passed with the news that there was no concrete progress within that short time, there were only impertinent commentator or self-alleged occult researcher harboring ulterior motive trying to use this case as their chance to make it big

who kept trying to attract attention to this topic from various kind of view point, while the media was sprinkled with new topics one after another like some celebrity spouses divorcing or getting into affair, or some big shot politician having their dirty laundry aired.

Like that, the heated mass media calmed down and the interest of people began to move to other topics, even so at that time the family of the students who still disappeared without any information and the police were still frantically searching for their whereabouts. However, unable to even obtain a single clue, every one of them was beginning to be encroached by fatigue and resignation.

Shuu and Sumire were also the same, they became exhausted from continuing to search of the whereabouts of their vanished son. While desperately believing that Hajime was safe, and he would definitely return home, even so they could definitely heard the flow of time that was heartlessly flowing away and the sound of despair that was gradually approaching them

So that Hajime could come home anytime, they never missed to clean up Hajime's room for even a single day. And then, each time they cleaned the room, the coldness of the room that had lost its owner chilled their body coldly. Even when they were in the living room, or when they were taking a meal, what was echoing inside their ear was the voice of their son. While understanding that it was only their hallucination, many times they still suddenly looked around at their surrounding in surprise. It was already uncounted how many times they dashed to the front door every time they heard small sound from there.

Even the「family association」that was formed together with all the families of the disappeared students only seemed to infect Shuu and Sumire with chilliness into their heart from looking at the face of the parents who were losing expression day by day.

And then, soon it would be one year since Hajime disappeared. For the two of them that meant that the shadow of despair would only become thicker.

The tic-tac sound of the clock was echoing excessively clearly, Shuu who was looking at his PC display suddenly opened his mouth without turning away or stopping his hand that was clicking on the mouse.

「Sumire, how about going to sleep soon? Yesterday you already stayed until

late right?」

「It's no problem. If you are saying that, then you yourself, isn't it better for you to sleep? Yesterday at work you got a lot of problem right? You almost had no time to sleep at all.」

Late at night, Shuu and Sumire who had gotten thin due to their anxiety were checking the bulletin board in PC and producing the flyer that called for information with a movement that was like a programmed machine. They were both exchanging words without even lifting up their face to look at each other.

「There is no problem with work. After all my guys are all reliable. Even when the president is not there, it really doesn't matter for them. Rather, I would just be a bother for them if I go to work with a face that look like a ghost like that, they would even chase me out. Besides, doesn't Sumire has it worse than me? You missed your deadline again right?」

「……Yes. But, that was only one time. My assistant is also excellent after all.」

Both Shuu and Sumire, in this one year they often took day off in this one year in their respective work of managing the game company or the manga serialization. Everything was for the sake of finding their son. Normally that kind of consecutive day off would make them lost the social trust from the people around them, but their coworker and subordinate who knew about the circumstance of the two showed their understanding and even proactively cooperated with them, thanks to that they didn't end up unemployed.

That was really an appreciated consideration, so that in case that Hajime came home, there would be no complicated situation like him witnessing both his parents became jobless altogether. There was also the factor that both of their work environment was special and also how Hajime often shown his face at both workplaces so that the people there held favorable impression to him, so the people at Hajime's parents workplace was also really worrying for Hajime from the bottom of their heart that Hajime got disappeared after getting involved with a sudden occult situation.

But, even those people's gaze was gradually changing into a gaze that was filled with a lot of pity, as though they were looking at something painful. Surely resignation had already grown thick inside them. There was no way they could

say anything to the parents whose son's whereabouts became unknown, but everyone had began to think「It's possible, that Hajime is already……」

There was also no way that Shuu and Sumire wouldn't notice such atmosphere, it also became a factor that cornered their mind needlessly, but they could take time to search for Hajime like this now was also thanks to those people, so there was no way they could do something like exploding in anger to them.

Their gloomy hearts, while both understood that there was no way they could rest, they still exchanged barefaced words like recommending each other to rest.

After a while, Shuu and Sumire still continued to exchange dialogue that was really empty, but before long, after looking at the information board in internet that was not only lacking in plausible information, but filled with obviously fake information or inconsiderate writing instead, Shuu finally took off his gaze from the monitor screen.

And then, while sighing deeply, he put both his elbows on the table and his head hung down with both his hands covering his eyes.

「……Hajime. Just where he is right now……」

「Dear……」

Even though Shuu was still at the early half of his forty, but right now he looked like a tired old man. Sumire who saw him like that also stopped her working hand and lifted her face.

「As expected, how about we rest a bit?」

「……You know that's impossible right? I won't be able to sleep soundly anyway.」

「That might be true but……」

Sumire's words were caught up in her throat. What Shuu was saying was wholly correct, she herself was also like that. No matter how exhausted their body and mind had became, but day by day the fire of uneasiness in their heart only kept broiling stronger. Such thing stole their ability to have quiet sleep.

「It will be fine. It's still only a year. Even if it would take several years, we will

find him without fail. No way I'm going to collapse until then.」

「……You're right. It's just as you say.」

Her husband lifted his face with a wry smile, even so there was a dark shadow that couldn't be hidden there. Sumire smiled at him even while feeling concern, and then she stood up from her chair to nestle close to him.

But, just before she could do that, suddenly *pin poo—n* there was a chime sounding from the entrance.

Naturally, at this time when the day had already changed date, there was no way there would be anyone who would visit, if it was a relative then they should have contacted them beforehand, so the two of them faced each other suspiciously. That they were unable to reach 'that possibility' immediately, showed how exhausted the state of their heart.

Shuu slowly raised his heavy waist, then he took the receiver of the intercom. When he did that, naturally the figure of the visitor was projected at the display……

『……Aa, that, what to say……this is, me here.』

The state of the sudden visitor who was unable to smoothly decide what word to use while his gaze was wandering incessantly, if the people who knew of this person in this one year saw this attitude, they would surely stared in amazement reflexively.

Even from across the display, they knew.

This person's air, look, and even height were different from the one in their memory.

Even so, they knew.

Shuu perfectly, and instantly knew. That person, who was looking awkward somehow with a frowning face that looked troubled was……the one who they had continued to search, the one they believed would surely come home……

——it was their beloved son.

With smacking sound, Shuu threw away the receiver phone and threw open the door of the living room with a force as though he was kicking it open,

without even hiding his impatience he roughly opened the lock of the front door, and then, he threw the door open.

And then,

「Aa……that……I'm home, Tou-san.」

「「Hajime-」」

Shuu's voice overlapped with Sumire who had chased after him unnoticed, they called the name of their son with a volume that might rip open their throat. At the same time, they tackled at the son who was scratching his cheek awkwardly in front of the house's gate.

「Hajime-, you, this stupid bastard! Where the hell you have been running around until now-」

「This stupid son-. Do you know how much you made us worry!」

Father and mother embraced their son altogether strongly, strongly that it made it hard to breathe. Right now, in this time, they were confirming that this son was really existing before their eyes. So that he wouldn't disappear for the second time. They strongly, strongly embraced him.

The dim street light, and the lighting leaking out from inside the house, and then the perfectly round moon in the sky, were gently illuminating the family who became one once more, amidst that Hajime was stiffening in a banzai posture while being hugged tightly by the two. (TN: Banzai posture, if you screamed banzai in celebration, usually you will also raise both your hands in cheers right?)

Hajime thought that his parents must be worrying about him. He was convinced that they were believing that he would return home.

But, even so, the figure and atmosphere of the current him, even though his hair color, his artificial hair, and his artificial hand were returned to his former appearance as much as possible, but the him right now should be really different from how he once was.

That was why, he thought that they would surely feeling confused. He even resolved himself for them to say doubting words like「Are you really Hajime?」in

suspicion. Depending on the situation, there might even be a need to spend time to reach understanding, that was what Hajime was thinking in the corner of his heart.

It was just like how Hajime's false image pointed in one of the seven great labyrinths——at the【Ice and Snow Cave of Shuune Snowfield】before this, that in the depth of Hajime's heart, he had the fear that himself who had been acknowledged by both himself and other people as monster couldn't be accepted by his parents, that was the cause of this emotion of Hajime that couldn't be varnished over, which was both like himself but also unlike himself.

But, now that he had tried to open the lid, this was how it turned out. Shuu and also Sumire didn't even give any attention at Hajime's change, they gave him a tight hug that was overflowing with conviction and anger, and also a helplessly great relieve.

Inside Hajime's body, a hot, yet silently strong emotion that was unfathomably deep was rising up. Every grand experiences that he had experienced in another world, were passing through his brain as though he was experiencing a revolving lantern.

And then, there was only one thing that he was thinking.

——Aa, finally, I came home.

Hajime's two arms silently held the back of his two parents. And then, with a trembling voice, he spoke it one more time in a small, but clear voice.

「Tou-san, Kaa-san——I'm home.」

Shuu and Sumire, with their eyes still overflowing with tears, separated themselves from Hajime slightly, and with a firm straight gaze, they gave him those words together with the escaping smile——surely for Hajime, these words were the mark that informed him of the end of his long and dangerous journey in the true meaning.

「「Welcome home, Hajime.」」

After that, Hajime and others who noticed that the neighbors were stealing peek at the situation from the gap between the curtains, excitedly returned inside the house.

It was a home that he left only for a year. Even so, Hajime narrowed his eyes in nostalgia, he couldn't help himself to slightly caressed his hand on the railing and the ornaments.

Entering the living room, Hajime saw the large amount of the scattered leaflets on the table. He took one of them into his hand and stared at it closely, after that he also discovered the PC that was left opened displaying the site that asked for information of missing person.

「……This one year after you were gone, we tried everything we can to look for clue. But, in the end, we couldn't obtain even one clue. ……Hajime, you, no, all of you, just where in the world you all have gone?」

「Also, Hajime. A year ago in that day, just what in the world happened?」

「……About that. Explaining it is simple, but also difficult. There are a lot of things that must be talked.」

The deep gaze of their son that already couldn't be called as young at all, made Shuu and Sumire to gulp. And then they guessed. That Hajime had gone through a tremendous experience that they couldn't even imagine.

「I see. Then, let me straighten up the table quickly, we are going to talk a lot after that. Wait a second. I'm going to brew a delicious milk tea now.」

「Yeah. Thank you, Kaa-san.」

「Fufu, somehow you completely feel like an adult.」

Like that, while drinking the sweet and warm milk tea that Sumire prepared, Hajime said the truth of the group disappearance to the two. Hajime's experience was too dense to have everything said in one sitting. Therefore, he talked only about the summary of every important point, but even so the summoning to another world, survival in the abyss, the separation with his classmates, the conquer of the great labyrinths, the legendary decisive battle…… by the time Hajime finished talking about those, the sky was already starting to grow light.

Hajime who finished talking about the general event emptied his cup that had been refilled several times, and then he sighed. Shuu and Sumire were also sighing tiredly. Shuu was rubbing on his eye with his finger while Sumire was

dropping her gaze at the empty cup, they were being silent from feeling lost at how to respond.

「As I thought, is that hard to believe?」

Hajime asked while smiling wryly.

「That's, obviously. Tou-san and also Kaa-san, due to our work we have plenty of knowledge about something like that but……thinking, that it happen for real……」

「That's right. But, thinking about the extremely unnatural group disappearance, we cannot really reject that it might be true. There is also no reason for Hajime to lie in this situation. That's why, our worry is, the possibility that someone *is making Hajime to believe such thing*.」

「Haha, indeed, that way of thinking is way more realistic. Me too, if I am in the position of Tou-san and Kaa-san, surely I will also think that at first.」

Being kidnapped by unknown people, and then the group was then brainwashed and had the memory of fantastical nonsense inserted into their brain……indeed, rather than believing that he was going to another world and fought against monster and god there, that explanation sounded more plausible. Rather than they weren't believing the words of their son, it was more that they were thinking realistically with worry that if such thing was really done to their son then they would need to get him treatment quickly.

Hajime's wry smile deepened to the two who were worrying about him, then he opened his mouth because there was something that he had to confirm no matter what.

「Tou-san, Kaa-san. Whether what I'm saying is the truth or not, there is a method to proof that. That's why, assuming for now that what I'm saying is the truth, I want to ask something. ……Regarding the things that I had done, what do you two think? No, what do you think about the current me?」

That was the question that Hajime feared the most from the depth of his heart. If his parents held disappointment and fear, avoidance and disgust toward him then……as expected, that would be hard for him. Surely if that happened, Hajime would exit the house, and then he would leap into the chest of his

beloved lover.

But, in contrast with the anxiety and nervousness inside Hajime's heart, as though they had guessed the concern in Hajime's heart, Shuu and Sumire showed a smile that looked troubled, or possibly exasperated.

「Now see here, Hajime. I and also Sumire, we aren't a saint you know?」

「Eh?」

Shuu and Sumire stood up from their seat and approached close to the side of Hajime who was perplexed.

「Rather than other people's death, our son's safety is far more important. Perhaps you think of that as cold-hearted, but that is what is called parent. Good grief, for you to feel that nervous……I wonder if you are thinking of something like, perhaps I'm going to be chased out from home? Really, what a big idiot you are.」

「However……Kaa-san. Indeed, I killed because it was necessary, but I didn't even hesitate in killing. That was how much I changed. A guy who is not even holding any avoidance or disgust for killing, can you accept someone like that?」

What a hopeless kid, Sumire who was brushing his head as though to say that was replied back by Hajime with an expression that was lost for words. Hearing that reply, Shuu opened his mouth in exasperation for real this time.

「It's not about accepting or not, we are family you know? Something like stopping being family doesn't exist in Nagumo family. Don't you know? There is nothing that can make you stop being my son. The end result is,『You cannot run away from Otou-sama!』」(TN: Might be reference to something.)

「No, don't make any quote at a time like this……」

「Hahaha, well, putting that aside. Hajime is my son, and I am a father. As long as that hold true, then me and also Sumire will be your ally anytime. There is no way anyone can worry about other people while their son's survival is being threatened. Also, if you are feeling guilty, if you say that you want to atone at the family of the deceased then I'll atone for it together with you, and even if you become a psychopath killer then I'll stake my body and life to stop you.」

Most likely, if it was thought from the view point of common sense then the way of Shuu and Sumire were doing thing was mistaken. As parent, no matter what kind of circumstance there was, they had to question about the right and wrong of the killer. And if it was something unforgivable then they had to admonish the person. As parent, they had to reprimand their child about their wrongdoing.

And surely Shuu and Sumire also understood that. But even with that understanding, they were still undoubtedly happy that their son returned home alive even by killing someone else. If Hajime had came to term with it then that was fine, if for example he wanted to atone for his sin then they as parent would accompany him, and if he ended up as a fiend, then they would stake their life to take him back to the right path. They declared that clearly to Hajime.

「Hajime, do you regret what you have done until now?」

「No, I have not even a bit of regret. I don't even think that I'm mistaken. I decided to do what I did with the resolve against everything.」

「Yep. That's how it has to be. But Hajime, that way of doing thing won't work in Japan you know?」

「I know. The journey that I started with the determination to kill all the guys antagonizing me is over already. That's why, I too have to change my way of living. Well, I might at least do something like planting trauma to those who stand in my way though.」

「I see, then that's fine. Even if Hajime's heart has grown to be not reluctant in killing people, reasoning and emotion are pro~perly existing inside Hajime. Then, that's fine. It's just as Shuu said, if Hajime actually step on the wrong path, we are going to take you back even if we have to spank you, and take the responsibility together with you.」

「Kaa-san……」

Hajime thought, even when he had obtained the power to slaughter even god, but as expected, he was still no match against his father and mother. And then, he recalled his beloved daughter that he obtained in the another world, and he keenly felt of how he was still lacking as a father.

Shuu and Sumire gently patted Hajime who was closing his eyes quietly. If they actually saw Hajime murdering someone with their own eyes, there was no way they wouldn't be shaken. Perhaps it would become a trauma for them. Perhaps they wouldn't be able to give him their words unhesitatingly like this.

Even so, one thing that they could say with certainty was, that they getting scared against Hajime, their son, and then they distancing themselves due to that, was the only thing that they would never do.

That feeling was certainly conveyed to Hajime. Therefore, Hajime could only say one thing.

「……Thank you. Tou-san, Kaa-san.」

The eyes of Shuu and Sumire squinted gently.

While feeling the warmth of these parents, Hajime opened his eyes and showed a wide and mischievous grin to them. His heart was perfectly cleared. Hajime recovered his usual self due to the acceptance of his parents of his changed self.

In this case, what was left was the report that in a sense was the most important report that he had to tell them. It would also become a proof about the another world that he told them just now, so it would be two bird with one stone.

「Tou-san, Kaa-san. Do you remember, in the past……about the stupid talk of what am I going to do if I am summoned into another world?」

「Hm? Aa, I remember. If you are a man, then in a world of sword and magic you will surely want to defeat the demon king and build a harem, that was what I said, while Hajime, I think you said『If it's me, it doesn't feel like I can defeat the demon king at all. What I can do, at best is to return home. And then if I find someone important for me there, then I'll return together with them』, right?」

「Tou-san remember that well huh. Well, that's how it is. I think I mentioned it a bit in my explanation before but……I found important people there. I want to introduce them to you, so is it fine right now?」

「Right now? It's already dawn you know? Or rather, you made a girlfriend there!? Furthermore from another world? No, wait, I still don't know whether

the story of another world summoning is true or not……」

「Tha, that's right isn't it? By any chance, that person might be the one who planted false memory in Hajime……. And then, that person will say something like『If you want your son to return to normal, then please buy this holy vase. Don't worry, if you buy it right now, I'll give you special fifty percent discount for this million yen vase you know?』!」(TN: In Japan there were case of fraud where a salesman is selling vase/pot that they claimed as holy possessing various effect with crazy price)

Shuu who heard the full blown wild delusion of the frankly wary Sumire instantly went「Sumire, are you a genious!?」in agreement. While smiling wryly from witnessing his beloved being considered as a crooked salesman, Hajime's gaze wandered at empty air.

「……Yue, can you hear me? It's me.」

「Oi, Sumire! For some reason Hajime is talking to empty air see! Is this that? What is called as air girlfriend!? What should I do as a father like this!?」

「Calm down dear. We were careless……surely they had set up listening device at our house! After this the woman who will sell us the holy vase will arrive after getting called by Hajime you know!」

「What, the? Bastard, making my son as the stooge of your vase selling…… don't think that this is going to end up well for you. With my marvelous haggling technique, I'm going to beat down the price until below fifty thousand yen!」

Shuu and Sumire who couldn't possibly understand that Hajime who was suddenly talking to empty air was using "telepathy" were greatly shaken up. Sumire was strangely speaking up a realistic assumption while Shuu became slightly panicked and hardened a slightly off determination. And then, before Hajime knew it Yue had become a holy vase seller girl.

Hajime continued his telepathy while giving a sidelong glance at such parents.

「Yeah, it's fine already. ……Yeah, I already talked about the gist of the events. I want to quickly introduce all of you quickly. ……That's right. You know the coordinate right? Yeah, then open a gate and come here directly. It's at……let's see, open it around a meter from my east.」

Actually, right now Yue was at the school building that Hajime attended before. When they returned to earth from Tortus, Hajime made the rooftop of the school building as the place where the gate was opened. From that place it was easy for him to imagine his home's position, and even if they arrived at afternoon, normally that rooftop was locked and people were forbid to enter there, the location was also outside of public gaze. That spot was convenient to use.

And then, after the classmates returned to their own home one after another, Yue and others proposed to stay at the school. It was so they wouldn't hinder Hajime's reunion with his parents.

Naturally, Shuu and Sumire who didn't know about that circumstance could only face each other in wonderment about their son who continued to talk toward empty air——they stiffened right after that.

With a distortion, the space right beside Hajime suddenly formed a vortex, and then it formed an ellipse shape right after that, and then a moment later a familiar scenery——a place that seemed to be a classroom of a school could be seen.

「A, Any**ere, Door?」(TN: Reference to anywhere door from Doraemon)

「E, eh? Wai-, this is just too fantasy so suddenly!」

While Shuu and Sumire were greatly flustered, Yue's face peeked out with a plop from inside the gate. Those crimson eyes were wandering through the room with deep interest, and then those eyes narrowed joyfully when they captured Shuu and Sumire, at the end those eyes turned at Hajime and wordlessly inquired「It's fine to enter?」

「Welcome, to Nagumo household. Come in without reservation.」

「……Nn」

With Hajime's welcoming words, Yue slowly stepped into Nagumo house. The space hole that suddenly opened inside the room, and the beautiful girl who was like an awakened bisque doll that appeared from there caused Shuu and Sumire to open and close their mouth wordlessly in obvious turmoil.

Hajime stood beside Yue, and while grinning mischievously like a kid who

succeeded in his prank, he introduced his beloved lover.

「Tou-san, Kaa-san. Her name is Yue. She is my special person. By the way, she is a person of another world, a vampire, and a former princess.」

「「-, Template attribute!?」」(TN: I think what they mean here is how Yue has so many clichéd character attribute.)

Shuu and Sumire splendidly returned a response that was impossible for run-of-the-mill people. Inside her heart Yue was feeling warm and fluffy thinking「Aa, they are really Hajime's parent」while at the same time, feeling a bit nervous in this important event where she was greeting at her lover's parent, she pinched at the edge of her skirt, and showed a courtesy gesture that was overflowing with elegance and beauty.

「……How do you do, Hajime's Otou-sama, Okaa-sama. Please call me Yue. Please take care of me for many years to come.」

「E, o, ou. No, I need to be polite here. Please take care of me too desu?」

「Ple, please take care of me, desuwa?」(TN: Both of the parents also used extremely polite language here)

The shock from witnessing the blond haired crimson eyed beautiful girl that looked like she came out from a picture book, and also this being the introduction to their son's lover for the first time in their life, caused the end of their sentence to actually turned strange. The figure of his parents lowering their head repeatedly and incoherently deepened Hajime's grin, however, as though to say that「It won't end with just this much yeah!」he opened his mouth once more.

「Shia, it's okay now!」

「Hai desuu! Tou-sama, Kaa-sama, I am called Shia! Please take care of me desuu!」(TN: The Kaa-sama and Tou-sama here used the kanji for in-law)

「「Rabbit eaaar, it cameee—!?」」

Shia leaped out from the gate with a wide smile while her rabbit ears were flopping around. Shuu and Sumire showed a splendid harmonious reaction to the appearance of this second beautiful girl. Without even any composure to

reply, their eyes became nailed at the rabbit ears that were moving around.

「Tio, come!」

「Uh huh. This art our first meeting, Chichiue-dono, Hahaue-dono. I am Tio Clarce of the dragon race, a mistress of Goshujin-sama, and also his sex slave. Please take care of me forever from here on.」

「「Sex slave!?」」

With twin hills that looked like they were going to spill out anytime, and dragon wings spread and flapped behind her in order to expose her true form, Tio made that greeting that was relatively no good. Hearing that caused Shuu and Sumire to spontaneously staggered. It appeared that the consecutive shocking development made their feet unsteady.

「Remia, Myuu!」

「Yes dear. Nice to meet you, I am called Remia. Please take care of me, together with my daughter.」

「E, err, err……I, I am Papa's daughter Myuu desu! Ojii-chan, Obaa-chan, please take care of me nano!」(TN: Ojii-chan=grandfather, obaa-chan=grandmother)

「O, Ojii-chan!?」

「Da, daughteeer!?」

The beauty who lowered her head politely with graceful appearance, and the small Myuu who give her all in greeting. Shuu and Sumire were finally paralyzed from the astonishing words of Myuu. And then, *gigigi* their gaze moved toward Hajime like a machine that got forgotten to be oiled.

Their eyes were speaking their feeling more eloquently than anything. That was to say, 「Explain what is the meaning of this!」

Therefore, Hajime answered concisely.

「Myuu is my daughter, and all of the others are my wives. Well, please take care of them okay.」

「「So casual!?」」

「Ah, by the way, there are four more wives, so I'll have them give their

greeting at another day.」

「「Real cheat hareeem!?」」

As expected, the two of them splendidly synchronized in a splendid reaction.

And then, the parental heart that was unshakeable even when their son confessed to be a killer went「You, are you really my son!?(Shuu)」and「You, are you really that son of mine!?(Sumire)」in great agitation and fluster, and then Shuu suddenly went 'I revealed the trick!' and yelled「No, wait, Sumire! There is no way girls this cute are real! Everything is CG! Don't get tricked!」, hearing that Sumire yelled「Dear, you are a genious! Hajime, open your eyes! Even if 2D girl is converted into 3D, in the end they are just false image. It will only end in vain!」with a sorrowful expression……

Anyway, the room already descended into a grand pandemonium.

However, even that pandemonium didn't continue for long.

It was because Myuu who sensed that they weren't welcomed from the state of the two parents got depressed, then she asked「Ojii-chan, Obaa-chan……is Myuu no good?」. The result from that went without saying.

「How do you do, I am Myuu's Ojii-chan you know?」

「How do you do, I am Myuu-chan's Obaa-chan you know?」

They splendidly got back on their feet within an instant. Their figure that was knocked out helplessly by Myuu's sly loveliness was exactly the same like Hajime as expected.

Like that, after they managed to get back on their feet, seeing the fantasy phenomenon that happened in front of their eyes and the beautiful girls who were not human, the two people who right from the start had high resistance to this kind of thing due to their nature of work immediately confirmed the truth of Hajime's words.

After that there was a great commotion of 'hip hip hurray'. The too real this and that which their son experienced, and the real harem of beautiful girls…… their otaku soul ate it up energetically before they threw barrage of questions at Hajime and others with eyes shining bright.

When Tio used regeneration magic to get out the image recording of Hajime's battle that she recorded, strange voice resounded through the residential area at the morning.「UoOOOOOO-, AWESOOOOMEE! Did you know, did you know huuuh!? That's, that's my son! Thank you very much!」or,「KyaAAAA-, you heard that!? Just now, he said something amazing you know! This is bad! This child, is seriously demon king-sama! And then, demon king-sama is my son desu! Thank you very much!」and so on, perhaps because the two were also staying all night without sleeping, their tension kept raising and raising up, in the end, the two of them continued to make commotion until Hajime who became unable to endure the shame made them went 'abababa' using Lightning Clad. (TN: That abababa expressed cartoonish electric shock, where the person that got shocked exposed their skeleton and ended up with only smoking body and curled up hair.)

「……Nn. As expected, from Hajime's Otou-sama and Okaa-sama. They are completely out of ordinary.」

「Certainly, it feels like that they are really Hajime-san's parent like this desu.」

「It can even be said, that this is only natural for Goshujin-sama's Chichiue-dono and Hahaue-dono.」

「Ufufu, they resembled Haijme-san, what a unique personage.」

「Yep-, Papa, really resembled Ojii-chan and Obaa-chan nano!」

Yue and others spoke their impression while lukewarmly staring at Shuu and Sumire who fainted with great smile.

To those impressions, Hajime said a sentence.

「What the hell do you guys mean with that?」

Hajime's expression turned speechless.

Shuu and Sumire who returned from their reminiscence called with wide grin at their son's family who was flirting and frolicking in a sense at the morning dining table.

「Which remind me, Hajime. You are going to meet with Kaori-chan and others today right? You are not going to be late?」

「Aa~, it will be at past noon, so there is no problem.」

「Shizuku-chan will also come right? What about Ai-chan?」

「It seems that Shizuku will come together with Kaori, but Aiko, I think she can come, but perhaps she will be late. She has her work and also her position after all.」

Hajime shrugged, while Sumire lowered her eyebrow in sympathy thinking「Ai-chan also has it hard eh.」

Today Hajime had the plan of having dinner with everyone, including Kaori and others too. The classmates would also participate, so it would be something like the class reunion of the people who got summoned to the alternate world. Although currently all of them were still active students, so the nuance was a bit different.

「Oi, Hajime. Tell Kaori-chan and others to show their face here more often. About beautiful daughter in law, the more the better.」

「That's right. Or rather, if the house reconstruction is finished, it's okay for them to live here instead you know? Isn't it the best when the house is lively and merry?」

「……The girls themselves doesn't really mind that……rather, they seem to want normally come, but their family doesn't seem to approve. Well, that's the sensible decision.」

At the corner of his mind, Hajime recalled the time when he met the family of Kaori and Shizuku while shrugging.

「H~mm, there is that. Well, just tell them that Kaa-san will welcome them anytime. Also……fufu. I won't mind if you are going to stay over tonight you know?」

「Debauch party eh! What a terrifying child even as my son.」

「You are noisy. I told you already I'm going to come home normally. Really, Tou-san and Kaa-san are……」

Hajime's expression turned somewhat tired right from the morning. The wives from another world watched over that exchange between parent and child smilingly.

What was unfolding before their eyes, was certainly a peaceful and gentle, normal everyday of a family.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

I think next chapter I'll try writing about going out around the city with the wives.

It seems that the heartwarming story without much development will continue, but I'm also wanting to write a long extra story before long, so I will be happy if you all can read while feeling the heartwarming.

……If Shirakome has more time……real life, you bastard……

The next update is planned at 6 P.M Saturday next week too.

Arifureta Chapter 182

Arifureta After – Downtown Date? Part 1

AN: I'm sorry, this chapter is a bit late……

It's short but, please have mercy.

At the station plaza several block away from the neighborhood of Hajime's house, there was quite a splendid fountain that was installed there, many people were bustling there in this holiday.

Naturally, there were a lot of young males and females in that spot who seemed to have rendezvous appointment, their gaze often moved alternately toward their watch and the direction that the person they were waiting for would come from, or they were playing around with their smartphone to kill time.

Amidst those young people, there was the figure of Hajime. What seemed to be different from him compared to other people, was that he never particularly looked at his watch or played with smartphone, he kept sitting on the bench beside the fountain while staring absentmindedly at empty air, like a father who was taking his children out to play at holiday while slackening from the fatigue of his everyday work.

Yet, regardless of his slackening atmosphere, there was a vague presence from him as though his back was standing straight, perhaps it was because of the abnormal experience a normal youth of the same age would never encounter that Hajime had piled up.

While Hajime's body was in a really relaxed posture, the attention of the

surrounding was naturally attracted to him because of that presence he exuded. Despite the strange sense of security that his calm atmosphere caused, there was also the slight aroma of danger that came from him.

Due to that, perhaps it could be said as only natural that sometimes there were group of girls who kept glancing toward Hajime. There were also girls whispering to each other with slightly reddened cheeks among those groups, who were in the verge of doing reverse picking up. (TN: Gyaku nanpa: Instead of man calling out to woman on the street, it was the woman who called on man in reverse.)

It was a popularity that was unthinkable for Hajime before he got summoned to the alternate world Tortus.

「……Should I use presence isolation like this?」

Naturally for Hajime who possessed monstrous specs, those movements of the surrounding were leaked into his ear, he muttered such thing while his posture and gaze stayed unmoving still.

Like that, a group of girl with courage(?) finally approached timidly in order to call out to Hajime, at that time when the surrounding girls and boys were observing carefully, an energetic calling voice that caused them to open their eyes wide in shock resounded.

「Ah, you are there nano~. Papaa~~~~!」

sutetetetete— The one who dashed from the street of the station was Myuu, her emerald blond hair was lightly fluttering while a full smile was pasted on her face. That lovely figure of a foreigner beautiful little girl running with her all caused the gaze of all the people at the station plaza to move at her.

As though to say ‘who cares about those gazes!’, Myuu didn’t show any reaction at all and keeping her momentum she dived at Hajime who was slacking up on the bench.

Like a bullet, Myuu leaped in full power without a single shred of reservation or mercy. Normally, Hajime would match the timing and swayed back to perfectly kill the impact and gently caught her, but right now he was sitting on the bench, so he couldn’t do that.

And so, one of Hajime's hands gently scooped the jumping Myuu's shoulder and he skillfully converted the charging momentum into rotation. So to speak, it was something like Aikido. Just before Myuu impacted the stomach of Hajime in midair, she was twirled in a rotation and like that she was dropped down to sit on the lap of Hajime.

「Oy, Myuu. I told you many times already, don't jump because it's dangerous,.」

「Ehehe~, I'm sorry nano~」

Myuu blinked for a moment because she didn't understand what happened, but seeing Hajime who was warning her with a wry smile, she immediately grinned loosely and leaned back snugly at Hajime's chest.

Hajime made a troubled smile seeing the state of his beloved daughter who didn't seem to reflect on her action at all, he then used his hand to change the way he held her and then he stood up.

From the surrounding,「E, eee? Papa? Just now, that girl called him papa?」or「Lies, he has a child!?」, or「Oi oi, how old is that guy……if that kid is his child, then just when were she born……」, or「Rather than that, just now is amazing isn't it? That kid is rotated in full circle you know?」, the topic was spreading with an amazing momentum in the plaza.

But, the entrance of Myuu was still only the beginning. All of them would witness even more shocking scene after this.

「My my, Myuu. Mama told you that it's no good for you to run off alone right? After all it's easy to get lost in this world……」

「Mamaa. But, Papa is here so……」

「Ufufu, Myuu really is a papa-girl. Dear……thank you for waiting.」

With her sandal making cute sounds *patapata* from each step, wearing a long skirt and elegant cardigan, also swaying emerald green hair that was braided with hair tie, Remia finally arrived.

Seeing the entrance of an older, or rather a foreigner onee-san who had plenty of sex appeal of a widow, *gulp* the sound of someone gulping their saliva could

be heard from somewhere. Several men were already sending piercing gaze of envy toward Hajime who had beauties as his wife and daughter.

But, still not yet. It still wasn't over yet with this!

「Hajime-saa~n, thank you for waiting~

「My apologize for making you to wait, Goshujin-sama.」

The ones who were saying that with their arrival were Shia with her faint bluish white long strait hair swaying, wearing miniskirt from where her white slender beautiful legs were generously exposed, and Tio who wasn't wearing her usual kimono, and instead wore loose trousers and V-shirts, and also a long cardigan.

Both of them were owner of good looks that could make idol or actress to run away barefooted in shame. Such two girls were approaching toward Hajime who seemed to already have a child and wife with obvious good will coloring their whole face.

The gaze of the people at the station plaza was already in a glued state toward Hajime without being unable to take off their gaze. Their curiosity kept rising over the limit.

While completely ignoring those people, Hajime shrugged with him still carrying Myuu.

「You all wanted to try having a rendezvous right? I don't really mind. Spending time not doing anything, only staring absentmindedly at nothing is not bad sometimes.」

Yes, it was just as Hajime said, if it was asked for what reason these people who were living at the same house were meeting at the station plaza in an appointed time, that was because of the request of the female camp. Hajime thought in his heart that it was better to go together, but if he was requested for something like this then he couldn't reject it. It was a cute request for him.

「So, what about Yue? You all come together right?」

Hajime tilted his head seeing that there was only one of his lovers who hadn't yet appeared in this place.

「Aa, I think Yue-san will arrive soon. There were some guys picking up women

in the train, so Yue-san was taking care of them while telling us to go ahead.」

「Taking care……don't tell me, she isn't going to smash them right? Spare me from that. If the monster of clothing store will be overflowing even until this world……I'm prepared to even wage war you know?」

「Even though Goshujin-sama is a godslayer, thou art still not very good against Christabel and others huh.」

Hajime's expression cramped from listening to Shia's explanation. Tio was being somewhat exasperated seeing that state of Hajime, but when she thought from the point of view of Hajime whose ass kept getting stared feverishly each time by those manly women of another world, her gaze was changing into sympathy thinking that it might be something that couldn't be helped.

By the way, according to Shia's additional explanation, it seemed that Yue would only toy with the guys' memory and mind using soul magic, and she wouldn't use the crotch smash. For the time being, Yue and others had also learned of the proper method of dealing with trouble at Japan which had strict law to maintain order compared to the other world.

While they were talking like that, Hajime suddenly felt a restless sign from the direction of the station street, so Hajime turned his gaze there.

Sure enough, from there he could see a figure of a beautiful girl with crimson eyes and golden hair that looked as though she came out right from the screen, walking with calm air majestically, and also with elegance and gracefulness at the same time, as though she was a queen walking on a red carpet.

Yue wasn't in her girl mode that was normally in the appearance of twelve years old. She had transformed her appearance similar with Hajime, into an age of around seventeen years old. There was no need to mention her bewitching air, the faint smile that was pasted on her lips might be from her feeling toward her beloved that was in the end of her sight. That smile also exposed out tenderness, which was magnifying the charm of her perfect beauty by several times over.

Yue who should be called as a peerless beauty from just a glance was exuding out adult charm, but the clothes that she came wearing were a loose parka and lacy skirt that were honestly seemed to be rough yet cute, that style of clothing

pushed aside the difficult to approach aura that was characteristic in a beautiful person which further boosted up her charm.

Anyone who caught sight of Yue, regardless of their age or gender, they would have their gaze drawn in without exception. The sounds of *gon-*, or *gashan-*, or *bachikon-* that could be heard from here and there, were the sounds of disaster that were played by the victim of Yue. In a sense she could be called as a walking disaster.

A youth crashed into a telephone pole because he was walking while watching Yue, a group of boy that seemed to be students were stampeding over a store's signboard, a girlfriend who came back to her sense visited her slap at the boyfriend beside her to drag him back into reality.

However, Yue didn't pay attention to those at all. She walked forward dashingly, and before long, amidst the gathered attention, she had approached until Hajime's side.

「……Nn. Hajime, thank you, for letting us to have "rendezvous".」

Saying that, Yue put her lips on top of Hajime's. That act was really natural, as though doing that was only a matter of course, like how if the wind blew then the leaves would sway.

Yue put her hand gently on Hajime's chest with her feet standing on her tiptoes to make herself a little taller in order to kiss Hajime. Seeing such Yue caused the surrounding to be shaken.

「Geez, Yue-oneechan is unfair nano! Myuu is going to do 'chuu' too!」

「My my, then I too……」

「Uu, it's a little embarrassing in front of a crowd like this desu but……」

「Art that so? Rather, this makes me a little excited though?」

Right after Yue separated from Hajime, Hajime nonchalantly evaded the octopus kiss of Myuu who aimed at his lips and redirected it on his cheek, after that he accepted Remia and Shia's kiss while gifting a slap at Tio. At the end there were the female camp whose cheeks were blushing, and one pervert who was going 'haa haa' while holding her slapped cheek.

The scene of a real harem, where one man with a child was exchanging kisses with multiple beautiful girls and women caused the tension of the people at the area to break through the limit. 「What the hell is that!? What is going on!? Is this a shooting of some show!?」some panicked,「Tha, that man, what kind of person he is!? Is he the son of a financial conglomerate somewhere?」some was imagining the true identity of Hajime,「Thi, this is Japan right?」and some was doubting their own whereabouts, the crowd were all getting really busy with their thought.

At last, some people with smartphone camera appeared, deciding that there was no way they were going to let go of this rare scene.

But, without a single exception,

「E, eh? Wai-, the screen light vanished suddenly!?」

「What's this, it got noises all over!?」

「No way, is it broken!? Spare me from that!」

Like that, all the smartphones were suddenly became out of form and the people couldn't take picture using their phone. The cause of this was naturally, Hajime. By performing a minute adjustment to his characteristic magic "Lightning Clad", he emitted out electromagnetic wave that disrupted the electronic. Of course, if the electronic got away from Hajime then they would return to normal.

「……Nn. It becomes noisy. Hajime, let's go soon?」

「No no, what are you trying to do attempting to depart naturally like that. There are still members who haven't arrived yet here.」

「……? Hajime, you are feeling tired right now.」

「You think I'm Agent Mu**er. Don't try to avert the topic with X-Fi*e make-believe.」(TN: X-File series, FBI agent Fox William Mulder. Don't know what this refer too though, never watch X-File)

Even while knowing that there were members who hadn't arrived yet, Yue urged them to depart with a really natural gesture. To that, Hajime smiled wryly while making retort.

「……It's fine, there is no problem. Those two has severe constipation and cannot co——」

「Yuee~~~~! What are you saying~~!」

「Wait a second, no matter what, that lie is just too cruel don't you think!」

Yue's deceiving words that were too cruel to be targeted to a maiden were cut off by Kaori who was running to here wearing a feminine one piece dress, with her body returned to her original body, and Shizuku whose trademark ponytail was swaying behind her.

The further addition of beautiful girls caused the surrounding to become hectic, Kaori only gave that a glance before glaring sharply at Yue right away. And then she immediately turned her gaze at Hajime and smiled gently.

「Sorry, Hajime-kun. You've waited long?」

Hajime was going to open his mouth, but before that happened,

「……Nn. He waited feeling bored to death. As punishment, Kaori is to go home right away. Now, quickly go home. Now, now」

「I won't go home! Yue you bully-. Yue who is saying something like that is the one that has to go home!」

Yue kept pushing away on Kaori, to that Kaori reacted honestly and pushed back at Yue. This was what was called as "Hand Four" in pro-wrestling. The two girls were grappling with each other putting all their strength in it. Both of their foreheads pushed at each other without any side taking a single step back. (TN: Don't know if that's the correct name, Yue and Kaori here were pushing at each other with their hands grasping the other's hands and also their forehead coming into contact.)

By the way, Kaori was able to face Yue equally despite not being in a body of apostle was because Kaori's original body itself was inserted with the factor of apostle flesh and changed into a specially made body.

It was a body reconstruction for the sake of clearing the problem of the difference in lifespan between her and Hajime and others, but that wasn't all, she was also able to activate "Apostle Mode", in that case her hair would change

to silver and she could let out wings from her back. Of course, she could also do disintegration ability and twin sword art without any problem. ……Though those were something extremely unneeded in this peaceful Japan life.

Yue and Kaori were always quarreling about something, but the one who took the lead in the body reconstruction of Kaori was none other than Yue. Perhaps due to the influence when she was taken over by Ehito, Yue somehow understood the method to create apostle, so by using all age of god magic and with the help of Hajime and Tio, the apostlefication of Kaori succeeded splendidly. Their closeness was as great as how much they were quarreling…… perhaps this phrase existed to describe these two.

「Err, Hajime. I think we come right on time but……I wonder if we made you wait?」

Even while looking troubled at the quarrel of the two, Shizuku asked timidly at Hajime. Of course, Hajime said no to the question. Shizuku sighed in relieve hearing that, and then after she looked around feeling a bit embarrassed, she asked Hajime with reservation.

「Say……I wonder if I look strange?」

That question was naturally referring to the fashion she was wearing. Shizuku before she was summoned to another world and even while she was in another world was basically kept wearing pants, but today her appearance was wrapped in a flare skirt and no-sleeve shirt. Although looking from the length of her skirt that reached around above the knee, and the properly fastened buttons on her skirt, this appearance was also really like Shizuku.

「Yeah, I think you look cute. Or rather, before this too, I told you already that you don’t need to get that shy just from wearing a skirt right? After all, it really suited you.」

「Is, is that so? Fufu, thank you.」

The appearance of Shizuku who was shyly fiddling around with her skirt, if the self-alleged little sisters who idolized her as Onee-sama saw this then they would surely fainted without doubt. That was just how lovely the figure of Shizuku who was letting out her natural girlishness in front of Hajime.

And then, Yue and Kaori whose hands were still grappling each other with only their head turned toward that exchange between Hajime and Shizuku were,

「……So nonchalantly, taking the delicious part like that. Shizuku, what a terrifying child.」

「Shizuku-chan……recently, you are not stopping me even when I was quarreling with Yue aren't you……」

Even those whispers of the two didn't reach at all to the ear of the swordswoman-sama whose maiden power was in full throttle right now.

After that, Kaori who noticed that Yue and others had kissed Hajime pressed Hajime for a kiss as expected, while Shizuku whose face became bright red thinking 'such thing is impossible in front of the crowd!' got a little depressed that it would be only her who didn't get a kiss, but Hajime who was unable to be indifferent to that state of Shizuku forcefully kissed her which caused her to faint, it went without saying that the station plaza became a pandemonium after that.

Like that, seeing that the commotion was also getting larger, Hajime and others set out to the city for a date until five o'clock, when the dinner party with the summoned classmates would start.

「I have……seen something amazing.」

After that someone among the people who were left behind whispered like that, that sentence was exactly something that represented the feeling of everyone in the station plaza.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

The next update is planned at 16 P.M Saturday next week=>correction=> 6 P.M Saturday next week too.

Arifureta Chapter 183

Arifureta After – Downtown Date? Part 2

At the street that was slightly distanced from the downtown main street, in the fastfood restaurant that was facing the street. At the window-side seat in that restaurant's second floor, the figures of three young men who seemed to be high school student could be seen slacking up listlessly on the chair, as though to say that they had too much free time to spare.

Above the tray that was put on the table in front of the three, burger wrapping that had been crumpled up into a round shape and empty French fries container were scattered about carelessly.

「*Aa*~」

While scowling at the juice which had became thin due to the melting ice, one of the high school students was discharging out a strange groan. Hearing that, the remaining two students directed an annoyed gaze and an understanding gaze at the first student.

「I know that we got nothing to do, but don't make that kind of voice. It's embarrassing.」

「You are saying something like that huh. In this precious holiday, three men are jabbering like this……haaa~. On top of having nothing to do, this is just empty……」

「Don't say that. That'll just make you feel emptier.」

These three who had been friends since middle school were currently first year high school students. Harboring a faint hope, that if they advanced to high

school then it would be an exciting springtime of their life that didn't exist in middle school……that something would happen, but in actuality there wasn't really anything particular that happened, they were spending normal days that had no difference with their middle school period.

Actually, the school they were enrolled into, was the high school where the world-shaking occult case happened a year ago, and among the current third year there were also the seniors who were directly related with that case. That too became the primary cause that inflated the hope they were harboring that "something" might happen in their high school life (they received fierce opposition from their parents that they chose this school as the first choice but they persuaded their parents) but……there wasn't really anything happened.

Of course, there was also decisively different point before and after the occult case, and that was something that undoubtedly made them delighted from the bottom of their heart that they enrolled into their current high school. That point was……

「Aa, I want to have a date with Yue-senpai.」

「I want to marry Shia-senpai.」

「Shirasaki-senpai……is great isn't she」

The three were facing up the ceiling while leaking out their wild delusion, that rather than with these male friends with whom they had a stuffily undesirable but inseparable relationship, they would rather walk around the city in holiday with the senior they yearned for. And then hearing each other's words, they exchanged glances among them. And then, they spoke words to each other at the same time.

「「「Don't say something like that. It feels empty.」」」

The three simultaneously sighed so deeply to the degree that it would surely let out all the happiness that they possessed. While the image of the senior they yearned for was floating at the back of their mind, at the same time they lamented the fact of how the gaze of their yearned person was directed only at a single person, furthermore that person was the same person for the three different girls they yearned for, and that fact was known not only in school, but even the whole neighborhood had already knew of that fact. (TN: In Japan there

is the saying that sighing will cause your happiness to get away from you.)

In addition to that, it didn't stop with just that three seniors, something like that was just……

「Shit, even though in this world, there are many people in love poverty like us, that shitty bastard-」

「O, oi. Stop that. Did you forget already, about the guys that were turned like that after speaking ill of that "you know who" behind his back?」

「……Are you talking about the captain of the karate club, how he got transfigured into a big sis the next day?」

「There is also that, but there also people like the ace of soccer club who got planted with phobia of female, or the math teacher who even though he was always acting sarcastically, but one day he was suddenly using polite language at "you know who" like a military……」

「Bu, but, those were lies right? Those were just like urban legend right? Look, those guys, they are the 'returnee'. Those kind of story were created a lot half for fun……in fact, there aren't any seniors or teacher like in those rumor.」

「That's, you're right but……」

Stories that sounded like urban legend——but speaking about that, even the story about "real harem" also "sounded like urban legend" in that case……in the end, that was what the three of them came to think but they didn't say it out loud. It was the truth that students and teacher that became the basis of the rumors couldn't be found in the school, but at the same time, there were also rumors that those rumored guys had transferred school or changed job.

It was unknown what was the truth and what was the lie. And that also granted uneasy feeling that they couldn't describe. Especially because the new first year didn't know about the returnee——the people who returned back from being spirited away in mass were called like that by the society and like that the naming stuck——'s school life right after they returned from the occult case.

Naturally, there were also a lot of first year students who were ignorant of the ways of the world and get carried away, they attempted to go in offense toward the beautiful seniors and foreign students that were among those returnee

group but……most of them were turned into ash after being shown the relationship of those beauties with “that person”, or they were stopped by the male seniors of the returnee group with kind gaze when they attempted to take malicious action from jealousy, and after a few months passed those kind of people eventually became a little bit adult from understanding in their heart that “it’s just how it is”.

Even so, as expected there was no way the yearning toward the seniors who were so beautiful that even celebrity couldn’t win against them would disappear, and that went even truer with the jealousy toward that “you know who” who was literally monopolizing those beautiful seniors like a joke, grumble or cursing would sometimes leak out suddenly toward that you-know-who like this.

「Haa……hm? O, oi, that」

「Hm?」

「Aa?」

One of the male students for some reason turned his gaze outside the window, and then he noticed of that group and raised his voice. The other two got curious and moved their gaze following him, and there, in an unbelievable timing, the rumored group was walking on the street at the other side.

It was that “you know who” ——Nagumo Hajime, and his wives.

「Oi oi, just why are those people here?」

「That is, no matter how you see it, this must be a date.」

「As always, what amazing line up huh……wait, that child riding on “that person’s” shoulder, is that the rumored daughter? So it’s true that he have a child? Isn’t that bad……」

bita-! The three mob clung on the window glass, staring hungrily at Hajime who was walking nonchalantly while being surrounded by extraordinarily beautiful girls and women in enjoyment. Seeing from the view point of the people inside the restaurant, the figures of those three were like geckos that were clinging on window, it was relatively a strange sight. It almost caused the 0 yen smile of the restaurant waitress to crumble. (TN: 0 yen smile=a free smile, a business smile)

「Yue-senpai, Shia-senpai……also Shirasaki-senpai and Yaegashi-senpai are there too. Next are the black haired beauty and the blond beauty that were sometimes seen at the school festival or after school……」

「Just what kind of perfect lineup this is. Dammit it all-」

「Aa, also that child……she is super cute. There is even a beautiful little girl…… how envious.」

「Eh?」

「Eh?」

「Eh?」

The last statement caused the three to spontaneously leak out stupid sound while they faced each other. Or rather, two of them were making「Eh, this guy is seriously, that kind of guy?」look at the last one while drawing back. That last person seeing that tried to solve the misunderstanding in panic then.

「Ah, those senpai are getting farther see.」

「Yosh, we got nothing to do anyway, let's try following them yeah. What kind of date a realy harem man is having, this can be used for future reference.」

「Hey, you guys are misunderstanding okay? I'm not like that okay?」

「But, will it be okay? From the rumor, those people for some reason are really sharp I heard. Won't it be bad if we got found out?」

「This is in the middle of city, there are also a lot of people so there won't be any problem. Besides, this is that group of beauties we are talking about. There is high chance some punks going to pick a fight with them. At that time, what kind of action "that person" will take……perhaps we are going to understand a bit, whether those rumors about the senpai that got turned into big sis or the teacher that got turned itno pseudo military are the truth or not, don't you think so? You are curious right?」

「He, heey, listen to me. I really, don't have any interest for little kid at all. I was just simply……」

「Indeed……wait, this is bad, They are seriously getting farther. For now let's go first.」

「Yoosh. Well, even just paying respect at the figure of Yue-senpai and the others in casual clothing at holiday is already the best anyway.」

「Yeah-」

「Oy wait! Don't ignore me here! You guys are seriously mistaken! No, really!」

Until the end the noisy three students didn't notice the previous waitress whose eyes weren't smiling anymore even though the lips were still smiling. They exited the restaurant with noisy footsteps. And then, from the entrance downstairs, a yell of「Rather, I am someone that get excited from adult woman, like female teacher, or widow heree-」that would cause headache could be heard……the waitresses sighed deeply hearing that.

「Heeey, you guys are really mistaken okay?」

「Geez, we got it already.」

「You like female teacher or widow. That was what you were saying right? Rather than that, don't make so much noise. We are going to get found out here.」

「Even though I was on the brink of getting treated like a pervert lolicon just now, you guys……」

By the time he did a coming out with his outrageous fetish at the fastfood restaurant, he was already definitely a pervert, but no one there made such retort. Rather than that, it was more important to observe carefully the party of Hajime and others who were currently enjoying window shopping at the end of their gaze.

While they were observing, Hajime's group entered a large three storey store that was fairly famous for its ladies fashion. From across the glass window, the trio could see how the shop employees and other customers were taken aback for a moment. But the shop employees were immediately recovering their usual attitude like a pro, while the other female customers were sending their gaze as though they had encountered celebrity, and the male camp who were taken along with the female customers were staring in fascination in a daze.

Amidst those, the aforementioned Hajime's group didn't look particularly bothered with all the attention and they only looked around inside the store,

sometimes the female camp would ask for Hajime's opinion and tried some clothes. To that, Hajime changed Myuu's position from on top his shoulder into carrying her with one hand, and then he seemed to say one or two sentence back regarding his impressions to the clothes. Just from looking it could clearly be seen that Yue and others were swinging from joy and nervousness when they were listening to what Hajime was saying.

「……By any chance, that man is giving back different impressions to all of them respectively?」

「If he is just saying "that suits you", then at the very least it will be said six times from only one round you know. That will make him look like a broken machine in that case.」

「Based from the expressions of all those girls, it seems that man is saying different impression each time without fail. ……Is this, the true power of a harem man……」

The trio were continuing to observe by hiding at a shadow of merchandise even while being seen suspiciously by other customers and employees. Their expression changed into shudder. If it was them who were asked for impression by that many women changing clothes multiple times like that……without a doubt in their case they would be turned into a broken speaker saying the same thing.

But, after that, after the group was feeling satisfied walking around inside the store, the three mediocre high school students (first year) were made to taste further the dreadfulness of a real harem man's deed.

「Wa, wait-. Don't tell me, he is planning to pay for that many clothes!?」

「That's a lie right-. This store, it's really expensive you know! Even if each of them only buy one clothes, there will be six pieces……is that guy's financial strength a monster!?」

Ahead of the gaze of the trembling trio, were six clothes that were put on the register. Yue, Shia, Tio, and Remia looked happy, while Kaori and Shizuku looked a bit apologetic, even so they were staring with undisguised happiness at the back of Hajime who was speaking with the clerk.

Hajime handed a card at the clerk and finished the bill, then he wrote the address for the mailing destination and turned back. He only shrugged toward the thanks that were said to him by the female camp before urging them to continue the date. And then there was Myuu who repeatedly hit lightly at Hajime's cheek in protestation because it was only her who wasn't bought some clothes due to the lack of size that matched her body, but as though to say that he got it, Hajime turned a gentle gaze at her and nodded before leaving the store.

The customers who were accompanied with lover or friend, and the employers who were left behind then let out deep sigh that was filled with various thought.

「Come to think of it, once, I heard a rumor. "That person's" parents, seems to be the president of a game company, or a popular manga author. Also, it seems the person himself also did some part time work, and it was said that he earned quite a lot.」

「Aa. I also heard something like that. In addition, there was also some joking rumor that the person himself was starting up a company related to jewelry. They said that black haired beauty and that blond beauty are the company director or the secretary or something.」

While following behind Hajime and group, the trio was laughing dryly after conversing of the rumors that sounded like a joke, but now those rumors seemed to have some truth in it after what they witnessed.

In fact, that rumor hit the bull's eye. When Hajime just came back to this world, he got really busy with taking care of large problems like the forgery of everything that was related with government administration including family register, etc., and also countermeasure against the mass media. By the time all of those calmed down, he was faced with the problem about providing for Yue and others, although he was still a student, but as expected it was unacceptable for a man to keep relying on his parents for that. In order to raise his dependability status, he pondered for a way to earn money.

One of his ideas was starting up a jewelry shop. If he was asked why a jewelry shop, of course, it was because he was a transmutation master, and through that he possessed an unfair method regarding processing technology of jewel.

Depending on the situation, even without any raw ore, as long as he had Structural Component skill he could possibly create precious stone from scratch.

As for design, he left it to Remia who unexpectedly displayed good sense in her idea, Hajime only transmuted following her design. Furthermore, just by wearing these accessories that Hajime created, it would improve the physical condition of the wearer, or improving the skin, or raising the memorizing ability, anyway the accessories had *miraculous* effects.

At present the business was done in a small office with their sales mainly from internet, but even so, Tio who in this one year was learning economy and management carried out the administration of the business, so he could work while also going to school. Rather, through word of mouth the good design sense and the miraculous effects were promoted further and the business produced quite an earning.

Furthermore, Remia and Tio who weren't attending school respectively showed their interest on the various design style or economic system of earth, so this jewelry shop that Hajime established wasn't just killing two birds with one stone, it was already killing three birds with one stone where Remia and Tio also could pursue their interest. Hajime himself was also stretching his hand toward various trades in his own way.

「Magic merchandise is selling like magic huh.」Seeing Hajime who was making a really crooked smile while saying that, caused Shuu and Sumire to avert their eyes at the same time, while it went without saying that Yue and others were enraptured with that Hajime.

「O, oi, it's finally the development just as we thought! As expected from those seniors. The predator that snapped at the bait is nothing half-assed.」

「Wait, is this, going to be okay? From their appearance, they feel like college students, they are absurdly huge.」

「Le, let's at least, prepare so that we can contact the police.」

Ahead of the gaze of the trio who was hiding on the nearby signboard while seeing the situation, Hajime and group who were going to enter into a children clothing shop were being approached by five men with great body build that seemed to be college students. The five college students were approaching with

smile on their mouth. Dyed hair, rough clothing, rough expression, rough atmosphere, from all those it was obvious that they were the type of people you wouldn't want to get involved with.

The people at the surrounding were also somehow sensing the trouble that would happen, uneasy air could be felt from them.

The approach of those fellows caused Hajime to look back and narrowed his eyes. And then, the five men arrived before Hajime and group, the sound of someone gulping could be heard from somewhere, immediately following,

「Hajime-san, also all the girlfriends, greetings —su-!」

「「「「Greetings —su-!」」」」

The five scary guys bowed their head simultaneously. Voices and expressions of「Eee——!!」were overflowing from the surrounding. The unexpected development also caused the trio to go「Whyyyy!?」with their body leaning out from the signboard. Amidst those, Hajime was,

「……Aa? Who are you guys?」

He returned a suspicious stare at the scary guys. Getting flustered and a bit shocked from that reply, a man with dyed blonde hair and piercing opened his mouth in panicked rush.

「I, it's me, me. Don't you remember me?」

「Hmph? So this is a "It's me, me" fraud right to the face……you are quiet a novel guy huh.」(TN: "It's me, me" fraud, when someone unknown called your phone and suddenly said "it's me, me" without saying any name and in a panicked tone. They would claim that your friend or family just got into accident and rushed you to transfer money to them.)「Tha, that's not it! Half a year ago, I picked a fight with Hajime-san together with twenty of my friends, I am Hide that got beaten up black and blue at that time! After that Hajime-san gave me introduction to my current workplace, and from that I work together with Hajime-san a few times as information dealer don't you remembeer-」

「……Aah, yep. Hide huh. Hide. Yep. I remember you now.」

「Do, do you really remember mee-」

Hajime obviously didn't seem to remember, but it would be scary later if this Hide kept asking doggedly (half a year ago, he had tasted "true fear") so he stopped insisting. That scary face changed into a pathetic look like a puppy that was thrown away.

「So, beaten up information dealer Hide, what's your business with me?」

「That name feels like it's going to catch up as my nickname, so please spare me from that. Eeerr, I don't really have any business, but I just caught sight of Hajime-san by chance, so I only came to give a greeting, that's all.」

「I see. What a honest guy huh. Aa, somehow I recalled you. If I remember correctly, you guys are that bunch who got cold shoulder from Yue and others, and then you tried to take Myuu hostage as revenge, and in the end you guys did dogeza while crying to me right?」

「……Please don't say anything about that anymore. That is a past that I really want to erase……」

The eyes of Hide and his friends turned empty altogether while their body was shivering. One of them looked like they could burst crying anytime.

After that, Hide and others who talked a bit with Hajime said that if it was children clothing then they knew of a shop of an acquaintance nearby that was little-known yet had good merchandise, receiving that information Hajime and others headed there. Seeing the five scary guys who was like a well trained soldier from how they continued to lower their head until the figure of Hajime's group disappeared from view, it went without saying that it caused the gaze of the surrounding to become wordless.

「Somehow, it was different from expectation……」

「What we expected had already happened, and it was settled by "that person", and this is the result huh.」

「……"Settlement" that made dangerous looking older bunch to act like loyal dogs huh……those guys, did you two see they were trembling……」

「「……」」

For some reason the body of the trio shuddered suddenly. And then at that

time when they were pondering whether to continue tailing or to just stop it already, they witnessed the spectacle of Hajime and group exiting the children clothing shop, and the delinquent bunches who caught sight of that once more bowing their head to Hajime just like before.

The trio somehow missed their chance to speak of stopping their observation. And while that trio was still watching attentively, they saw Hajime and others who asked for a good café this time before they walked away, and the delinquents who as expected bowed their head for seeing them off.

Even during the walk until the café, the scene of young bunches who obviously had preference of living in back alley standing up in panic to give greeting while bowing their head when they happened to catch sight of Hajime, entered their sight many time.

Even when they returned back to main street the same thing happened, bunch of guys who seemed to be of that kind would suddenly lower their head with gaze that was filled with terror and respect when they crossed over Hajime's path.

And the clincher of all that, was when a black foreign car stopped nearby Hajime and group who was having pleasant chat at an open terrace café. From that car, bunch of men wearing suits and clad in dangerous atmosphere that would blow away the likes of the delinquents until now were getting off, and as expected even these dangerous men were also greeting while bowing their head to Hajime. Naturally, the atmosphere of the café froze due to this.

And then, the last man got off from the car, an old man around sixty years old wearing hakama……no matter how anyone looked at him, that man couldn't be seen as anything other than a yakuza boss. That man's villainous face distorted even more villainous when he talked to Hajime.

「As always, you are in a nice position eh. Having women serving you in this kind of open place in the middle of day, even though you are just a brat. I want to see the face of the parent of someone like you.」

「If it's the face of my parents than you know them already right? After all when you tried to take revenge at me who crushed your idiotic dealing, you thoroughly investigated my surrounding. Rather, just what business you have

with me here huh? Just as you can see, I'm in the middle of date now. If you intentionally stopped your car just for saying sarcasm at me, then I'm going to crush you underfoot again you know?」

「Ka ka-, don't say something scary like that. As the side that actually got done in, I cannot take that as joke here.」

"Don't run off your mouth like that against a yakuza you!" The guests and café employees around, and also the trio were screaming like that inside their heart, but when they heard the continuing words of the yakuza boss, this time they froze from different significance. They thought「Just now, what did the boss said?」

「It's great that this is Japan, and I'm a virtuous Japanese huh. If that's not the case, by this time you guys will already all become dust and dance at the world sky.」

「……Do you have the self-awareness, that your speech is more yakuza than the actual yakuza? Haa, well that's fine. About why I called at you like this……」

It seemed that the reason for the yakuza boss calling out at Hajime was, once in the past various things happened and one group of this boss's yakuza got annihilated by Hajime (all members of the group were sent to hospital half-dead while its young leader had no hope of recovery), now this group was revived back, and the replacement of the former young leader of this group had been formally decided, so this boss came to Hajime in order to make the new young leader gave his greeting. (TN: In Japan, the big boss of the yakuza (called oyabun) stand at the top of the organization. The yakuza organization itself is divided into several groups where each group is led by young leader (wakagashira) that answered directly to the oyabun.)

It seemed that it had become a new common sense, that if you wanted to survive at the area around the city where Hajime was living, then you must not forget about Hajime's existence. Due to that, the new young leader who knew about the hell scenery of that time now carried out the inauguration greeting to Hajime expressionlessly, while being unable to hide the cold sweat that was dripping from his face.

There was no way Hajime would come if he was called to attend the

inauguration event, and it was unknown what kind of punishment they would receive if they intruded on Hajime's house or school. However, if the new young leader didn't show his face to Hajime, then they wouldn't be able to calm down no matter what when thinking about the future. While the yakuza boss was at his wits end about what to do, while traveling by car he caught sight of Hajime's group by accident, thinking「This is the chance-! Let's take care of the unpleasant matter all at once! There is no way we are going to get assaulted at public place, that's unthinkable!」, he called at Hajime like this to give the greeting.

……It was really unclear which side was the yakuza.

「I see. Well, as long as you guys doesn't do anything that involved the people at my surrounding, you can do whatever you want. However, previously there was still some extenuating circumstances that I took into consideration, so your guys got off with only being half-dead, but there is no next time. If in the future, even if only indirectly something happen……I'll present you guys with a really lovely second life. Forcefully, got that?」

Saying that, Hajime's mouth split into a crescent moon shape.

「……As expected, you are more yakuza than yakuza.」

The people at the surrounding heavily sympathized「It's exactly as you said, Oyabin-san!」inside their heart. And then, the yakuza boss was attacked with the impulse of wanting to ask, "just what kind of experience it was that produced a brat like you" based on his knowledge that Hajime was one of that "returnee", but his instinct from his long life experience was raising a piercing alarm, so with effort he swallowed back his words.

Before long, the yakuza bunch bowed their head simultaneously at Hajime before also speaking in chorus at Yue and others「All of you Nee-san, pardon us for bothering at the middle of your enjoyment」, leaving behind that bizarre scene they finally drew back and left.

「Now then, it will be time soon, let's go.」

Yue and other stood from their chair hearing Hajime's words. When Hajime asked for the bill at the clerk, the girl clerk around the same age with Hajime who had watched the exchange just now faced the register while saying「Hyess! The bhill ishn't hit! Thank you very mhucch!」in a state that was really like the

template it made him wondered if she was actually aiming for it.

However, the fact that this act wasn't something intentional was made clear by the clerks finger barrage at the register buttons which looked like a certain kenpou master going「Aa~tatatatatatata-」striking the secret points of human body. It was like a clichéd template so much that she looked pitiful. (TN: I guess this is a reference to Hokuto no Ken)

The girl clerk was looking for help at her coworkers and manager with a face that almost burst crying, but they only clenched their fist to convey「Do your best!」without any sign of lending a hand. The other guests and the trio were as expected only giving support of「Fight on!」inside their heart without any indication of giving assistance.

「……Haah」

「-!?」

Seeing that state of the clerk, Hajime sighed thinking whether this was his fault. Hearing that the clerk twitched and her body trembled, the girl clerk's secret point strike (register machine only) was increasingly reaching further height.

Thereupon, on the hand of the girl clerk that was striking the secret point(register button) a lot, a small hand was piled up there. The clerk spontaneously screamed「hih」, but when she understood that the hand came from the little girl Hajime was carrying she stared blankly in puzzlement.

Myuu smiled widely at that clerk.

「Clerk-san, it's fine nano~」

「A, yes, my, my apologize.」

As expected from Myuu. It was with just one hit. The girl clerk who recovered her calm safely finished her divine fist training and typed on the register correctly.

Hajime who in a sense got his ass wiped up for him patted on Myuu's head with gratitude, admiration, and praise. Myuu was smiling "ehehe~" while embracing Hajime.

Settling the bill, the clerk prepared the change from the register and watched Myuu and Hajime who were like that, her gaze was attracted at Hajime's unexpectedly gentle expression and gaze. And then, when Hajime whispered「My bad for scaring you」with slightly troubled face while receiving the receipt, the clerk swung her head left and right energetically in denial.

Hajime exited the café while feeling the reproachful glare of the female camp on his back for some reason. The energetic voice of the clerk「W, we are waiting, fo, for your next coming——!」and the voice of the café manager that were trying to stop her from saying that echoed behind him.

「Hey, let's go home already……I'm already, really at my limit in various meaning.」

「Yeah, me too. I want to go home.」

「The rumors were all true. I am convinced now. "That person" really had become a harem king to the greatest degree……」

A while after Hajime and group exited the café, the trio exited the café with a somewhat exhausted state. Their observation of Hajime's group forced them into exhaustion in various meaning. At the same time, they also wordlessly convinced that it would be real bad if they stalked Hajime's group more than this.

And then, they turned back at the opposite direction from where Hajime and group were walking……in that moment,

「Wapuh」

The face of one of the male student got covered by a paper that was carried by the wind with a plop. That male student cursed「What the hell」while taking that paper into his hand, he then dropped his gaze to that paper inadvertently……

——That young man stiffened as though he was frozen solid.

「Oi, what's wrong?」

「What are you stiffening for……」

The other two felt dubious while they were peeking from both sides at the flying paper the stiffened young man kept holding, and there on the paper,

——Not a bad moment that you choose to quit. From now on too, be moderate with your inquisitiveness, okay? From senpai

Naturally the other two also stiffened. Since when they were noticed? When did this written? Rather, how did it arrive here? Eh, in the first place, just now, the wind is blowing right……

Various questions circulated in their brain instantly, then the three moved their head *gigigi* with crude movements like machine that was forgotten to be oiled and faced each other. And then, a beat later,

「「「NOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOO-!!!!」」」

Screaming like a girl, the trio dashed on the path toward their home like a startled rabbit.

At the following week, it went without saying that additional anecdote was added into the urban legend of that “you know who”.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Next I’m thinking of giving a spot to another two people while touching the commotion regarding post-returning home.

The next update is planned at 6 P.M Saturday next week too.

Arifureta Chapter 184

Arifureta After – The Happy Road of a Certain Muscle Brain

AN: I'm sorry to those who are hoping for Aiko and Liliana, or the person with faint shadow and the rabbit-eared onee-san, or perhaps the rabbit-eared 'hyahha' clan chief and the 'Shia-tan haa haa' perverted princess of the elf.

Those are still in the middle of being written……

That place where tranquility was drifting as though separated from outside world, was a graveyard in a certain outskirts. A main building of a temple could be seen at slight distance away, and several gravestones lining up regularly at the surrounding.

In such graveyard that was characteristically quiet, in addition of it being a holiday, unusually there was a figure of a young girl there. She was standing alone by herself. Her hair that was reaching until her back was fluttering from the breeze, she wasn't stirring even for a bit as though her thought was running around in her head, staring fixedly at the family name engraved on the gravestone.

But, at that timing, a rough voice resounded along with heavy footsteps that broke the tranquility.

「Ou, Suzu. What a coincidence. So you also came here huh.」

「Ryutaro-kun!」

The girl——Suzu turned back in surprise. Ryutaro who just arrived stamped his feet loudly on the gravel path of the graveyard while raising his hand and

greeted「Yo」really nonchalantly.

「Ryutaro-kun. Why are you here……wait, there is only one thing to do here huh.」

「Yeah, today is the day everyone is gathering. ……So, for some reason, yeah. If we are not coming here, then no one will be at here.」

「That's not true you know? At least, there was already an offering when I came here.」

「Hm? Aa, by any chance, Kaori and Shizuku perhaps?」

「Maybe.」

In front of the grave stone, there were indeed some flowers decorating it there. There were also flowers decorating the spot other than the flowers that Suzu brought. Suzu was giving his agreement to Ryutaro's guess while opening her mouth with wry smile.

「……Although, there is not really anything of Eri inside here.」

Saying that, Suzu returned her gaze to the gravestone. There, the name of "Nakamura Eri" was engraved. Yes, the friend of Suzu that met her end at another world——Nakamura Eri's family tomb was located here. Of course, Eri had self-exploded at the [Holy Precincts], so, let alone her remains, there wasn't anything of her in this grave. There was nothing to prove that Eri was sleeping in here.

Even so, when she wished to lament over her best friend who devoted herself to evil due to her unstoppable madness and feeling, Suzu's feet would naturally bring herself to this place. After they returned from the another world, she had only visited this place once. In this day after a year passed, when the members who had went through unique experience would gather, before the promised time Suzu and also Ryutaro without even any planning beforehand……including Kaori and Shizuku who came here beforehand, their feelings were as one.

For a while, the two stayed silent, they only continued to stare at the gravestone without any word, while recalling the Eri of before at the other side.

It was unknown how much time passed, but before long Suzu stretched her

body with a groan ‘uu~n’, she floated a soft smile as though she had sorted out her feeling while asking Ryutaro.

「Come to think of it, as expected, Kouki won’t come to the gathering today isn’t he?」

「Yeah. Especially because I didn’t hear anything from Nagumo about opening the gate. Guess he won’t participate. Well, even though we finally got a special class prepared for our sake after much effort, he went as far as leaving high school, going to Tortus saying “I’m going to atone”. Something like the gathering for celebrating the one year of our return, even if that guy is in this side he absolutely won’t attend it yeah.」

「I guess. Kouki-kun would say something like, 『I don’t have any qualification for that』, right?」

Ryutaro and Suzu smiled wryly at each other.

Exactly as they said, currently Kouki was at Tortus. Kouki had returned home to earth once together with Hajime and others, but he was unable to make himself to go through normal high school life. It wasn’t like anyone was saying anything harsh to him, but it was his own heart, his guilty feeling, his will that wished for atonement, that rejected to spend his time with carefree feeling in school life even if it was just for one or two years.

Even with the disappearance of Ehitorujue who was toying around with people with his war game, it didn’t mean that the threat of monster had decreased. Among the monsters that came out from【Holy Precincts】, there should be some of them that succeeded in escaping. It seemed that removing those threats even for a bit was one kind of atonement for Kouki.

Naturally, it was widely known that Kouki who should have been summoned as hero didn’t participate at the decisive battle, there was also Kouki’s personal declaration which made it highly known throughout Tortus how Kouki was at the enemy’s side. Therefore, that equally meant that there was no place for Kouki at that world.

But, even so, as a single adventurer, Kouki silently moved himself busily to be assistance for someone.

「So, there is still a little bit of time until the time, but what will Suzu do?」

「Hmm~. I don't really have any plan though. Maybe just strolling around aimlessly, or meeting up with Kaorin and others……no, I won't meet up with them I guess. It's impossible to spend my time normally inside that pink atmosphere. It would be absolutely tiresome.」

「Aa~, yeah. I guess so. Then, how about you kill time aimlessly. Together with me.」

「Yep. Let's talk about various things, mixed with flashback scene too for the readers.」

「……」

Suzu was receiving a bit of wave signal while the two of them stared at the gravestone one more time, and then they left that place. (TN: What it means by the signal here is how Suzu is breaking the fourth wall a bit.)

The pair who were walking around aimlessly while making small talks before long reached a cosy park. Without any particular confirmation at each other's thinking or any previous agreement, the pair naturally sat down on a bench. There they stared at the figures of children who were playing in the public park.

「Aa~, it's so peacefuul~」

「Oi oi, what are you doing speaking like that. Are you a grandma?」

「That's cruel. You really are a muscle brain without delicacy like usual, good grief. Even Ryutaro-kun, you would also impulsively think like that sometimes since we returned here right? About how peaceful it is here. To think that until a year ago we were fighting battle where it wouldn't be strange to die anytime, this is a bit unbelievable even for myself.」

「……Yeah. When we just returned here we were busy with things, so at first I didn't feel anything like that though. But indeed, recently, now that I have calmed down I often got thought like that.」

「……Isn't that right.」

A year ago Hajime created a gate that connected the another world Tortus and earth and the surviving classmates stepped their feet in this birthplace of their

once more.

They landed on the rooftop of the school, then they looked around and raised a loud joyful voice at the moonlight night. Among them there were people who were overcame with emotion and broke out crying, there were also those who were consoling those people while crying in sympathy, at that time it was quiet a hectic situation.

At that time, Hajime and others also investigated the possibility, whether in the end it would be possible to once again open the gate to Tortus, the another world from here or not. Hajime had consumed immense magic power, but he used the magic crystal where he stocked reserve magic power and whipped up his tired body to immediately attempt it, and the result was that they confirmed that at the very least even in earth they were able to use magic and artifact.

Hearing that, the happiness of the classmates who realized that it was possible to once more meet with the close people they had created at the another world rose to a great extent. All of the classmates swooped down on Hajime and they even did the customary practice of tossing him to the air even though it was at the middle of night.

After that, the calming down classmates rejoiced in each other's survival and return before setting out to return to their home. In the end, what happened with their house and family……such anxiety was by no meant nonexistence in their heart, but even so, all of them were dashing through their school route with light footsteps and nostalgia,

……with a super speed that would make Olympic athlete went pale.「You guys-, stop jumping over the rooftops!」like that it went without saying that the angry voice of a certain worrier ponytail-san echoed in the middle of night.

By the way, regarding of how they should explain to their family and other people regarding the events during their disappearance, during the month after the decisive battle they all discussed it, and the conclusion they reached was to "tell it honestly".

Even if they made lies that sounded realistic, surely if it got investigated by the police and so forth, the contradiction and the suspiciousness of their lies would be exposed. It was easily imaginable how popular the topic of a group

disappearance in midday would become and how earnest the police would investigate it. There was no way those investigating polices wouldn't be able to see through their half-baked lies. To say nothing of how there were students who couldn't come back. They couldn't do this half-baked.

Having said that, if they tried to pretend to have amnesia, it would look like they really had something to hide and the police and mass media would surely not leave them alone. A blank period that the disappeared students were obstinately refusing to speak about……something like that was just the favorite of mass media. Combined with the not returning students, there would be many sides that made a fuss greatly with mixture of fact and truth.

If the situation would be like that, then wouldn't it be better if the offered by themselves that kind of information instead, something that would make the surrounding spontaneously drew away in revulsion, or possibly made other people looked at them with pitying gaze while secretly distancing themselves.

The information they offered would be,

——We fought monster and evil god, at a fantasy world of sword and magic!

Like that.

Of course, this was an idea from Hajime. There was not a single lie in that information, that was why they could just act boldly saying that no matter how much they were pressed for information. In this way even the classmates who weren't as shameless as Hajime could weather the storm without amassing too much anxiety. And no matter what other people said to them, they could just speak back with "it's depend on you whether you believe it or not".

And then, regarding the people who would still pursue the matter deeply even then, or when some kind of problem occurred, Yue-san's magic would be liberally used to get those problematic people to be "Dear me, what am I doing again just now?"

Also, the people who got applied with "Dear me, what am I doing again just now?" weren't just the mass media whose tenacity status was at MAX count and the excessively sharp government official or police. There were also suspicious organization that seemed to be related with religion, or ree-ally suspicious people that seemed to be related with government, or the absurdly suspicious

sorcery——occultist group.

While the majority of their classmates were enjoying television or internet while nibbling at potato chips after so long, behind the scene Hajime and others (+ a person with thin shadow) were doing this and that against the bunches who seemed to be living at behind the scene of earth but……that was another story.

「At the beginning it was really hectic wasn't it. Especially the mass media people, they were really persistent huh.」

「Yeah, many calls were coming asking me to come out in a special program in television, or something like that. The times when I were asked about Eri or Hiyama, "why is it only you all who came home", or "don't you feel any responsibility", I seriously wanted to send them flying y'know.」

「About that huh. When Nakano-kun and Saitou-kun normally punched the reporter, they got article『As expected, is there any disorder in their mind!?』in the news without any reservation at all you remember?」

「The delicacy of the reporter is also questionable though.」

Recalling the large wave in society at that time, Suzu and Ryutaro smiled wryly at each other. At that time, not only the mass media and police, even some of their acquaintances visited them to pry about just what really happened.

Especially the family of Hiyama, Kondo, and Shimizu. They were doggedly hounding the matter until the end.

The truth was also conveyed without anything hidden toward the families of the students who couldn't return. The ones who were doing the explanation were Aiko and Hajime. Actually Aiko tried to go to talk to those families by herself, but the topic about Hajime would be unavoidable anyway if the truth was going to be spoken, and above all, Hajime didn't have the least bit of intention to bother Aiko or make Aiko bear the full brunt regarding the matter of Hiyama and others, so Hajime forcefully accompanied Aiko in the end.

Naturally, after those families were made to believe the story of another world by showing them magic, the families of Hiyama and others cursed and insulted at Hajime and Aiko in unconcealed rage and hatred, some were even trying to act violent, but……

Giving a glance at Aiko who resigned herself to accept those anger and hatred from her feeling of responsibility of being unable to bring those students home or reforming their conduct, Hajime who was the perpetrator that put the bullet in those students kept a cold expression and repelled straight from the front all of those anger and hatred.

Even if the families of those killed students were virtuous, no matter how much those families were looking forward to the return of their children, those things weren't something that could erase the fact that they had bared their fang toward Hajime and Hajime's important people. For the feeling of a parent wouldn't, something like what their child did and Hajime's circumstance were irrelevant. But similar like that, for Hajime, something like the feeling of his enemy's parent was also something that had nothing to do with him.

——I don't have regret in what I did. I don't even think that what I did was wrong. Therefore, I won't even apologize. You can think of me however you like, but if you turn your hand at my relatives because of this case then you better prepare yourself.

Those were the words that Hajime spoke to those families. For Hajime who was skilled in subtle deception and speech, to the degree that he was said to possess talent as an agitator, those were really straight words that could even be said tactless. To put it bluntly, those words could only be think of something rubbed the nerves of the other party the wrong way.

But, Aiko who was beside him was able to understand that for Hajime those words were his greatest sincerity, those were his resolve. He didn't deceive the other party, and he was resolved that if the hatred that he caused would try to lay their wicked hand on his relatives, then he would face it anywhere anytime and eliminate them.

As the result, Hiyama's family acted rashly trying to get revenge from Hajime and others. Hajime personally broke their heart. The other families who knew of that state of Hiyama family then protected their silence. Seeing from the side, it was really a result that left bad aftertaste in mouth, but Hajime didn't care of it at all.

Now then, including those commotions too, there were also things like the

raging journalism battle and whatever that were perpetrated regarding the returnee but……one day, all of those suddenly died down like a drawing back sea wave. And it didn't stop there, all of the news were quietly dying down so unnaturally until it was like nothing had happened at all.

「About that, there is no doubt that was something Nagumo-kun and others did isn't it?」

「For sure. Problems like the family register of Yue-san and others, or the recognition of the surrounding, those kinds of problem were also all easily cleared. It wasn't something strange at all if they actually did something somehow regarding the awareness of the society while they were at it yeah. Not to mention how Ai-chan-sensei was made to bear the full brunt of the critic because she was the only adult involved. Ain't no way that Nagumo was gonna just left that going on.」

Actually what happened was exactly like that.「When magic is mixed with information society……something like the world become simple huh」, if it was asked who was the one that was saying such extremely terrifying thing……it should be rather left unsaid.

「Well, there were a lot of troubles, but if there is a small mercy from all that, is that no one got rejected by their family I think. My Otou-san and Okaa-san, also Taeko-san(the caretaker) too, right after I finished giving them explanation, their face turned grim and they tried to bring me to hospital, but after I actually showed them magic and explained several times they somehow could accept it.」

「Yeah, me too. But, at my case, I showed them my Mode Werewolf so……they became really panicked at that time. My mother fainted, while my old man took out a bat that he swung around wildly, big sis wet himself, and Karashio(pet dog) howled like crazy, and my neighbor old man Fujii said things like『It's waaar~』while shooting out fire extinguisher……」

「I don't know about that old man you mentioned last, but most of it was Ryutaro-kun's own fault wasn't it? Rather, your father who tried to face his son that suddenly transformed into werewolf using a bat, I really respected him from the heart now.」

Receiving Suzu's exasperated gaze that came from the bottom of her heart,

Ryutaro said「That was accident, accident」while averting his gaze in embarrassment. By the way, Ryutaro who thought that he wouldn't be able to calm the situation by himself at that time made his family and the neighbor old man Fujii to faint for the time being, and then by going all out with the instant movement of werewolf, he intruded into the house of Kouki who were similarly in the middle of explaining the circumstance.

When a brutal werewolf of fantasy world suddenly leaped into their house, Kouki's father fainted, while the mother took out kitchen knife and went into rampage, and Kouki's little sister peed herself. Kouki who immediately guessed the true identity of the werewolf and that his objective was to ask for help, at that time he suppressed his mother for the time being and made his little sister to sleep.

And then he punched Ryutaro, after that even while sighing deeply, thinking that it was just the right timing with all the chaos that had happened, he held a double family meeting along with Ryutaro's family that had been wakened up and somehow obtained the understanding from both families.

By the way, at Shizuku's home there was also an emergency call that came from Shirasaki family. At that time the first voice that came from Kaori's parent that was filled with confusion was『Shizuku-chan! As I thought, you have came home too then, I'm glad! By the way, my daughter is an angel now, do you know anything about it!?』, like that. It seemed that Kaori showed her parents her angel mode but……listening to it normally, that call could only be heard as a doting parent suddenly calling at the middle of night for boasting about his daughter.

At the other side of the phone, the voice of Kaori that said「Geez-, Otou-san! Don't make embarrassing call like that!」could be heard, then next came the voice「But, but Kaoriii. Tha, that angel look……that's just too lovely!」, such hectic conversation of parent and child could be heard noisily……Shizuku silently put down the phone. While Inside her heart,「I'm also busy explaining over here, idiooot!」she was cursing.

Like that, the classmates who accomplished returning home each went through different twist and turn to persuade their family, however in the end they were able to make their family to believe the story about another world,

and together with their family they dealt with the mass media as planned.

Although, it wasn't like everything went as planned, or everything was still the same like before……

「Eh? Suzu-chan? Also Sakagami? What are you two doing in this kind of place?」

「Oh, it's true. Suzu-chan, long time no see~! Wait, don't tell me, this is a date!?」

「Eh? Lies!? With Sakagami!? Suzu-chan, are you being threatened!?」

Suddenly noisy voices called at Ryutaro and Suzu who were talking on a park bench. When they looked, there were their former classmates standing there. They were three girls who at that day when they were summoned went to a different place at the lunch break, because of that they didn't get dragged into the summoning. They were friends of Suzu who were relatively close to her.

The three of them saw Suzu spending time with only Ryutaro. It stirred up a bit of curiosity about the relationship of the two and great wariness toward Ryutaro inside their mind, but when Suzu replied that they had plan to join up with everyone else after this and currently they were killing time until the planned time, the expression of the three girls loosened in disappointment and relieve.

They talked noncommittally a bit about their recent condition, and then after exchanging the speech of let's contact each other again next time~, they parted way.

「As usual, your communication prowess is high eh.」

「I guess.」

Ryutaro's words that were mixed with praise was accepted by Suzu with a shrug, not looking like she was being humble or joking. As expected, it seemed that the decisive battle against Eri that Suzu went through caused a great change, or perhaps a great growth in Suzu's mind.

Group disappearance——that fact also gave a not a little, no, rather it gave a big impact to the other students of the same school. The students' attitude and atmosphere toward the returnee group were as though they were tumor that

must not be touched and a group that they didn't really want to have anything to do with, but in reverse they were also lacking in delicacy with their curiosity.

Also, when the returnees were attending to the school once more, there were a lot of families that contacted the school and voiced their anxiety about them.

During that one year of disappearance, there was no contact at all from the disappearing group, other people didn't understand where they were and what they were doing or what were done to them. The returnees themselves only gave story that didn't sound realistic at all. Furthermore, there were also students who didn't come back with them……sure enough, the families were concerned whether their child would be okay going to the same school together with such mysterious group.

As the result, regardless of the return of the directly related people, the truth of the case was still not clear, there were also the matter of the students whose whereabouts were still unknown, so finally the school administration moved.

In order to reduce situations where Hajime and others got exposed to the inquisitive eyes of society were reduced, an exclusive curriculum was prepared in order for the returnees to recover their falling behind in their studies, at the same time psychologist were stationed inside the school for supporting the smooth school life of the returnees……with those official stance, a special class that was separated from other students in order to avoid troublesome problem was prepared.

Because of that, currently the returnees weren't studying in their original classroom, now they were put in a fixed class until their graduation that was located at the top floor of the school, furthermore it was at the corner in an unused room.

Actually a talk of changing the school of the returnees itself was strongly raised but……with the opinion of someone that said「It's troublesome to change school」along with profoundly mysterious phenomenon, the creation of this special class was pushed through. The class was formed unnoticed, very naturally. To the degree that it was unnatural……

Anyway, like that a physical sense of distance between the returnees and other students was created, naturally a sense of distance was also spreading between

the returnees and the students of different class who they were friends with before the summoning, however there were also a lot among them who managed to remade their friendly relationship but……even amidst those people, Suzu was the one who were the most able in building back a relationship with the friends she already had before the summoning into a relationship that was the same like before, no, rather that relationship became even more intimate than before.

That relationship was to the degree that when Suzu met those friends accidentally in a holiday like this, those friends would call to her proactively. It was to the degree that they even glared at Ryutaro with gleaming eyes that were unbecoming for girl, as though to say 'if you do something strange to Suzu, don't expect it to end well for you'.

「Haah, good grief, someone like you really is…… If Nagumo is excluded, surely the one who changed the most by going to another world is Suzu. It's an honor to be seen as a boyfriend even though it was only for a moment yeah.」

「Fu-fu-fu. Isn't that right, isn't that right. For Ryutaro-kun to be suspected of having relationship with a beautiful woman like this, you happy man you~」

「……」

「……Oi, try to say the reason why you averted your eyes when I said the words beautiful woman. If you have an objection to my words then how about saying it loudly. Hmm?」

Taniguchi Suzu. Looking from her braided hair that stretched long and the atmosphere she was clad in, she was a girl that looked really adult. However the sad thing was……that her height didn't stretch up for even a millimeter. And then, her breast was also……. No matter how one looked at her, it was hard to call her as beautiful woman. However, surely she was a beautiful girl. Perhaps, undoubtedly.

Seeing Suzu who was indignant at his attitude, Ryutaro lifted up both his hands and showed a pose of surrendering. And then, seeing Suzu who expressed her displeasure with a huff, Ryutaro was thinking of what to do, what should he do in hesitation, where in the end he showed an embarrassed gesture and averted his gaze quickly while opening his mouth.

「No, well, that's……you are, charming enough y'know? No, really, I'm serious.」

「Thank you very much, for the faked follow up. Hmph, I'm not a super beauty like Yue-san and others anyway.」

Suzu went「keh」with her lips pouted looking somewhat timid in inferiority complex. But, Ryutaro's words after that which were said with shockingly serious voice to her, caused her to leak out a dumbfounded voice unintentionally.

「……That ain't mere follow up. Suzu is a good woman, who won't lose to anyone.」

「He?」

When Suzu reflexively turned her gaze at Ryutaro, Ryutaro who was supposedly looking away until just now was staring straight at Suzu. The small sound of her heart jumping inside her chest resounded. Suzu understood how her neck, and her face was turning feverish.

This time, it was Suzu who was looking aside. For some reason she couldn't let out any word. She could only barely let out sound「H, hm~m」that sounded ambiguous even for herself.

A strangely stained atmosphere that Suzu had never really experienced before was flowing, she couldn't say anything. Both of them were wordless, only the sound of leaves rustling from the wind that were entering their ear excessively clearly.

Stealing a glance, Suzu tried to peep at Ryutaro's state, there he was looking really nervous, and yet his face was really serious and seemed to be troubled of something. That also caused Suzu's nervous meter to climb up without stopping.

Before long, with a calm voice as though he had resolved himself, Ryutaro opened his mouth.

「About the matter after we graduated high school……」

「He!? Ah, um……」

「I, am thinking to go to Tortus again.」

「That's……you mean not in the capacity of going there to play together with Nagumo-kun and others?」

「Yeah. I'm thinking, of living at the world there.」

「……」

Suzu felt like she understood the reason of Ryutaro deciding that. In this one year, they had spend much time together, during that time they talked about various things that made her think whether he would do something like that.

「I want to help Kouki there, I also want to become help for guys in need. I have the power for that, ain't no way after this late I can become salary man or something with all this.」

「Didn't you, also think about being police officer before this?」

「Yeah. But see, as I thought, my nature suit the world over there more.」

「I see.」

It appeared that Ryutaro had genuinely decided his future path. Suzu felt like she was going to get left behind somehow, that her feeling turned a bit lonely.

Toward such Suzu, Ryutaro suddenly stood up, he then moved in front of Suzu and got down on his one knee. With this stance now the large built Ryutaro was looking up at her. This was as though……

Suzu's body temperature was rising. Her heart jumped from Ryutaro's serious expression.

「Ryu, Ryutaro-kun……」

'What are you doing?' Suzu was about to voiced that but, Ryutaro conferred all his feeling with his words faster than Suzu.

「Suzu. Won't you, come together with me?」

「Tha, that is, are you asking me to form a party with you sometimes——」

「That ain't it. You got what I meant right? What I am saying is, for "the whole life".」

「ts……」

Suzu gulped. That was exactly, a love confession. For the first time in her life, a confession with seriousness to the highest degree, was right now said to her. The winding of great emotion that was welling up inside her made her voice got

caught in her throat that she couldn't say anything. Ryutaro spoke his words further to such Suzu.

「I love Suzu. Rather than a future in this world, pick a future that is together with me. It won't be a calm future but, I will treasure you with all my power. Let's go, together. Forever.」

Inside Suzu's heart, something like「That's too straight!」, or「Even though you had come to a clean break, but even temporarily you once fell in love with Yue-san, do you have preference with small girl!? You lolicon!」, or「While saying you love me, you are asking me to fight together in another world, just what are you saying you muscle brain!」, those abusive languages were lining up inside Suzu's stormy heart but……

When she noticed, a reply of——

「……Mm. That's fine.」

Like that that sentence came out naturally. The words came out so smoothly that it surprised even herself. Like that, she became aware.

「Even myself is surprised, but I too, seem to really like Ryutaro-kun.」

Suzu's face was already looked like a ripe apple. The time they ran around at another world, this one year since they came home, the things that she had piled up between her and Ryutaro seemed to have grown bigger that what Suzu was aware of.

Like that, Ryutaro who received a confession acceptance for the first time in his life, and obtained the word "like" form a girl was……

——UosSHAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA—

He howled grandly like that. The children who played in some distance jumped from shock and the looked at Ryutaro while shaking.

「Wai-, you are noisy, Ryutaro-kun! The small kids are making face like a villager that is encountering an ogre there!」

「A-ha-ha-ha, then how about I use Mode Ogre then! If it's now then I'll give special service yeah!」

「Don't do that! A Monster Appeared in Park at Broad Daylight! The front page

of evening paper today will be like that! Or rather, how happy you are? Your tension is too high!」

「Obviously I'm happy! It's about my first girlfriend in life! Furthermore, it's Suzu! This is the best!」

「-, uu, idiottt~~」

After that, a muscle brain's greatest happiness cheer was booming in the small public park for a while, together with the remonstrating voice of Suzu who even then couldn't hide the happiness inside herself.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Even though I can imagine a ton of realistic problems waiting after returning home from another world, I cannot think of any stylish solution, and relied on magic in the end. Please forgive this poor brain of Shirakome.

However……something like transmission of brainwashing magic through the internet using age of god magic, or transmission of subliminal effect using television……I think those are just plainly terrifying.

Perhaps Shirakome is unable to leave the PC today too is because……

The next update is planned at 6 P.M Saturday next week too.

Arifureta Chapter 185

Arifureta After – The Gathering of the Returnees

Inside the restaurant that was illuminated by warm orange light, although the atmosphere wasn't that of a high class restaurant, it was filled by a chic and calming atmosphere.

That famous restaurant that would be almost fully occupied in holiday when the evening came had not even a single guest today, it was completely empty.

「Yuuka, it will be time soon right? Nana-chan and Taeko-chan too, it's fine to stop already.」

「Is that so? Then let's stop around here.」

One of the returnee, Sonobe Yuuka said that and took off her apron. Following her, Miyasaki Nana and Sugawara Taeko also took a breath 'sigh' while taking off their apron.

The one who spoke to Yuuka was the owner of this restaurant, at the same time he was also the father of Yuuka, Sonobe Hiroshi. The mother Sonobe Yuuri was also standing at his side. Yes, this restaurant was the western style restaurant that Sonobe family was managing.

And then, Hiroshi was making her daughter and her two friends that were helping out to stop in this period of time of five o'clock at evening that originally would be busy for the restaurant, was because this restaurant would be the gathering place for the one year anniversary of Hajime and others' return. Yuuka and her two friends were only helping until the appointed time.

There was around fifteen more minutes until the arranged time. 'Somebody

should be coming soon', it was at that time when Yuuka was beginning to think that, that the door of the restaurant opened with a good timing.

「Yo. By any chance, I'm the first one here?」

The one who was saying that while entering inside was Tamai Atsushi. Behind him Aikawa Noboru and Nimura Akiro were also entering while giving similar greeting.

「That's right. For you three to arrive fifteen minutes early, how admirable.」

「Haha, my stomach is empty here from playing since the afternoon. Can you give me something like snack or anything for the time being?」

「Look here, the party will start soon enough, so please be patient.」

It appeared that Atsushi and others were starving. It seemed they were playing through the afternoon until this time. Hearing what Yuuka said, they grumbled「Eee~」while going to sit at the reserved seat.

Thereupon,

「Excuse me……I think it's me who came the first here though.」

「Uoo!? What the!?」

「E, Endo! So you are here!?」

「Eh, lies. Since when you are here!?」

「Even though I didn't hear the bell clinking!」

In fact, it seemed the one who arrived first was the man with shadow so thin even apostle of god overlooked him——Endo Kousuke. Kousuke was responding「I normally came in, gave a normal greeting, and normally took a seat, that's all you know?」with a faraway look, hearing that Yuuka and others spoke words of apology and consolation with awkward look.

Atsushi and others took their seat while speaking to Kousuke.

「Nevertheless you are really early huh. You aren't with Nagayama and others today?」

「Recently I am not really together with them after all. It seem that Juugo and Kentaro are going out playing with Tsuji-san's group but……as for me, I was

studying.」

Yuuka nodded in understanding after hearing Kousuke's answer.

「Now that you mentioned it, Endo-kun, you are aiming to become a doctor isn't it? And then when you graduated you are going to migrate to the other side aren't you?」

「The beastmen like Rana-san and others of Hauria clan cannot use healing magic, so it is for their sake you are learning modern medical technique aren't you? Even though it's not actually a long distance relationship, but you are really going that far huh.」

Exactly as Nana said, Kousuke who publicly got a rabbit ear onee-san lover in Tortus was studying hard aiming for a medical university, in order to learn the modern medical technique——that was to say, a healing technique that didn't use magic medicine or healing magic, so that he could become strength for Hauria clan even for a bit in the future. Other than that, he was also learning various things extensively to polish his own assassination skill, like army hand-to-hand fighting technique or survival skill, and then also other knowledge like agriculture technique from negotiating technique, which made him greatly busy. He was doing all of that, for the sake of his beloved lover.

Although, during this one year it felt like his character as a man with thin shadow was crumbling, he got dragged into this and that behind the scene of the world, chased after by troublesome people (several people among them were girls)……in a sense, he was the one who got totally immersed at the world behind the scene more than anyone of the returnee group, which made the person himself to be at his wits end.

Looking at Kousuke who was having a faraway look, with a lukewarm gaze Yuuka and others sent a yell to their classmate who was doing his best day and night. While calling the name that was the proof of Kousuke being welcomed into Hauria clan as a new family.

「「「「「Kousuke E Abyssgate-kun, do your best.」」」」」

「Stop it! I told you guys already to not use that name when there is no Hauria clan beside me right!?」

The great shame caused Kousuke to suddenly cover his face with both hands and he fell prostrated on the table. It was name that was given by a beautiful onee-san, so it was a wonder just where was the need of feeling shame from that. Even though he was the great man who was introducing himself with that name while earning the most kill point at the legendary great war with the apostles as the opponent.

「Oi oi, what's the matter, Abyssgate-san. Is your body feeling unwell, Abyssgate-san.」

「Doesn't Abyssgate sounds cool, Abyssgate. Didn't the people of Hauria clan welcomed you greatly, Abyssgate.」

Atsushi and Yuuka were grinning widely while poking at Kousuke from both sides. Kousuke was holding his head while pleading「Stooop, stop it already!」, but

「Kousuke E Abyssgate, has arrived!」

「Fuh, so you cannot see me? Obviously. I who am lurking in darkness cannot be caught by anyone……」

「The name of Shippuu Kagetsume, engrave it in that body!」(TN: Gale Shadow Claw)

When Noboru said that in high spirits, Nana continued after him in the same spirit, then next even Akito took a pose while reproducing how Kousuke once was. The health point of Kousuke's heart was plunging into red zone. Taeko was earnestly shaking *puru puru* at the shoulders while averting his gaze.

But, at that timing, a voice that sounded as though it was shaking from Kousuke's disastrous condition, filled with sympathy from the bottom of the speaker's heart, such voice was resounding.

「You guys……doing something like that. There is a limit even in being nasty. Just what are you doing to Endo huh.」

「Na, Nagumooo! My kindred spirit! So you finally came!」

Looking at the direction of the voice, having entering the restaurant unnoticed, the group of Hajime had approached until right beside Kousuke and

others. Kousuke energetically dashed as Hajime while half-crying. And then, he hid behind Hajime while raising voice of counterattack at Atsushi and others.

「You lot-, saying anything you like wretchedly like that! Just look, at this real harem man! And then recall it, the Nagumo of before! Just how do you thing Hauria clan is calling this guy! Don't you know that it overshadowed someone like!? No, I am not speaking about my naturally thin shadow here you know? Nagumo's chuunib――」

bechikon- A crack resounded, then Endo went through triple midair spin. Like that he crumbled down from both legs.

「……Just now, why did you hit me?」

「……Sorry. I wanted to do that for some reason.」

When Endo calmly asked with teary eyes, Hajime answered awkwardly while averting his eyes. Both of them had mutually received nickname from Hauria with gratitude(?), being equally a victim when those nicknames were spread grandly throughout the world, together with their activity at the world behind the scene in this one year, the two of them were actually in quite a good relationship. Feeling sympathy at each other's pain of heart and also their close affinity from both having lover of a female of Hauria clan were also the reason of that good relationship.

「Yuuka-san, thank you for lending your restaurant for today. Is there something that I can help with, like cooking or something?」

「It's fine Shia-san. Most of them is finished already with me and Nana and Tae, Otou-san and Okaa-san are also in high spirit.」

Yuuka shook her head at Shia's offer with a smile. And exactly as Yuuka said, Hiroshi who caught sight of Hajime's figure rested his hand and approached Hajime.

「Yaa, Hajime-kun. Welcome to my restaurant. I was thinking of inviting you all someday to here you know.」

「Much obliged for today. Letting us to reserve the whole restaurant……that saved us some trouble. Even if we have the gathering at other place, if there is other people then we are going to become a target of curiosity.」

「No no, something like this is nothing much. ……You are the person who had brought back our daughter back home. Just something like this won't even be enough for thanks. The most that I can do is only to let you all enjoy our family's prided cooking to your fill, but I have put all my skill into this just so you know. Have fun to your heart's content.」

「Yes, I had also heard from Endo and Tamai how delicious the food here, so I'll look forward to it.」

Seeing Hajime who was exchanging words really politely with Yuuka's father, Atsushi and others whispered at each other things like「As I thought, hearing Nagumo using polite language really feel wrong ain't it」, or「Demon king-sama has also mellowed out huh」, or「Well, as expected, suddenly pulling out a gun in Japan is just impossible. Naturally he is going to mellow out like that」, or「No no, Sugawara. We still don't know that. If it's Nagumo, something like hiding the evidence is as easy as turning his palm you know? The possibility that he has already killed several people is……」.

The "Treasure Warehouse" that was fixed on Hajime's left ring finger faintly shined. Sensing that Hajime was feeling like taking out something from the infinite armory, Atsushi and others instantly sat back on their chair and drank their drink with an atmosphere that was shamelessly relaxed. It seemed that they had been trained in the way of dealing with Hajime.

「Nevertheless, the wives of Hajime-kun are really all beautiful isn't it.」

From behind Hiroshi, Yuuri approached while wiping her hand on her apron, she was saying such thing and continued with a greeting「Welcome for today. Feel free to relax here」. Then Yue and others each gave her the greeting while expressing their thanks for lending the restaurant.

Yuuri floated a friendly smile at Yue and others, and then she nodded as though she had comprehended something before turning back her gaze at Hajime, and said a sentence,

「So, I wonder, when will Hajime-kun take Yuuka as your wife too?」

「Wai-, Okaa-san!? What are you saying!?」

The words of her mother that were suddenly let out caused Yuuka to spout out

her drink *bufu-* while she raised her voice. Looking at that direction, Atsushi and co, Kaori, and also Shizuku were looking taken aback and they turned their gaze at Yuuri, and then their awareness turned toward Yuuka.

On the other hand, Yuuri who suddenly dropped that bomb was chuckling while saying thing like「Is that no good I wonder? Okaa-san is just thinking, that if it's Hajime-kun then there won't be any problem at all though~」.

The mother of Yuuka looked relatively gentle and calm, but it seemed that she was a type of person who would drop a bomb unconsciously. Yuuka ignored her mother that was like that and then she turned to Hajime in order to make excuse……but her expression grandly cramped after seeing the widely smiling face of Kaori who was right before her eyes.

「E, err, Kaori-chan? You see, I——」

「It's fine, it's fine you know, Yuuka-chan. I pro~perly understand after all. Anyway, how about going to the seat at the back for the time being? Because if you want to be at Hajime-kun's side, then there will be various things that I want you to know beforehand, so I'm going to teach you slowly.」

「No no no no, I'll hold back from that! It's not like I really need to know that!」

「Muu, by that, are you saying that something like the matter of Hajime-kun is trivial I wonder? I wonder?」

「Troublesome-. I have thought this since before, but when it is related to Nagumo-kun, Kaori-chan is troublesome-」

「I won't get tricked even with you saying that! Now, Yuuka-chan, let's talk?」

Saying that, Kaori dragged the resisting Yuuka with her hands gripping Yuuka's shoulders and she took her to the seat at the back. While being dragged, Yuuka sent a gaze that was asking for help at Atsushi and others, but with splendid synchronization everyone averted their eyes. Yuuka was in despair!

「Haa, Hajime. I'm worried about Yuuka, that's why I too will be at the seat in the back for a while.」

「Yeah, I'll leave Kaori to you. Help Sonobe before her soul is slipping out from her mouth.」

「Roger.」

Even after a year passed since their return, Shizuku's worrying habit didn't change. Although, currently she had the lover who would give her the reward after her worrying, so it seemed that it wasn't a hardship for her at all. (TN: In the raw, the worrying habit implied that Shizuku was worrying for others, not herself, and she would go to great length to help the other party from their trouble even without them asking her. Anyone know a good word to express someone like this?)

Like that, while complicated noisiness could be heard from the back, the classmates of the returnee group were arriving one after another.

Nagayama Juugo and Nomura Kentarou, Tsuji Ayako, Yoshino Mao. Kentarou and Rinzu were holding hand. Both of them went out with each other right after their return to earth. After that, with Nakano Shinji and Saitou Yoshiki as first on the list, almost all of the returnee students had gathered.

The ones who still hadn't arrived in the invitation today were Ryutaro and Suzu, and Aiko. Everyone knew about Kouki being in Tortus, so there was no need to wait for him. Also, Aiko would be late because of her work and she had let them knew beforehand, so in actuality there were only Ryutaro and Suzu left.

「It's already past the agreed time……」

Hajime looked at the clock and whispered that. The clock had certainly turned to afternoon five o'clock. On the table, there wasn't only the standard western food, there were also small snacks like fried potato, karaage, mini pizza, and non-alcoholic drinks flooding the table.

Kaori was looking worried wondering whether something happened and took out her smartphone. She was thinking of trying to contact them. But, there was no need for Kaori to contact them.

「Whoops, my bad! We are late!」

「Sorry! Ryu-kun got high tensioned like idiot, it took time until he calmed down!」

Like that, Suzu and Ryutaro rushed in while apologizing. Hajime and others were about to say「Don't mind it」, but they reflexively swallowed back their

words. And then, their gaze focused at one place.

……Their fingers were entangled with each other's, that was to say, the hands of the two were holding each other's hand in a lover holding.

The two noticed everyone's gaze. Suzu raised her voice「ah」and tried to separate their hand in panic. However, due to it being a lover holding with their fingers interlocked, Ryutaro's large hand was completely wrapping Suzu's small hand, so if Ryutaro's hand didn't let go then their hand wouldn't separate that easily.

「Come to think of it, Suzu-chi, just now, didn't you called Sakagami with "Ryu-kun"?」

「……Seriously? No, or maybe I should say, finally. If it's Sakagami and Taniguchi then…」

Nana sharply didn't miss what Suzu said, how the way Suzu called Ryutaro changed (After receiving the confession, Suzu called Ryutaro as Ryu-kun because she wanted to show her affection even more compared to before the confession). Hearing what Nana mentioned, Atsushi leaked out his frustration of having beaten to the punch, but then he showed an expression that was half purely shocked and half understanding.

「Hee, you two, since when your relationship became like that?」

Hajime's mouth burst open in amusement while he was asking the two of them. Thereupon, Ryutaro, looking at the situation where it seemed that his relationship with Suzu was immediately got exposed by the classmates, he was growing embarrassed from that, but even so,

「An hour before!」

Saying that, he made a thumb up along with a lively laugh while informing the classmates. Immediately, Suzu's face became red, while the classmates raised admiring voice of「Oo~~!!」. Right after that, the congratulating voice of「Congratulation!」from the girls and「Sakagamiii, for a muscle brain like you to get a girlfriend……die!」「Just explode!」「I also want a lover! Someone, go out with me!」the envious voices from the boys were sent to Ryutaro and Suzu.

By the way, the voice that was soliciting for lover was smoothly ignored. Shinji

was secretly crying after that.

The relationship of Suzu and Ryutaro that changed anew was grandly celebrated by the classmates with Shizuku and Kaori as the first in the list. Like that, after everyone had arrived, Hajime stood up and took a glass into his hand. The classmates, Yue and others too, they all took a glass into their hand.

「Now then, we have experienced something idiotic like having a trip at another world, but now, we are able to celebrate a year of our return at the land of our birthplace like this. That one year we spent at another world, and this one year after we returned home, those days were absurdly noisy and full of trouble……but, those days weren't bad. I think so from the bottom of my heart.」

Hajime's gentle gaze and expression that looked deep, calmly meshed into the feeling of all the classmates, including Yue and others, all of them then simultaneously nodded deeply.

There were also people who couldn't come home. But, even with that fact included, everyone certainly felt, that "it wasn't bad".

「In the future from here on, it is unclear what kind of path any of us will walk, but, if it is us who know about the meaning of "fighting", then there won't be any problem or anything. Isn't that right?」

Everyone returned back a strong nod. To that, Hajime also nodded deeply.

「That's why, these words are going to be enough for our toast. ……To the two years that we had overcome, and to the hardships from here on! Cheers-!」

「「「「「Chee~~~~rs-!!!」」」」」

Like that the party started.

They talked to each other about their memory in the other world Tortus, they expressed their feeling of this one year since their return home, they jeered loudly at the couples of old and new, they bullied Kousuke, they made uproar without any meaning, they ate and drank a lot, they lost sight of Kousuke, they got really noisy.

In the middle, Aiko who finished her work joined them and unfolded a lovey dovey flirting with Hajime quietly, there Yue nonchalantly cut in with her adult

mode, then Shia and others also crowded Hajime undauntedly and formed their usual pink space, seeing that the classmates went into uproar once again, like that, they felt for real of the joy of living right now from their heart, and displayed great excitement in this first year return anniversary.

Before long, at the time when the party was at full swing, without any particular feeling there were voices that began to say their wish of going to Tortus. Of course, the meaning of that wish wasn't for living at the other side, those were only frivolous words of wanting to meet with their friends and acquaintances at Tortus.

While they were talking of their memories at each other, they were growing to want to meet Liliana and the maids at the palace, the war comrades they fought together with at the decisive battle, and the people they were cooperating with at the time of restoration.

Hajime grinned widely to those classmates,

「Then, how about we go to meet them a bit right now?」

Like that, that sentence was actually also sounded lighthearted.

To open a gate that crossed over the world, a vast amount of magic power was needed. When they returned to earth from Tortus, they had to do all kind of processes to capture the magic factor of the mother nature into a pseudo god crystal, then poured the magic power of the cheat group in full into it, and even so it took a month until the gate could be opened.

In the earth where there was almost no magic factor, to open a gate that crossed over the world, it should take at least five months at the fastest even with Hajime and others stocking all the magic power in their body.

Five months after they first returned to earth, they opened the gate once, and then after further five months they opened the gate again. And so, thinking normally it should take three more months before the gate could be opened.

「Oi, Nagumo. We ain't going to get surprised by what you are doing after this late, we ain't gonna doubting you. That's why just spit it up right away. What are you gonna do?」

Ryutaro asked with an expression that was a mix of exasperation and

admiration. The classmates were also focusing at Hajime, in the middle of that Hajime suddenly lifted his right hand and activated “Lightning Clad”, causing crimson sparks to crackle through him.

「This lightning clad is a characteristic magic that convert magic power into lightning strike. Magic power can be converted into electricity……then, don’t you think that the reverse is also possible?」

「Please wait a second, Hajime-kun. I have a really bad premonition of this.」

Aiko’s cheeks convulsed from Hajime’s words. And then, with a small volume she said something like「A month ago, there is a city that blacked out completely. The electricity was immediately restored but……if I remember correctly, it seemed that there was a nuclear power plant nearby that city」, hearing that the classmates also realized what Hajime had done and their cheeks convulsed greatly.

「Exactly as you imagined. I converted the electricity of a nuclear power plant into magic power, just for a bit. It took a bit of labor to create the exclusive artifact for establishing this conversion method, but finally I succeeded in realizing it.」

「”Success”, that’s not it! Aa, what had you done when I took off my eyes of you for just a bit……」

Looking at the triumphant look of Hajime who sto——received the electricity of a nuclear power plant, Aiko held her head as though enduring a headache, while the other people were getting a faraway look.

By the way, the city getting blackout was also something unexpected for Hajime, so he had fixed it that right now he was able to do magic power conversion without affecting the power supply of the city.

Giving a glance at them who were being absentminded, Hajime took out “Crystal Key” and “Compass” from “Treasure Warehouse II”, he then stabbed the key without any hesitation whatsoever into an empty air and easily opened a gate to another world.

「What, you guys aren’t going?」

Even though he was guilty of something preposterous, but as expected Hajime

was acting like there was nothing wrong. The classmates thinking “ah, screw it” slipped through the gate while shouting.

The destination was a reception hall that was located at a corner of the new palace of Hairihi Kingdom.

Liliana and some other people were carrying artifacts that would inform them of Hajime and others opening a gate, so surely their arrival had been noticed.

As expected, the footstep sound of several people immediately became audible.

And then, at the other side of the door that was opened loudly, there was the figure of Liliana breathing hard. The moment Liliana caught sight of Hajime, *daa*———— she dashed.

Like that, everyone was thinking that she would embrace Hajime with a deeply moved expression just like usual but……

There, an unexpected sentence flew out from Liliana’s mouth.

「Big trouble-! It’s a really big trouble! ——Kouki-san, he seemed to be summoned to another world somewhere!」

「Ha?」

The classmates also went「Ha?」as though empathizing with Hajime’s idiotic sounding voice. That was only natural. Even with Liliana speaking about summoning, but this was the world that summoned Kouki. It couldn’t be helped even if they tilted their head wondering what Liliana was speaking about.

To them who were like that,

「It’s true! Suddenly there was a voice that came from the sky saying『I found you, hero-sama. I beg you, please save my beloved world』, then a magic circle that I had never seen before spread below Kouki-san——then he vanished! It happened about a week ago!」

Hearing that the situation finally penetrated the classmates’ head.

In other words, it seemed that in this world where Kouki was summoned as hero, Kouki was further summoned as hero into another world somewhere……

「WHAT THE HEEEEEEEEELLLLLLLL-」

Ryutaro who looked forward to meet Kouki was the very first person that yelled up the tsukkomi that represented the voice of heart of everyone here.

It appeared, that the world was still not intending to leave alone Hajime and others.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Currently the story of Kouki's second summoning hasn't been planned currently.

If I have to say, I'm thinking that 'I want to write the story of Abyssgate-kun running around busily with teary eyes at the underworld sooon'.

From next time the chronological order will be all over the places too, I'm thinking of posting after story and extra story that I want to write little-by-little.

First of all, something like the story of Myuu that had grown to about ten years old.

The next update is planned at 6 P.M Saturday next week too.

Arifureta Chapter 186

Arifureta After – As the Daughter of Demon King Part 1

In the middle of night, in a room inside Nagumo household, *tap tap* the small of sound of keyboard being tapped and the light of display that faintly illuminated the room were spreading.

With a notebook PC being placed beside the pillow, and a posture of lying down with both elbows supporting the upper body, the one who was moving her small legs backward and forward in the air while staying up late was, the princess of Nagumo family——Myuu. It was already five years since she arrived in this world. Currently, the ten years old Myuu was still small statured as usual, but it appeared that the factor of “beautiful” had slightly entered into her “cuteness”.

At the end of sentence that she spoke there was still “~nano” attached, but the person herself was aware of it and wanted to fix that habit, but even with that she had become a person of firm character that was like a big sister as could be seen from how she had been given with an individual room like this.

Although, her mother and the big sisters seemed to still worry about her because of her similarity with her father that often stayed up late and forgot the time completely due to the subculture. (TN: The subculture here might be talking about the otaku culture, maybe.)

『Nn~. So, Na-chan will also participate in that ceremony nano?』

『That’s right. I will sing a hymn as a member of the choir.』

When Myuu wrote a question by operating the keyboard *tap tap*, the chat partner Na-chan (real name, Natalia) replied back like that. This girl seemed to

be a girl of the same age like Myuu, a ten years old that claimed she was living in America, the two of them got to know each other by chance through the heartwarming net game they played, sometimes they even contacted each other like this outside the game. This girl was a friend of Myuu.

By the way, Myuu's language capability was helped by Hajime's handmade artifact that was inserted with "Language Comprehension" (exclusive for Myuu, provided with voice recognition and letter projection), with this Myuu could deal not only to the language of all over the world, but she could even deal with ancient language. Even now she was actually chatting using English.

『Choir huuuh~. That's amazing nano.』

『Is that so? I think in my country here there are a lot of children that enter the choir though.』

『Then, Na-chan's country will be fine even if the apostles attack anytime then nano. If the country people mobilize altogether and hit hard with the sacred song, you will be able to shave off the apostle's status by ninety percent. They will become just a mere wooden doll nano.』

『I'm sorry, Myuu. I don't understand what is Myuu saying here……』

Of course it was natural that she didn't understand.

Now then, according to their talk today, it appeared that at Sunday, Natalia would accompany his parents (who seemed to be fairly high official) to a bit large ceremony where government officials would be gathering. There, it seemed that a chorus of hymn would be done by a choir that was comprised of the ceremony participants' children, so Natalia would also participate in the choir.

However, from Natalia's viewpoint, there would be nothing that she could really do there other than singing the hymn. At the buffet party after the end of ceremony, the children had to wait while their parents were having "adult talk (long time)", Natalia didn't have any friend there that she was particularly close to, there was also her parents' instruction to get along with the children of such-and-such families. It seemed it made her felt constrained and gloomy.

『A~a~, if only Myuu will also attend this party.』

『You can use this chance to become friend with the other children right?』

『I don’t wanna. Even if I get along with them, if the person is actually a child of family that is in opposition against father, it will be awkward……there is also some children among the older one that will come to talk to me because of the instruction of their family you know? I don’t want to become friend with those kind of children.』

『Muu, you sound like a noble.』

『Ahaha, what are you saying. Myuu saying that, it make it sounds like you know some noble. By any chance, is Myuu from Britain?』

『No, Myuu is a sea dweller race..』

『Ahahaha, I always heard you say that, but, what people this sea dweller race is~~』

『We are the woman of sea.』

『Ahahaha~』

Perhaps feeling that the way Myuu talked was amusing, words that expressed laughter were listed on the display screen. Natalia who seemed to calm down after a while, wrote a sentence that seemed pleading at her unique friend who obviously had a different atmosphere and rhythm compared to her normal school friends.

『Hey, Myuu. I wonder, can you talk with me like this during the party?』

It seemed that the ceremony would be at afternoon, so even thinking about the time zone difference Myuu would be able enough to become her talk partner. However, if seeing the figure of a young girl who didn’t properly participate in the party while earnestly playing with her smartphone at the corner, in the end just what would the family and also the surrounding think about Natalia……

However, even if only slightly, Natalia’s atmosphere that was really quiet gloomy was conveyed through her sentence.

Seeing that, inside Myuu, the big sister soul was welling up!

『Muu, can’t be helped then.』

『Eh, is it fine? You said that recently you were scolded because you played

internet too much though……it would be, really late you know?』

『It's fine. There is no problem. If it's for the sake of a friend, then surely I will be allowed. That's why, Na-chan, I won't let you get bored and enjoy the party instead nano!』

『Ye, yes. What's this, I'm happy but, for some reason I have a bad premonition.』

That premonition of Natalia would splendidly come true at the weekend.

At a certain place in America, at that day, a certain ceremony was being held. At that ceremony that Natalia mentioned where a lot of government officials were attending, mass media people were also going in and the situation of the ceremony was even broadcasted at the evening news in Japan.

Naturally, the hymn that was sang by the participating children, including Natalia, was also performed as one of the ceremony's decoration, the figure of the children singing with their all was also broadcasted in the news.

After the ceremony program ended, now it was the time for the standing buffet party. The place of the ceremony was using a floor of a certain high class hotel that was reserved, so the served out cooking was also first class.

The adults were immediately involved in slightly difficult talks of this and that as adult often be, and then Natalia who was left alone just as expected, was now trying to become the flower of the wall & the heaven-sent child of smartphone.

「Eh, I wonder if Myuu is still not online? By any chance, is it just as I thought, that she is stopped by her mother or her big sisters or someone?」

Natalia confirmed that Myuu wasn't logging in at the chat room that the two of them usually used. Looking disappointed, Natalia sighed due to the gloomy time she had to spent until the end of the party.

But, it was at that time,

「Young lady. If you sighed like that, then happiness will run away you know?」

「Eh?」

Nataria was startled and turned her gaze at the direction of the voice that suddenly came to her. There, the one who spoke a line like a certain skirt chaser was unexpectedly a cute girl about the same age with her.

No, it was a beautiful girl to the degree that the word of cute felt a little lacking for her.

Emerald blond hair that looked fluffy and smooth, and clear jade eyes that looked mystical. Faint pink lips, and dreamy rose colored cheeks. That figure which was wearing a dress with gentle green tone, was like a fairy that came out from a fairytale. That faint mischievous smile which had a close resemblance with a Cheshire cat somewhere despite her gentle look also spurred on that imagination.

After a while being in a daze, or possibly being enraptured, Natalia who was staring at that emerald fairy girl saw how that girl was peering into her wonderingly「Nn~?」which caused her to return to her senses with a 'hah'.

「E, err, you are, who?」

「Muu, that's mean. Even though I came here because Na-chan said that you are lonely.」

「E, e? Na-chan? E?」

Although this was a wide world, but the only one who called her with that pet name was only that amusing friend which was living in Japan.

However, yes however. Natalia who was relatively clever for her age and parentage immediately rejected that possibility.

Well, of course she was. What was the chance for a friend in Japan to rush here to America just because she was saying that she was lonely. Furthermore, the two of them had the talk about this at three days ago before the ceremony. Myuu wouldn't be able to make it in time if she didn't depart immediately, thinking normally this was something impossible.

Even if, just for argument's sake, Myuu was really coming here for her sake, just how did she enter into this place? This was a place where several big shot officials were gathering, naturally, anyone other than related people would be checked strictly before entering here. There was no way for people other than

the invitee that had been registered beforehand could enter.

In that case, there could only be one possibility, that Myuu was actually a child of a family that was invited into the ceremony today just like her family, which meant she had been lying to her all this time. But fundamentally, the two of them had only been talking with internet chatting, or using their net game avatar, they didn't know each other's face. Then, as expected this girl in front of her eye was

「That's not it nano. Myuu is Myuu herself, the genuine one that is living in Japan you know?」

「-, y, you, as I thought you are Myuu? But how are……」

Myuu who seemed to guess Natalia's thought talked looking like someone who succeeded in her prank. Myuu then approached Natalia who twitched in surprise and took her hand without hesitation. And then, Myuu brought her lips close to Natalia's ear, and she whispered softly, as though she was blowing her breath on the ear, as though she was exposing a secret.

「Myuu is the daughter of demon king-sama, and also the top disciple of his wives so……」

「……」

「If it's for friend, then something like this is no problem nano.」

Myuu stared from really close at Natalia whose face was growing red for some reason, and then while smiling looking slightly troubled,

「Or else, is it a bother for Myuu to come here?」

Myuu asked that.

Natalia's head was swung left and right in high speed, to the degree that it felt like afterimage could be seen from that movement. Her expression expressed her feeling more eloquently than anything.

Like this, Natalia who was made to toss away the worthless minor details and felt like Myuu was somewhat forcefully having her way with her, became able to spend her time in this boring and gloomy party with her friend.

By the way, Myuu was here in this place because of Hajime who she asked to

send her using the compass and crystal key.

Right now in Japan the time was already night, so beforehand Myuu had explained about the circumstance and her destination to Hajime and others. Papa Hajime couldn't say anything toward his daughter's global acquaintance and the lightness of her movement, but Yue and others were feeling warm and fluffy seeing Myuu that had grown to become completely tough and they sent her here gladly. The one who prepared Myuu's dress was also Yue and others.

Although, if they knew that Myuu was making her friend getting red faced by her action and speech that was like a handsome man from an otome game performing wall sandwich to the female character then……there was no doubt that the Nagumo family emergency meeting would be held right away. (TN: Otome game, a game like your usual visual novel, but here the MC is a girl while the targets to be conquered were handsome men instead of beautiful girls. While wall sandwich is slamming one's hand into the wall in front of somebody (e.g. to stop them from leaving; often viewed as romantic))

「Geez, I was really surprised there!」

「I won't let you get bored——that was what Myuu said, Myuu is keeping Myuu's own words.」

「Aah, this rhythm, you are unmistakably Myuu.」

Natalia dropped her shoulders while intensely accepting the situation after seeing Myuu who was saying such thing with a stiff and crisp expression. She accepted that the beautiful girl in front of her eyes that could be mistaken as a fairy was exactly her friend Myuu.

「I won't ask about the detail, but you really come here huh.」

「Nn. If Natalia is lonely, Myuu will rush to your side even if you are in another world.」

「-, thank you Myuu. ……For some reason, I got the hunch that in the future Myuu will be someone that is really no good you know.」

「Strange……recently Myuu is often got told of something like that. Even

though Myuu is just imitating all the onee-chan and papa.」

「Those onee-chan and papa-san, aren't they also getting called as no good people?」

「Hah!?」

Even while having idiotic talk like that, Natalia's heart was beating livelily inside. Her heart was beating fast because if the existence of Myuu that shouldn't be listed in the invitation list got found out, it would become a really great uproar, but even more than that nervousness, she was feeling really happy that she could unexpectedly meet her friend that she wanted to meet like this.

Furthermore, her friend was cuter than what she imagined, Myuu was humorous, and for some reason Myuu also looked adult-like. Myuu was exactly a friend that made her wanted to boast about her to other people.

Their talk was naturally turning lively, both of them were turning into wallflower, yet they were looking more animated and purely having fun more than anyone there.

But, that enjoyable time was suddenly broken.

Along with a sound *gashan*, one middle aged male knocked over his glass while collapsing down. The surrounding people rushed to that person in panic to check the situation, and they found out that the person appeared to be sleeping. The people got exasperated and explained to the surrounding that this person surely drank too much alcohol, but in the middle of that, suddenly another person at different spot also collapsed similarly like that.

With that as the beginning, the people at the party venue were crumbling down one after another and fainted in different interval.

「Wha, what? What is going……a, u?」

「Natalia?」

Natalia was bewildered, but in the middle of speaking her words suddenly cut off. When Myuu turned her gaze at her, she found the figure of Natalia falling to her knee with her eyelids looking like they would close anytime. She was obviously being assaulted by unnatural sudden sleepiness.

Myuu immediately caught Natalia who looked like she was going to fall, and then she became aware that she was also getting sleepy.

「This is……by any chance the cooking is? Uu, even though this should be a normal party……is this also because Myuu is papa's daughter nano?」

While murmuring something that might damaged Hajime relatively if he heard it, Myuu said「It's fine」to Natalia who looked like she would faint anytime, she then took out a magic medicine from "Treasure Warehouse" and drank it. With that the sleepiness was blown off immediately.

Myuu thought of giving Natalia the medicine too, but because she felt a doubt whether Natalia would be able to get a hold of herself in the event that would occur from here on, in the end Myuu didn't do that.

And then she decided to send a mail to Hajime but noticed that the transmission was being jammed, at that point of time she caught the sound of footsteps of a group approaching.

Myuu groaned「Muu」while looking around. Most people seemed to have consumed the cooking that was laced with sleeping drug and they were all sound asleep or almost falling asleep. No, when Myuu saw that the security and the waiters were also falling asleep, it seemed that another method other than dosing the cooking was also used.

To do something like making all people in a strictly guarded party of politicians to faint without killing or wounding anyone, was impossible with just average planning and organizational capability.

「Can't be helped nano.」

Myuu looked at Natalia with a troubled expression and then she laid down in that spot snuggling close to Natalia. And then, she pretended to sleep while opening her eyes only slightly that no one would notice.

「Wake up, Na-chan. Come one, wake up.」

「Mmm-」

The squishy sensation that was gently touching her cheek, that sensation of

her head getting patted slowly caused Natalia's consciousness to become half awake. At the other side of her faintly opened eyelids, there was the upside down figure of Myuu peering into her face.

「Myuu?」

「Yes, it's Myuu. Good morning, Na-chan.」

「Un, good morning. But, why is Myuu in my room?」

「Na-chan. If you are seriously mistaking this room that is surrounded by concrete and iron door as your own room, then Myuu has to have ***a talk*** with Na-chan's family at once you know?」

「E? ……-!?」

Natalia who finally recovered from her sleepiness rose her body suddenly and ran her gaze at the surrounding. Like that, she confirmed that the place she was in was exactly just as Myuu said, a room of dreary concrete and iron door.

At the same time, she caught sight of children other than her and Myuu. Nearly ten children about the same age were huddling at the corner of the room where they were already awake. Looking at how everyone was wearing party outfit, it seemed that they were children that were also in that party venue. Several of the children were faces that she knew as members of the same choir with her.

Everyone of them was sitting down looking scared. Natalia's gaze then turned back at Myuu who seemed to be giving her lap pillow.

「Myu, Myuu. Just what in the world, how did this……where is here!? What happened to us!? Where is father!?」

Natalia was on the verge of panic. To that, Myuu closed their distance smoothly and embraced Natalia's head closely. And then, Myuu gently clapped Natalia's back several times while saying「It's fine, it's fine nano. Myuu is together with Na-chan here nano.」, this sentence was whispered to Natalia with extraordinarily gentle tone.

Having those done to her, Natalia gradually relaxed 'funya' with her composure returning back.

Judging that Natalia had calmed down, Myuu separated their body and then she also turned her gaze at the other children and opened her mouth.

「First, all of us were made to sleep by the drug that was laced on the cooking and then we got kidnapped nano. After that, we were taken to this place by car after traveling about forty minutes. The ones who are kidnapped are only the children that were in the venue, the adults were left alone in the venue.」

The word 'kidnapped' made the children almost cried, but before that happened Myuu continued her words.

「Not everyone is in this room, but at the very least all the children that are taken away from that venue seem to be inside this building. According to the perpetrators' conversation, it seems that they are making various demands just as expected. All of us are the hostages for that. The perpetrators are a really large organization, all their members are equipped with firearms. It looks like it will be some time before help will come for us nano. Anyway, the current situation is something like that. Is there any question?」

「First, I want to ask just how can Myuu understand that much!」

Myuu's well-reasoned explanation made everyone's face turned into something like「Ah, yes」, but from among them Natalia howled. In response to that, Myuu answered frankly.

「Because Myuu has been awake all along!」

「The sleeping drug!?」

「Detoxified!」

Already Natalia didn't even ask about 'how?' or anything anymore. While her words got caught in her throat, Natalia

「Wh, why, are you this calm?」

She threw that natural question at Myuu. To that,

「Because Myuu has abundance of experience of getting kidnapped nano.」

「Just what kind of life you have!?」

「Getting made to cross a desert, getting locked in an underground prison,

getting washed away in sewer, getting displayed in auction, getting kidnapped by monstrous sister……」

「Stoooop, I don't want, to hear more than thaaat!」

When Myuu explained of this and that of the kidnapping case she experienced while counting with her fingers, for some reason Natalia then hugged her while crying. Surely Natalia was getting the impression that Myuu was an unfortunate girl that had went through a gruesome life.

「Uu, but, then, why is Myuu here? If it's Myuu, then shouldn't you be able to escape?」

「Myu?」

While wiping her eyes roughly with her sleeve, Natalia asked a question that if it was Myuu she should be able to escape. In the middle of the attention of the other children toward the conversation of these two, Myuu was tilting her head as though to say「Just what are you talking about I wonder?」while answering.

「Even though Na-chan is getting taken away, just why would Myuu run away nano?」

「u」

Hearing Myuu's answer that sounded like she was saying, 'even though 1+1=2, why would you answer with 3?', Natalia couldn't say anything anymore. Myuu was just too much of a handsome guy, the young maiden Natalia-chan couldn't say anything! Her face was that of a ripe apple!

In order to avert her mind, Natalia asked what they were going to do from here on.

「For the time being, Myuu will contact papa nano.」

Saying that, Myuu took out her smartphone from under her dress's skirt. The boy hostages were whispering,「Eh, weren't all the smartphones got confiscated……」but……under the skirt of a girl was a grand mystery. Surely that was how it was.

The boys' face delicately blushed at the thighs of Myuu that they caught sight of from the flipped skirt and they averted their gaze (it seemed that their tension

and terror were softened from watching the exchange between Myuu and Natalia), while Myuu was trying to contact Hajime……

「!? Now I've done it, nano……」

Suddenly Myuu hung her head down while on all fours. On Myuu's hand, was a smartphone that displayed a lightless pitch black screen.

Actually, this smartphone was different from the normal smartphone that Myuu took out previously, it was a communication artifact that Hajime created. So that Myuu also could use it, it was a type with magic power storage loaded inside the same like Myuu's other exclusive artifacts, but if it was asked what was its difference with a normal smartphone, then it was at how it was able to communicate with another world.

If one possessed this smartphone, at the very least it would be impossible for the owner to be unable to contact Hajime and others who possessed the same device no matter where they were on earth, so even if the normal smartphone was taken away then there would be no problem, was what Myuu thinking but……

「I forgot, to recharge it nano……」

It would cost much energy if it was used to contact another world. Before this Myuu who was in that age against her better judgment got too engrossed in talking with her friend and she used up too much of the stored magic power, and then he got scolded by papa Hajime. This time too recently she unconsciously used the phone too much, fearing of getting scolded she avoided asking to recharge the phone, which caused the phone to be completely empty currently.

「E, err, Myuu?」

Natalia who somehow guessed the situation after seeing Myuu who kept feeling down on all fours, sent Myuu a faint smile. Myuu who noticed that raised her face all of a sudden, and then she opened her mouth while averting her gaze.

「For human, it's no good to pay attention only to the past nano. Looking for the future is exactly what is right nano. Isn't that correct, Nataliaaa!!」

「Ee!? E, err……」

「This is not a failure nano. This is a discovery that this method is not working nano!」

「Ye, yes?」

「And so, let's give up contacting papa.」

「……」

Myuu cheerfully stored the smarphone inside the skirt (was how it looked like, but it was actually stored inside "Treasure Warehouse"). While Natalia and others were staring at Myuu with an expression that couldn't say anything, Myuu crossed her arms and begin to think while nodding 'yup yup' to herself.

(Eerr, promise number 1 to papa, don't expose your true identity, and don't show the artifact. Promise number 2 to papa, at the time it's necessary, always discuss it first with someone, whether it's papa or one of the onee-chan. Promise number 3, when there is no time to protect promise number 1 and 2, at that time Myuu think that it's necessary……)

「——"Do as you like. As for the clearing up afterwards, I'll do it', papa said nano. Yup, right now is that time nano.」

Myuu who had reconfirmed her important promise with papa, inside her heard she was whispering「Papa is just too cool nano. When Myuu recalled it Myuu got fall in love all over again nano」while deciding her plan from here on precisely.

Anyway, she had told Hajime the time the party would end, so even without her contacting him, no, exactly because she wasn't contacting him that Haijme should get suspicious that he would open a gate to the party venue to pick up Myuu. Combining the time they were being kidnapped and the time she spent at the party, Hajime should notice the abnormality in less than an hour.

When that happened, Hajime possessed the "Compass of Guidance", so he would be able to instantly search for Myuu's whereabout. With that, this kidnapping incident would be resolved.

In the case that for example the situation changed before Hajime noticed, Myuu would use all the power she was gifted with and settled the problem without holding back. She planned to fight for the sake of her life and her friend's life, while entrusting the information concealment after that to her papa

who was the most reliable person in the world.

And then, in the case she was fighting she would recover her smartphone that should be somewhere in this building, and contacted Hajime. With that, all the problem would be resolved.

With that plan that she had decided, Myuu fired herself up with「Yosh-, nano!」while her speaking habit that she was usually being careful so that it wouldn't come out was going out in full throttle. Natalia and the other children who were staring fixedly at such Myuu, they saw Myuu turned around at them, and they spontaneously gulped at Myuu's wide smile toward them.

「It's okay to not be that worried. Because everything is fine nano.」

That sentence wasn't mere consolation, or a wishful thinking, or even a bluff. A strength that made anyone who listened to be convinced, existed in her words. The tension in the children's body naturally lessened and their expression recovered their natural color slightly.

Myuu nodded once at those children, and then while whispering「Just in case, Myuu will make preparation nano.」, Myuu gathered the children to the corner of the room, then she began to set up small crosses at their surrounding.

Perhaps there was no meaning to wonder about it anymore but, for the time being the children watched Myuu putting her hand under her skirt once more, but although she had shown for real how she was taking out crosses from there, the size and number of the crosses were obviously surpassing the range that was possible to be stored inside a children skirt. That profoundly mysterious phenomenon caused Natalai to have a faraway look while the other children's eyes were sparkling brightly from watching Myuu's every single move.

「You……who are you?」

One blond haired young boy who blushed from Myuu's smile leaked out that question in small volume.

In response to that, Myuu who was nodding in satisfaction after finishing setting up the crosses then proclaimed, with a brimming confidence, and a grandly triumphant look, as though it was exactly her pride.

「Myuu's name is Myuu. The beloved daughter——of the godslaying demon

king-sama nano!」

It went without saying that the faces of the children went blank hearing that.

A little bit after that.

In just a few minute, currently Myuu was becoming the center of this imprisonment room. It was obvious that the children would gather under Myuu who even in this situation was still smiling without even a single agitation. Everyone huddled together wanting to be at Myuu's side.

Seeing that for some reason Natalia wasn't feeling amused. Myuu had asked for all the children to introduce themselves, and after everyone finished their introduction Myuu spoke that Natalia was "a close friend nano!". If Myuu didn't do that, then perhaps right now Natalai would be acting sullen regardless of the current situation.

(Besides, that guy, isn't he being too close?)

Natalia was occupying one of Myuu's sides, while at the opposite side there was a blond young boy talking passionately at Myuu. The sharpness of Natalia's gaze toward that boy was growing without end.

It was unclear whether the blond haired boy noticed it, but the boy was continuing to talk to Myuu while sometimes feeling concerned of Natalia's gaze.

「Err, I don't really understand but……anyway, Myuu-chan's papa is absurdly strong, and he will immediately located us, and then beat up those guys, is that true?」

The blond haired young boy——he who had the name Emile asked Myuu. The children had sparkling eyes from hearing Myuu's story about how strong her papa was, but Emile who was comparatively calm was thinking realistically during Myuu's story, noticed some things that should be impossible without using magic mixed in the story, so his impression became like that.

By the way, the total number of the children inside the room was nine. Everyone of them were all children of the government officials that attended that party.

「Yup. If it's papa, then against that kind of guys it would be instant kill nano.

And if it is the onee-chans, then even if it's just one of them then the bad guy will go splat or go boom, or go zap, or go pew.」

「I, I see. Yep, I see……」

For some reason Emile felt like he was hearing excessively graphic sound effect, but he did his best in ignoring it.

「But, in that case then it seem that it will be all the better to not do anything uncalled for then. If within thirty more minutes our whereabouts will get find out, then let's not do anything dangerous. Myuu-chan too, it seemed that you did something like pretending to sleep but, it's no good to do risky thing you know?」

「It will be fine. Nn~, Emile is kind nano.」

「-, no, no such thing, though……」

Myuu smiled sweetly at Emile who was worrying for her even in this kind of situation. And then, the youth Emile, something was shot through inside him. 「Aa~, Emile is getting red!」or「Emile, you actually like Myuu aren't you!」and so on, jeering characteristic of children was breaking out from the other seeing Emile's face.

Natalia's gaze was rapidly growing sharper. It was to the level that made one doubted whether this girl was really a ten year old!

Emile's face went bright red while he made his objection inside that atmosphere, but the more he got worked up and denied the jeering, the deeper he was digging the hole for himself. Natalia's face was growing to resemble Hannya. The tragic feeling that enveloped the children at the beginning couldn't be find anywhere anymore.

In exchange, the youth Emile had to taste the tragic feeling instead.

「I'm sorry nano. Myuu, cannot answer Emile's feeling!」

「I got strongly rejected! Wh, why? No, it, it's not like, I like Myuu-chan or anything though. I'm asking here, because I'm just, feeling curious, or something……」

「Emile is not my type nano!」

「I got struck with a straight ball! The, then, what is your type……no, this is too, just because I'm curious, or something, it's not like I really want to he, he, hear though……」

「Myuu like papa!」

「That's an overly sharp curve ball! No, see here, Myuu-chan. It's fine that you like your papa but, you cannot actually marry him……also, that, that's different from liking lover or something……」

「*aAA?*」

「Hii, I got threatened by a cute face that looked like gangster! No, because, your papa, he is your father, you know?」

「We are not related by blood so there is no problem.」

「Unthinkable development! Lo, look here, Myuu-chan. Even though you two are not related by blood, he is your mother's beloved person isn't he? Then, if Myuu-chan is feeling like that to your father, won't your mother feeling troubled?」

「Mama said, 'if there is opening then take it!' to Myuu nano!」

「Unthinkable back up! Such thing……just what kind of family Myuu-chan's family is……」

「There are mama and papa, then Ojii-chan and obaa-chan, then in addition of papa's wife there are also seven more wives, it's a normal family.」

「There is something wrong with Myuu-chan's father you know!?」

「*aAA!?*」

「Hii, I'm sorry! I beg you here, don't make a face like a mafia boss with that cute face!」

Emile-kun's first love was showered with blows.

The surrounding children cackled. Natalia was hugging Myuu's arm while making expression of「Serves you right!!」. Natalia's character was in danger of crumbling.

Amidst that, a blond girl looking slightly older than Myuu was asking with

sparkling bright eyes, as expected it seemed that love story was the favorite food of any girl was a common point that was shared by all worlds.

「Hey hey, Myuu-chan. Then, when will you confess to your papa?」

「Nn~, confess? Nn~」

Myuu tilted her head a little, then after showing a thinking gesture「Nn~」, her eyes slowly narrowed.

「If it's confession then Myuu do it everyday. Everyday, Myuu said Myuu love papa nano.」

「Ee~, your papa won't get it like that you know, absolutely~」

「Nope. Papa is sharp so he understand. But, Myuu is still little, so papa is not thinking of Myuu like that nano……that's why……」

「That's why?」

The girls' eyes were sparkling with their heart beating fast, Emile was being crushed under a tragic feeling, Natalia was staring at Myuu with a complicated expression, and the boys were directing their grin at such Emile. Amidst all those, Myuu……

「That's why……eventually, Myuu will eat up Papa nano.」

Saying that, Myuu licked her lips. She chuckled「Fufu」with faintly blushing cheeks and eyes that were moist from passion. It was a bewitching figure that closely resembled a certain vampire princess, to the degree that it made one wanted to retort「Eh, she is ten years old right?」.

Spontaneously, the girls were shaken「Hawawa-」, the boys were overcame with surprise their soul almost flew away, while Emile and Natalia pressed their hands on their heart as though they were shot through.

As expected, it seemed that Myuu had inherited properly even the things that didn't need to be inherited from her uncommon older sisters.

But, it was a that time, the symbol of terror that was blown away thanks to Myuu became a footstep that resounded from the other side of the door. The children suddenly realized and they huddled close to the wall.

「Myu, Myuu……」

「Nn, it's fine. I won't let them touch even a single hair of Na-chan.」

「Un, I, believe in Myuu.」

Like that, the door opened with creaking sound, from the other side two men with their face hidden with mask and something that seemed to be assault rifle hanging on their shoulder entered the room.

「Oi, which one we are going to take?」

「They are all the same right? Anyway other than that brat, these brats are all the kids of government or army official. The effect will be the same no matter which one we kill. We also kidnapped a lot at other bases too anyway. It will be fine even if we used up all the brats here.」

「I see. It's two first for the time being huh. One will be killed right away as example right?」

The two who were exchanging conversation that could only be associated with dark future no matter how were acting as though the lives of children were worth nothing. It caused the children's body to shrink and shiver. And then, one of the man reached out his hand at a girl that he just happened to catch sight of——at Natalia who Myuu covered behind her. But, that hand was stopped by the surprisingly strong grip of a small hand.

「……in the end, the time limit came first nano.」

「You are in the way, brat.」

A cold gaze that robbed all warmth pierced Myuu from behind the mask. Myuu talked toward that man without even hiding her atmosphere of 'it's impossible huh'.

「This is a warning. It's better for you all to immediately release all of us without doing anything at all to us. Ojii-san, you all have no chance of winning nano.」(TN: Ojii-san=uncle)

「……fuh」

That unthinkable speech which came from a ten year old girl in this situation made the masked man to be lost for words spontaneously, but the moment his

mind caught up, a snort came out from his nose. Thinking that the little existence before his eyes really didn't know anything of what was called reality, caused ridicule to well up inside him.

At the same time, a color of sadism came into being inside his eyes. When he looked closer, it was a little girl with a very pretty look. This pretty little girl who didn't know anything about reality, if he made her to taste overwhelming violence, just what kind of voice she would be chirping with then, the man wondered.

Myuu who *knew about the unreasonableness of reality* understand what was in the mind of this kind of man like the back of her own hand. Therefore, while she was sighing in her heart that as expected, words wouldn't do anything anymore now, at that moment when the masked man was about to strike Myuu, her lips curved up fearlessly.

「Enemy, is to be killed nano!」

「-, wha!?」

Before he knew it, a small pistol for Myuu's use was gripped in her hand, that pistol was pushed against the man's stomach forcefully.

Just why, a kidnapped child was holding a gun——even while feeling chaotic confusion from the incomprehensible situation, the man immediately twisted his body but,

pan-

A dry sound rang out, at the same time, the man received a fierce impact on his stomach, without even being able to scream the man turned a somersault.

「Shit-, this brat-」

「……」

The other man aimed his assault rifle at Myuu——but, faster than the man Myuu summoned a similar pistol in her other hand, without even changing her posture or turning her sight, a bullet flew below Myuu's armpit and impacted the stomach of the man who was at the left behind Myuu.

Once more, a dry sound *pan-* resounded along with the man groaning with a

small voice while crumbling down. And then, even with an unbelieving expression, even so the man was trying to pull the trigger of his assault rifle.

「Fly away you asshole nano!」

Before anyone realized Myuu stepped in, and in her hand was a comical hammer that was gripped also before anyone realized——at the hammer head there was a rabbit character that looked like Mifoy attached colored in red and yellow——the pico pico hammer's full swing pummeled the head of the man mercilessly and sent him flying. (TN: Search in google using this word ピコピコハンマー to find the illustration of pico pico hammer)

Like that the man crashed on the wall *bekyo!* before crumbling down powerlessly. Giving that man only a glance, Myuu shouldered the pico pico hammer while turning around, and then toward the first man who was trying to stand up somehow,

「Hey-, wai——」

「No waiting nano!」

The pico pico hammer struck violently in full power. The hammer that flew with a force that was unthinkable coming from the strike of a ten year old girl hit directly at the man's face. *pikon-!* Such comical sound and stars image were scattered while the man was sinking down.

「Myuu……」

「A, amazing……」

Natalia's eyes opened wide, while Emile was letting out a murmur of admiration. That expression and murmur represented the heart of everyone there. After all, two adult man armed with gun were instant killed by a girl whose age was not that different from them. In addition there was also the weapons that appeared one after another like magic trick.

However, Myuu's expression didn't show any sense of accomplishment. Rather, with a grim expression from her wariness that was raising up further, she was staring at the other side of the door and gave an instruction at the dumbfounded children.

「Na-chan, everyone. Until I say that it's fine, you all absolutely must not get out from behind those crosses. Understand?」

「Eh, Myuu, we are not going to escape even though those men has been defeated?」

「Yup, several people is heading here after hearing the commotion just now nano. Even if we want to escape, right now it's dangerous to go outside.」

「Go, got it.」

Natalia led the other children and they huddled against each other behind the crosses that Myuu had lined up. During that time, Myuu took out a new weapon. This time she chose something that would make as little sound as possible.

Right after that, three men stepped into the room. And then, they got taken aback seeing two of their comrades were defeated before they aimed their rifle muzzle at the children. They were going to question the children what happened when,

hyun hyun-

The sound of something cutting through wind entered their ear, at the same time one of the man received a fierce impact on his head that blown his consciousness to the beyond.

「Wha-」

「This brat-」

Voices of shock and curse resounded. Right after that, Myuu whose dress waved from her elegant twirling motion directed the weapon in her hand to the enemies and launched it with that twirling motion and her wrist snap.

hyun the sound of something cutting apart the air resounded, it pulverized the ankle of one of the men while wrapping around it at the same time.

——Myuu's exclusive use Black Whip "This is Weapon Desu"

The emphasis in the naming was surely the consideration of the papa so that the perverted character of the whip art teacher wouldn't be transferred to his beloved daughter even in the worst case. It was a caution toward the daughter so that the whip would never, ever be used for other purpose other than as

weapon.

“This is Weapon Desu” crashed the man whose ankle was pulverized into the man at his side before letting go, and then next it struck the wrist of the man whose balance was broken. Just with that the bone of the wrist was smashed and the man screamed while dropping his gun. And then, the collapsed man tried to ready his rifle while the man whose wrist was broken tried to take out his pistol from his waist, but the tip of the whip bent and hit the head of the two men hard almost at the same time and robbed them of their consciousness.

「Mu-, there is still one more nano!」

「-, what the, you-」

The last man who was standing by outside the room showed his figure while pulling his rifle’s trigger toward the girl who instantly made the three men entering the room fainted. *da da da da da-* Amidst the fiercely reverberating sound of gun shooting, Myuu threw away her black whip and took out the “Pikko Piko Hammeeer” once again and threw it forward.

Myuu who was on the line of fire was hiding at the shadow of “Pikko Piko Hammeeer” that the bullets didn’t hit her. And then, the stray bullets that missed Myuu passed through to the back——toward the group of children behind.

「Kyaaah, wait, eee!?」

「Li, liees……」

Before the eyes of Natalia, Emile, and the others who spontaneously screamed, the bullets were stopping with ripples spreading midair.

——Myuu’s exclusive use Barrier Artifact “Don’t Touch, You Pervert!”

The lined up crosses were artifact where barrier would be deployed with those crosses as the base. So that bullets wouldn’t hit the children even at the worst case, Myuu made a simple safe zone inside the room beforehand. The naming made apparent just what kind of situation that the creator imagined this artifact would be used for.

And then, Myuu herself who had completely protected the children from the

wicked bullets was……

「Sleep nano.」

「aAA!?」

The thrown “Pikko Piko Hammeeer” instantly blocked the sight of the enemy, within an instant Myuu circled to the back of the opponent with low steps as though she was crawling on the ground, and with two kodachi in her hands she rotated while severing the tendons of the enemy’s two legs. At the same time, the head of the man who became unable to keep standing and crumbled down was hit and hit by two consecutive pommel strike, causing the man to faint with the white of his eyes exposed.

——Myuu’s exclusive use Twin Katana “Muuramasa-Kotetsuu”

This artifact would react to Myuu’s image and could activate high speed vibration-slash wave-impact generation, on top of that, just by holding it would cause Myuu’s perception and physical ability to rise, these two kodachi were truly worthy to be called as “demon sword”.

By the way, the twin sword art that Myuu learned was based from Kaori’s twin large sword art combined with Shizuku’s Yaegashi-style. Especially the combo of the rotating slash continued with pommel strike just now was a technique that was just one step short of being secret technique of Yaegashi-style.

「For now we managed to endure through emergency, but reinforcement would surely come soon, so everyone, prepare to escape.」

Myuu twirled the two kodachi before like a magic trick the two swords disappeared somewhere. Looking at such Myuu, the children finally raised their joyful voice and rushed out from behind the crosses. Their mouths sent Myuu with words of praise like「Myuu-chan is amazing!」「So cool!」「Stro—ng!」.

「Myuu! Are you okay? You are not injured?」

「Myuu-chan! You are okay!?」

「Na-chan, Emile. Myuu is fine nano. Rather than that, the next enemy will come soon, so we are going to move to a place where it’s easier to fight while we have time. It will be dangerous if they throw a grenade in a dead end closed

room like this.」

Even though Myuu had cut a swath through grown up men like butter, she didn't look particularly proud and instead calmly gave the children the next instruction, witnessing this Natalia and Emile raised enraptured voice「Fuai」sounding extremely stupid.

Myuu gave a glance at them who were like that, and then she took an action that made Natalia wanted to scream while making the boys feeling both really happy and embarrassed. After all, Myuu's dress suddenly vanished.

「Fuwah」

「Wai-, hey-, you guys, don't look-」

The dress was only stored inside the "Treasure Warehouse", but from the point of view of the children who didn't know about such thing, it looked like Myuu suddenly was only wearing underwear. Furthermore, the undressed Myuu was wearing a green baby doll that wafted off an adult air which made one wanted to say 'isn't that a bit inappropriate for a ten years old?'

Myuu's white skin that looked transparent was exposed generously, but there was no color of shame at Myuu's serious expression. For Myuu who once went through adventure at a world of sword and magic, something of this degree wasn't worth to feel bothered about at all, to say nothing of how it was in the middle of battle right now.

And then, in this battlefield, there was one reason of why Myuu took off her dress.

Right after that, Myuu's body was enveloped with faint light, and then at the next moment, Myuu transformed into a new outfit.

A dress shirt that really resembled what Yue was wearing, and a white hot pants that resembled the one that Shia was wearing. White knee socks that exposed the absolute territory of her legs, and cute frilly short boots. Around her waist was wrapped with two gun belt like what Shizuku wore crossing each other.

A miniaturized "Picco Pico Hammeeer" was attached at the back of the gun belt on that waist, colorful gems were fitted on the countless slots that were

usually for storing bullets. And then, on Myuu's two thighs at opposing sides were two gun holsters fitted with "Donneerr-Schlaaag", while on her back were "Muuramasa-Kotetsuu" attached crossing each other.

This was exactly, the complete battle readiness of Myuu! She transformed instantly, that figure with outfit change and weapon change, was just like a magical girl somewhere!

In fact, all of the children were directing yearning look at Myuu that said「Myuu-chan is a magical girl……」.

But, at that time, sounds of angry voices and many footsteps running to here entered Myuu's ears. It appeared that she couldn't expect the enemy to only send a small amount of their force anymore, and she also couldn't hope to just wait-and-see. Myuu The enemy had clearly understood that they weren't attacking and received counterattack, so they were sending their "battle force" to here.

Most likely, it would be thirty or forty more minutes before the time limit where Hajime would notice the strangeness. If Myuu was asked whether she could buy time until then by holing up, then as expected no matter how many times she was reassessing the situation the answer that she came up with was doubtful.

And above all else, teaching like nonaggressive defense of constantly being in defensive while kept being getting done in——was something that Myuu didn't get taught with!

「You all are enemy nano. Enemy is to be pow-wowed nano!」

With her two beloved guns that were gifted to her by her beloved papa in two hands, *click* Myuu made a wide fearless grin.

Right now, the daughter of demon king was starting to move.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

It feels like, I'm just doing whatever I like……

But, I’m not reflecting or regretting. Aa, I’m having fun writing.

About the trivial detail, I will be happy if everyone turn a blind eye with your usual tolerance of [Well, this is Shirakome after all].

The next update is planned at 6 P.M Saturday next week too.

Arifureta Chapter 187

Arifureta After – Christmas Commemoration Santa-san's Present

To all the riajuu, and to the villagers of loneliness village too, to everyone

Merry Christmas!

Part 1

People costumed in colorful costumes, mysterious creatures(mascots), shrikes that contained joy and excitement, sound effects and music that were resounding here and there.

That place which looked unreal and extraordinary, was a certain famous theme park.

The season was winter. Furthermore the day was the time when the end of the year would arrive soon——it was the Christmas day.

It was natural that there were lovers there more than usual, but there were also people who came with their family or fellow friends, they all came in drove to enjoy to their heart content this theme park that had been remodeled for a limited time, dyed in the color of Christmas.

Such theme park that had measured the number of visitor that made the face of the management to burst in chuckle was visited by a group that was a little bit special. It was a group of one man, and eight beautiful girls and women. And then, on the shoulder of that man was a little girl with sparkling bright eyes. It went without saying that this group was Hajime and the wives (Yue, Shia, Tio, Kaori, Shizuku, Remia, Aiko, Liliana). Shuu and Sumire had work. It also went without saying that the two of them were shedding tears that they couldn’t come.

By the way, in the current point of time Liliana was still unable to separate herself from the kingdom, so normally she was staying at the kingdom. However, in this long awaited holy night, it would be too cruel to leave Liliana alone, so Hajime opened a gate and kidnapped Liliana who was in the middle of work.

For the moment, by using the system to covert electricity into magic power (Hajime had built a personal geothermal electric power generator deep underground so he could convert magic power as he pleased), the number of

time they could freely come and go between Tortus and earth had increased, so there was no particular problem with doing this.

「Papa, papa! There, let's go there nano! That one with shark-san going haup!」 (TN: Seems Myuu is referring to a shark opening its jaw and then swallow in a flash)

「Yes yes. Even though it's cold here, but you intentionally chose water attraction huh. Is this because of Myuu's race trait?」

Myuu was given a ride on Hajime's shoulder, her legs were swinging back and forth while she was squealing merrily. Her head was covered with a fluffy Santa hat and her appearance was that of a mini skirt Santa costume. Her legs were wrapped with white stocking and her boots were white with pompon attached, each time her legs moved they would flutter around.

The emerald blonde hair that flowed down from the Santa hat and her well ordered gentle features inherited from her mother, her innocent merriness, this small Santa-san that fawned at her papa with all her might, added with all the oneechan surrounding the papa, this little girl was extremely standing out. The gazes of the people at the surrounding were unconsciously sucked toward her, and when they caught sight of her then they wouldn't be able to help themselves from loosening up their expression warmly.

Just as Santa Myuu wished for, papa Hajime was heading toward the aquatic attraction where they would have adventure on a river where a giant shark was lurking.

While waiting, the other visitors kept stealing glance toward the beautiful look of Yue and others……there was no such thing. Due to an artifact that obstructed people's recognizance, the surrounding wasn't paying attention at Yue and others.

In exchange, it were Yue and others whose gaze were wandering restlessly to the surrounding. Especially Liliana whose familiarity with this world was still faint, she seemed to be receiving culture shocks from various things, from behind the eyeglass for the recognizance obstruction, her gaze that was possibly sparkling even brighter than Myuu's was running through the area.

They had entered the theme park since morning, and right now the sun had

been going down considerably, but Liliana's excitement hadn't settled down yet.

「……Really, Hajime-san's world is just like a jack-in-the-box. They are building a facility like this only for the sake of amusement. This scale is just like a small city you know? The sightseeing ward at Furen is also something, even so this place is in a different level. No, should I perhaps call this as the difference in passion and seriousness toward amusement? Even though this is a large scale facility, yet I can see their fixation even until the details, it surpassed the rationality as a mere business, and I can feel the zeal of the people affecting the construction. I wonder about how much they spent in building this. And the profit? The number of visitor per year? The development in the future? The owner of this facility is a common merchant……no, the owner is a corporation isn't it? If this can be managed by the country instead……. No, if the substantial aspect is left to Furen while the country become the contract partner……」

It seemed that Liliana was being excited at a point that was slightly off. Even though she had arrived here in this rare chance at the world of dream, furthermore it was at the holy night, but this princess of another world seemed to be curious about the selling point of the theme park instead. And what was mysterious from this, was that the sparkling eye of a dreaming maiden, now strangely looked like the fiercely glaring eyes of someone aiming for money.

After Hajime returned to earth, it could be imagined just how hard Liliana who was left behind was working hard, so if it was asked if this couldn't be helped then perhaps it really couldn't be helped……but, perhaps she had been neglected alone a bit too much. Not only Hajime, even Yue and others were also sending lukewarm gaze mixed with pity at Liliana.

While that happened, the turn for Hajime and others had arrived. They boarded the boat that had drifted in front of their eyes. The boat was something with roof attached and could be boarded by around twenty people, with vertical bench set up at the center, so the boarder could sit there facing to the outside.

Myuu sat down on Hajime's lap like it was only natural, she was staring at the route looking thrilled.

Before long the boat was slowly advancing. At the same time, an onee-san looking like an adventure with a rifle on one hand was talking with a lot of

realism, just how dangerous this adventure would be and how brutal the existence that was lurking at the bottom of the water.

Just as could be expected from a worker of a large scale theme park, her talking skill was first class. The adults were enjoying the atmosphere like adult, and the children were looking at the water looking scared while their hand grasped their parent's hand tightly.

「Papa.」

「Hm? What is it Myuu?」

Hajime tilted his head at the call of Myuu above his lap who was looking up over her shoulder at Hajime while he was fixing the position of her Santa hat that had shifted. Myuu was asking her papa cheerfully.

「If the shark-san is attacking, that onee-san will be the one who defeat it nano?」

「Yeah, I guess. She will shot with that rifle to protect us.」

「Hm~mm」

When Myuu heard what Hajime said, she began to stare fixedly at the onee-san. The onee-san smiled pleasantly toward the gaze of the cute Santa-san and she waved her hand a bit. As expected from an onee-san of a theme park. Her zero yen smile was also super first class.

But, if it was a normal child they would be a bit embarrassed before hiding on the shadow of their parent, or they would smile back normally, but in this scene Myuu's reaction was……

「Fuh」

For some reason Myuu sighed a little while she shrugged as though to say「Yare yare daze」. A crack entered the onee-san's super smile! A cramp entered papa Hajime's expression! (TN: Yare yare daze, I think in English it's something like 'oh dear, good grief')

Using the indispensable technique for a theme park worker, the "Instant Switch", the Onee-san immediately fixed her smiling face, but Hajime's expression was still cramped while tapping Myuu's head. And then, when he

asked the reason of Myuu's attitude just now, she answered「Because, that onee-san look weak」. It appeared that just now was Myuu wanting to say「Don't force yourself okay」in her own way.

While that was happening, an event began in the attraction. On the water surface there was a fin that was beginning to surface, the onee-san then shot a warning shot with her rifle. It was a fake rifle without bullet, but a water splash occurred with matching timing. From the view point of the children, it looked like the onee-san was shooting her rifle and drove away something. In fact, the little kids were raising voice of joy.

However, the boat suddenly shook as though something had pushed it up from below, and wreckages of seriously damaged ships from shark attack were beginning to appear, the expression of the children began to show nervousness and fear once more. And those feelings reached the peak when a giant shark with its giant jaw opened wide leaped out from the water surface.

'waa—' 'kyaa—' Amidst those resounding excited voices, the onee-san drove away the giant shark with her rifle. However, the shaking boat caused her to slip and fell down. It appeared that her ankle got twisted (of course it was the setting), then saying that she couldn't shot the rifle like this, she called to the crowd 'someone work with me!' like that. Naturally, the one who would cooperate would be the little kids.

「Go on, Myuu. You too go there.」

「Yes nano.」

A group of little kids fired the rifle given to them by the onee-san looking nervous, or possibly excited. Myuu also joined into that group.

「……Uu~n, how unexpected desu. If it's Myuu-chan, she should know already about *more than the real thing* isn't she?」

Shia tilted her head even while pleasantly watching Myuu who was making merry at the imitation shark. Myuu was different from normal child, she knew about real monster of the sea and also about struggle for life. Yet Myuu's figure that was seriously looking excited with this regardless of all that was a bit strange.

「Fufu. Of course Myuu understand what is going on. But, the strange amusement of danger experience with guaranteed safety cause Myuu to feel that it's something unusual and interesting instead.」

「……Nn. Recently she getting engrossed in battle game, is a little bit troubling.」

「There is also our training, and there art also her staying late at night.」

「Lack of sleep for young children will cause a bad influence to their growth. Hajime-kun, it's not good unless you firmly warn her you know?」

Papa Hajime was smiling wryly toward Aiko's warning while he nodded. That was also something that Hajime was worrying about recently.

「Ah, it's Myuu-chan's turn now.」

「Leave the camera to me. Myuu-chan fighting a giant shark, I'll caught it in the picture perfectly.」

Hearing what Kaori pointed out, Shizuku readied a single-lens reflex camera. The target of that lens was the figure of Myuu who was having a rifle handed to her right now.

Normally the onee-san would gently teach the kid the way of holding the rifle and also propped up the kid. And then by aiming at the timing when the shark jumped out, she would say「It's now! Fire!」where sparks would scatter from the shark's body and mouth, giving a show as though the shark had been shot.

But, the small Santa who received the rifle was a super little girl that had become thoroughly familiar with gunpowder smoke and spark and firearm at another world. Furthermore, right now she was a trained little girl that had been forged by her all cheat onee-san and her demon king papa.

Therefore, the moment Myuu received the rifle, she twirled it with a familiar motion and shouldered it on her shoulder before turning her gaze to the water surface. The hands of the onee-san that were going to support the little child were wandering about in air. That figure which was shouldering a long rifle was strangely looking appropriate at the miniskirt Santa little girl, which caused the eyes of the visitors to blink. Shizuku released the camera shutter. Consecutively.

「Err, I wonder what is your name young miss~?」

With a professional spirit the onee-san asked her name.

「It's Myuu. I am six year old. A woman of sea.」

「……S, so it's Myuu-chan! Yoosh, Myuu-chan, if we advance just a little bit more we should be able to escape, so let's do our best and drive away the scary shark okay!」

Onee-san is a pro! No matter what kind of tricky customer she faced she won't waver!

She wouldn't waver but, Myuu who heard onee-san's words of「drive away」sent a glance at the onee-san, and then a fearless smile floated on her lips……

「Drive it away nano? That's also not bad but……no one will mind even if I do the shark in right?」

「No, that will be troubling.」

Onee-san plainly replied!

But, at the next moment, the giant shark jumped out all of a sudden while raising water splash. Myuu instantly readied her rifle. She placed the stock part on her shoulder, her left hand supported the barrel, and her sight lined up with the rear sight. She really looked the part.

The eyes of the onee-san was starting to get far away. The children were going 'waa' raising voices of admiration. The adults were directing complicated gaze at Hajime and others who were Myuu's guardian.

On that boat which was gradually turning chaotic, the small Santa's lovely speech resounded.

「I'll blow off your head nano!」

Sound effect of *dopan* resounded and spark scattered inside the mouth of the giant shark. The giant shark vanished into the water. Light was also vanishing from the onee-san's eye. The voice of the adults cheering the children was already disappearing.

Amidst all that, Myuu who twirled the rifle with an experienced gesture as

expected before resting it on her shoulder, a beat later, she made a resolute thumbs up with「Myu!」. (TN: Here she is not saying her own name, it was more like a peculiar voice that Myuu sometimes made.)

On the boat where various things had vanished, relentless sounds of shutter click were resounding.

Part 2

「Oh, it's starting nano!」

The sun had already completely sunk, however, the dazzling light of the theme park that was spreading as though to exterminate the darkness of night was illuminating Myuu who was in a good mood. On Hajime's shoulder, Myuu was pointing at the lead group of the parade.

A night parade was starting in the theme park. Tonight was also Christmas, so the parade was showier and more extravagant than usual. The people who were gathering on the street were also crowding until the place was jam packed.

Hajime and group were watching the parade that earned full score in its entertainment, but after a while, suddenly Hajime lowered Myuu down from his shoulder. And then, Hajime put the puzzled Myuu on Tio's shoulder. If it was Tio whose height was only a bit shorter than Hajime then Myuu would still be able to watch the parade.

Hajime exchanged look with Yue and others. For the sake of this day, he had prepared this and that and made arrangement with the other beforehand, due to that Hajime intended to go away from this spot.

「Myuu. Papa will go for a bit to do some errand. I'll come back soon, so wait for a bit here.」

「……Yes nano.」

Hajime felt like something was pulling him back looking at Myuu who made a bit lonely expression, but he somehow shook it off. Today was the first grand Christmas event for Myuu. They didn't make it for the previous Christmas because they had only make it back to earth and there was no time, so they only did something like a small party for family. That was why, no matter what papa Hajime wanted to do that for the sake of his beloved daughter.

Hajime slipped into the crowd of people and vanished. Myuu stared at his figure, and then urged by Yue and others her gaze returned to the parade. Joyful

smile immediately returned to her face, but as expected, when her beloved papa wasn't with her she seemed unable to go all out to enjoy the event.

But, that gloominess too was immediately cleared up.

shan shan shan shan Clear bell sound was resounding. Everyone seemed to think that it was a sound from the parade, but that sound was getting larger which caused the people to go「Hmm?」and tilted their head. Yes, the sound of bell that was growing audible was coming from up above.

Like that, as though they were guided the people looked above, and over there was,

「Ah, that's Santa-san-」

A boy somewhere pointed while raising his voice. Following where the boy pointed the people looked up, and they raised their voice with「Eh, lies, it's flying!?」, or「Re, reindeer? The real thing!?」「Ama~zing!!」and so on.

Yes, at where the boy was pointing, there was the appearance of reindeers pulling a sleigh that Santa Claus was riding, gliding through the sky.

The normally impossible supernatural phenomenon was something that should make anyone scream, but this place was a country of dream. A fantasy world decorated with the unreal and extraordinary. Therefore, everyone was thinking that it was the theme park's production, their shock was gradually turning into cheers. The staffs whom were doing the parade were looking up open mouthed, but the people who were looking up didn't notice that.

Before long, Santa Claus who was riding through the starry sky of the holy night was swiveling down as though going down through a spiraling staircase that was drawn midair. And then, like that the sleigh was approaching slowly at the crowd.

The approaching sleigh made the crowd to part naturally. And at the destination of that sleigh was a small Santa-san.

「Merry Christmas, my small compatriot young lady.」

The Santa Claus who got down from the sleigh had a face that was difficult to understand with his white beard and round glasses. He then kneeled in front of

Myuu who was put down from Tio's shoulder and said such thing.

In response, Myuu blinked her eyes and,

「Papa, what are you doing nano?」

「……It's not papa. It's Santa.」

「Eh, but……」

「It's Santa.」

「Pa——」

「It's Saaan, taaa-」

「Ah, yes.」

Myuu nodded repeatedly at the Santa that felt a little desperate. She was an obedient and good child.

Santa nodded in satisfaction at Myuu while ignoring to the utmost Yue and others whose shoulders were shaking, he then put the large white bag that was piled on the sleigh in front of Myuu.

「Now then, for you who had been a really good kid through this year, is this present from Santa.」

「Present?」

To Myuu who tilted her head, Santa took out a box that was inlaid with sparkling stones that looked like lovely pink colored gems from his bag. That box was a feminine box that could be presented as a treasure box by itself.

At the surrounding, the people who were watching over the development thinking that this must be an event of the theme park were also going「Ooo」with warm expression. A voice of a girl somewhere begging to her father「I want that」could be heard.

Amidst all that, Myuu who was receiving the lovely box asked to pa——Santa if it was okay to open it with her gaze. Santa nodded.

Like that when the lid was opened……

「Ah」

Myuu unintentionally raised her voice. And then, that expression which looked perplexed became colored with joy right away. That smile was like a flower bud that bloomed all at once, it was such a full and beautiful smile like blooming flower.

The present that was inserted into that box was surely a girly present, something like children accessory, or a good of some cartoon character. Everyone was thinking like that.

But, what was taken out by Myuu was……

「It’s Donner and Schlag nanooo-!!!!」

A pair of handgun…….

People falling down were appearing here and there one after another. There was no doubt that they were people from Osaka (TN: Seems like the custom of falling on their butt from shock came from Osaka). Other people also made tsukkomi from their mouth. However, Myuu herself was swinging around the two handguns going「Finally, Myuu could have this nano!」while expressing great happiness.

The figure of a little girl Santa dancing boisterously from receiving as present in the holy night, a pair of handguns that she seemed to have been begging for previously, could be seen there.

「Young lady, those aren’t Donner-Schlag. They are “Donneer-Schlaag”.」

「Donneer-Schlaag?」

「Yes, Donneer-Schlaag.」

After Santa corrected Myuu like that, he further fished into his white present bag with rummaging sounds.

「Also this, “Pikko Piko Hammeeer”」

「Pikko Piko Hammeeer!!!」

「”This is Weapon Desu”.」

「This is Weapon De~su!」

「We also cannot forget this one, “Muuramasa” and——」

「Muuramasa!!」

「”Kotetsuu”.」

「Kotetsuuuuu!!」

Myuu's tension was breaking through heaven (TN: Reference to Gurren Lagann)! She hopped up and down and swung around the weapons she received heartily!

From there Myuu received more presents of gun belt and a present that was named as Yue-oneechan's love. Myuu then said「Pa——Santa-san! Thank you nano! I, I, I love you nano!!」and leaped into Santa's chest.

After that, at the other side of the crowd of the dumbfounded people, figures that seemed to be the security staff appeared. Santa who confirmed the appearance of those staffs immediately boarded his sleigh. And then, he snapped the reins and returned to the sky once more. In the middle of everyone was having a question of「Just how in the world it is flying?」, Santa then made his next move so that Myuu and others wouldn't be bothered by the security.

「Merry Christmas.」

Saying such thing, a lot of parachutes were dropped from the sleigh. The parachutes that had absurd numbers were raining down from the sky in the holy night were all attached with Christmas present. Obviously there were present of toy or stuffed toy, and even some accessory or game system. Every kind of present was raining down from the sky.

When the bewildered people heard an awfully clear voice that said「They are meager presents from the park. Please help yourself to it.」, they raised joyful voice of「Waa!!」and rushed toward the parachutes. Because the people were pushing and jostling against each other, Yue nonchalantly supported with magic so that no accident would happen.

By the way, the number of presents were obviously too many to be loaded on the sleigh, but everyone ignored that in their excitement. They were presents from Santa who were riding lovely reindeers. There was also the atmosphere of the place that might caused their mind to feel 'who cares about the trivial thing'.

Although, if they knew that those reindeers were actually mechanical Grim

Reapers that were fully loaded with weaponry inside……surely they would panic without doubt. In this world, there was something that it was better to not know.

The next day, it went without saying that the unprecedented theme park even was grandly reported in the news. It also went without saying that the sophisticated production and the generous treat of presents raised the selling point of the park while the higher-ups were searching 'just who was that Santa!' with bloodshot eyes.

And then, the really happy expression of the small princess of Nagumo family was also naturally made everyone in the family to writhe from her cuteness. However, her figure that was sleeping together with handguns and war hammer, whip and kodachi, while rubbing her cheek on them was……

He was the one who gave those presents but, now papa Hajime was having a complicated worry of「Is this really fine, for my daughter?」.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Even though today is Christmas, Shirakome that is a villager of loneliness village suddenly got an idea and wrote this.

If you like, please read it together with a Christmas cake by yourself.

Shirakome had chocolate cake.

Tomorrow too, I'll update as usual you know~

Arifureta Chapter 188

Arifureta After – As the Daughter of Demon King Part 2

AN: I posted Christmas commemoration chapter a page back.

If you directly come to this chapter, if you like please take a look at the chapter before this too.

Part 1

A group carrying assault rifle and masked face was rushing through an underground corridor in a dark building. The place they were heading toward was the place where the children who were taken as hostage were imprisoned. Their comrades who were going there went out of contact one after another, so understanding that something strange had happened to them, this group rushed to that place in panic.

In total there were nearly twenty people in this armed group that was in the middle of running. One of them who were running at the very back heard the sound like something jumping at a room the group was passing and he came to a stop reflexively. His other comrades were gradually rushing ahead, but the comrades nearby him also stopped running and looked at him questioningly.

He made a gesture that conveyed to his comrades how he heard a sound came from inside the room, and just in case, he proposed to investigate inside. The men who came to a stop were six in total, they nodded to each other and left behind two people at the corridor, and then they passed through the opened steel door and stepped inside the room.

Immediately after, *kii* the door was making such sound while it automatically, no, a small hand that wasn't noticed by anyone was quietly reaching down from the ceiling and closed the door.

One of the men who was left at the corridor spontaneously charged at the door, while the other man tried to let out warning voice, but just before that, gunshot sound echoed consecutively inside the room.

「Gah!?」「Guah」Pained voices could be heard, bullets that flew from around the ceiling granted severe impact at two men who exposed the back of their head defenselessly and their consciousness was instantly blown away. The remaining two men turned around and sprayed bullets at the door from where

they entered, but there was no scream of enemy that resounded inside the room.

In exchange,

click

Such sinister sound resounded from behind them. The two men moved only their eyes to look at each other, then matching their breathing they turned around all at once. There——

「Slow nano.」

Dangling upside down from the ceiling, with a pair of handgun——”Donneer-Schlaag” aimed at the forehead of the two men, was a figure of a little girl. The two men were about to spit out some swear words but, before they could do that, the girl——Myuu pulled the trigger. The head of the two was snapped backward grandly.

gon Like that their head clashed on the door and interrupted the intrusion of the two remaining men that tried to enter inside for an instant. That instant was a fatal opening against the beloved daughter who had received the teaching of a monster gunner.

The moment the door opened with a force that knocked back the body of their comrades, the dry sound of *pan pan* resounded, at the same time the two men crumbled down.

……That figure dangling on the ceiling, lured the enemy into the room before shooting them down still in upside down posture——was truly like the hit man Leon! (TN: A character from a French movie, ‘Leon’.)

「Now, everyone, before those guys are coming back, we are going out nano.」

When Myuu called like that at the corner of the room, right after that, the corner of the room where there should be nothing suddenly distorted, from there the figure of the children appeared. Every single one of them was holding a large cross in their palm. Those crosses were the artifact “Don’t Touch, You Pervert”, but as supplementary function they also had the concealment ability that made use of light reflection.

「He, hey, Myuu. Just now, how did you *stand up* on the ceiling?」

While moving, Natalia became unable to endure and asked that. To that Myuu answered with a word「Guts」. Natalia's shoulders dropped while saying「At least I want you to say that it's magic……」. Of course, the cause that Myuu could be like Leo○ wasn't because of guts, but because of the "gravity stone" and "Air Force" inserted into her boots.

But, at that time, a sound of explosion resounded from quite a distance.

「Myuu-chan, just now……I think that came from around the place where we were at though.」

「Myu. Perhaps, they got caught up on the trap that Myuu set up there and went pyuu nano. Their weapons are excellent, but those criminal-san's movement is relatively rough.」

「Is, is that so……」

Emile's cheeks cramped from knowing that it appeared Myuu had even did something like that by taking into account the movement of the enemy while they didn't notice. Or rather, to listen at a ten year old girl finding fault at an armed group……it caused him to become bothered about Myuu's true identity all the more.

Like that, Myuu beautifully used gun kata with twin gun art, war hammer art, whip art, and two sword art to thoroughly take care of the enemies she encountered while moving. The children were sending sparkling eyes at such Myuu as though they were looking at a hero while following behind her. And finally, they discovered a door that had the word "EXIT" written on it.

It was a door that connected to the outside.

While the expression of Natalia and others burst bright in joy, Myuu's expression turned complicated instead. But, at the same time, she could hear the sound of a lot of footsteps from deep at the path they had just passed through, so while sighing deeply, she opened the door while telling Natalia and others to hold at the cross firmly.

There,

「So, you are the devil that slipped in among the children huh.」

A masked group of nearly thirty people that was fully armed was lying in wait while aiming their rifle muzzle at the door. Natalia and others screamed「Hii」a bit witnessing that.

Myuu didn't answer at the question of the man who seemed to be the leader of the armed group, instead she ran her gaze at the surrounding. The place they came out to appeared to be a huge warehouse. If it was normally, there should be a lot of material put into container that was placed in here.

The nose of Myuu who was a sea dweller race sensed the smell of salt, from there she understood that this place was adjacent with a harbor (she understood that from the beginning already though). Yes, this place was a warehouse district to deposit the luggage of cargo ships.

Right now they were in a warehouse that was jointly established with the management building at the corner of that district. However, inside that warehouse was crowded with quite a strict security. Not to mention the dozens of armed people, there were also a lot of heavy weapons and a lot of computers for command room lined up, in addition, there were also things like armored vehicle that was in the middle of being camouflaged or a vehicle that looked like a mobile selling car for ice cream in outside yet had gatling gun and so on attached on the inside.

「Uu~n, from the weaponry and the hostage taking, I have imagined that by some chance it might be like this but……as expected, you all are not mere kidnapper, but a terrorist group nano.」

「Just what the hell are you? A bodyguard prepared by the government?」

The terrorist leader was recalling the kid soldier of his own country in the back of his mind while speaking out his conjecture. Be that as it may, it was hard to believe the fact that a single girl like this was able to beat up his organization's soldier, and he was also concerned from where this girl got her weapon.

By all rights, this girl was an irregular existence, someone like Myuu whose identity they couldn't confirm should be quickly killed, but her abnormality made this leader to question her.

「Myuu's smartphone, where is it nano?」

「……Answer my question.」

Even though it should be a checkmate with nearly thirty guns aimed at them, but Myuu's composed attitude didn't break and she instead questioned back. This caused the leader's voice to become lower.

「I want you to answer first nano. If you do that, then I'll answer.」

「Do you think you are in the position where you can negotiate?」

Myuu's way of speaking was responded by the leader with the rise of one of his and. Immediately, a gunshot resounded. One of his underling aimed at Natalia and fired. But, naturally, because Natalia's hand was clutching "Don't Touch, You Pervert", the bullet was blocked by an invisible wall and stopped midair.

The terrorists became agitated and went noisy. Amidst all that, the leader was also looking in wonderment but he then opened his mouth without losing his calm.

「……What is that? So America has even developed something like that.」

「Rather than that, where is the smartphone nano?」

The leader guessed that the cause of Myuu's composure was because of that invinsible shield, however, at the back his mind immediately a solution appeared, that they could just directly take away the shield if gun didn't work. And then, if they could steal that shield, it would be advantageous for their terrorist activity from here on. Thinking like that, he snickered in his heart.

Perhaps the leader felt whimsical from the composure that he had just obtained. He answered Myuu's question by moving his gaze. The place where his gaze pointed was a corner of the simple command room where there were a lot of computers gathered. Most likely the smartphones of the other children were also there.

「So, who are you?」

This time the leader questioned. Because he had taught Myuu the smartphone's location, he felt that this time it was Myuu's turn to answer. In response to that, Myuu was making an exasperated expression while,

「There is no way I will answer nano. You must have something wrong in your head if you are accepting what your enemy said seriously like that nano.」

The leader was wearing a mask. But, surely right now a vein was throbbing visible on his forehead. Really, he wanted to see the face of the parent that was raising this girl.

「Are you thinking, that because you have that shield all of you are absolutely safe? Something like that can just be wrestled off directly and taken away, and that's it. I thought that you are someone that had received special training, but you cannot even make a proper situation assessment, did I overestimate you? Or else, are you thinking that you can do something against this number of people with that tiny guns or those primitive weapons?」

「……」

The hand of the leader rose quietly. A man at his side guessed what the leader wanted and whispered something into a wireless, then further group of armed men with more than ten people appeared from the door behind, in addition, a group of thirty men flooded in from outside the warehouse and surrounded Myuu and the children.

「Don't take up our time too much. We are going to be busy with our operation after this. There are still more than fifty men outside. There is no place for you all to escape. Go back to your prison obediently. Perhaps you kids will be able to return home alive depending on your parents' attitude you know?」

The leader slapped the children with despair. He showed them the overwhelming difference in battle strength and also dangled a slight hope in front of their eyes. Natalia clutched tightly at the sleeve of Myuu's clothes. The other children were also snuggling at Myuu with scared expression.

Myuu looked over her shoulder to them, while showing a smile that had not even a speck of despair. It was a fearless smile that would make anyone gulped, her canine was exposed, her eyes were glaring with fierce atrocity, and her back was straight and imposing.

Myuu turned at the leader again, then stored "Donneer-Schlaag" into their holsters.

「That's right, that's how you——」

「Difference of strength? That's too much even for a misunderstanding.」

The leader took a step forward thinking that Myuu had resigned herself, but his step reflexively stopped from Myuu's words that interrupted his own words. At the same time, he saw the figure of Myuu quietly rising her hand straight up.

And then, the crimson jewel that was fixed on the ring finger of that left hand was beginning to shine for some reason. Noticing that the leader gazed in astonishment.

Myuu fearlessly grinned while resounding her words boldly.

「Since when, you are under the delusion that Myuu is alone?」

「Wh, at?」

Right after that, crimson light burst out. And then, the terrorists who pulled the trigger spontaneously witnessed it. The bullets they fired were blocked, not by invisible shield, but by physical obstruction.

Six metallic arms. Multiple legs like spider. On the back, on the front, were multiple weapons that looked brutal even just from a glance. Stylish head, and then eyes that suddenly flashed! Strange looking warrior with metallic composition——there were seven of them.

Walling in Myuu and the children, those bodies that boasted the greatest hardness blocked all the bullets, yes, they were……

——Grave Sin Squadron Demon Rangeeeerrr!!!!

DOPAAN! Out of nowhere smoke screens of seven color exploded, and the seven living golems took cool poses as they pleased.

Dumbfounded, amazement.

Without distinction of enemy or ally, all the human stiffened.

'Because, this is impossible mon!' It felt like such a tsukkomi of someone that had retrogressed into an infant could be heard from somewhere.

「If you want to stop Myuu, then at least prepare apostles of god in double digit number before speaking, nano.」

「Wwha-, wha-」

Myuu smiled fearlessly at the agitated leader while giving her order.

「Everyoneee~, kill them nano!」

“Aye aye, Ma’am–!!” As though saying something like that, the demon rangers saluted smartly with adoration, then at the next moment, *gashun* their weapons deployed with mechanical sound.

The curbstomp began, on the terrorist who was threatening their princess.

The two gatling guns that were attached to one body turned everything inside the warehouse into mere trashes, the small missile pods attached on the shoulders rained down missiles like a meteor shower and turned the area into sea of crimson until outside the warehouse.

Rushing around freely with high speed movement as though they were gliding using the rollerblade attached on their multiple legs, the portable Acht Acht as their back weapon and the super electromagnetic cannon fired. The opponent who carried explosive and launched suicide attack with the resolve to explode themselves was instantly cut into pieces using the laser blade attached on their two arms and many legs, the person who tried to use the heavy weapon loaded on the camouflaged truck was pulverized and sent flying together with the truck body by the giant stake “Pile Bunker” fired by a Demon Ranger who showed a jump that didn’t suit its large body.

「Impossible, America has, created even this kind of weapon-」

(I think, that’s absolutely not it……)

When the terrorist leader yelled that loudly while desperately commanding his comrades to fight back, Emile-kun whose father was actually a US army lieutenant general showed a dry smile while making such retort inside his heart.

「It’s that brat-, kill that brat! They should stop if she is dead!」

“Lucifeeer” and “Mamon” and “Leviatan” were already rampaged until outside the warehouse, scream and explosive sound echoed from outside. The leader who survived obstinately amidst all that glared at Myuu like a demon while shouldering a rocket launcher.

In respond to that, Myuu took one of the jewels that was fitted on the gun belt on her waist. It was a jewel that shined yellow like a topaz. But, inside that bullet sized jewel, some kind of geometrical pattern——a magic circle was carved in.

Myuu held that jewel using her index and middle fingers and thrust it toward the terrorist leader, as though to oppose the rocket launcher.

And then, she spun toward the world the power of words to cause a supernatural phenomenon.

「Order(Myuu commands)! Syvil Aul Tonitors(Get shocked by the golden lizard)!!」

At the next moment, the topaz emitted a golden radiance, and then in a flash that light emitted enormous spark while taking the shape of a huge dragon.

「Ah? Ha? Eh?」

While coiling above the head of the princess who had summoned itself, the dragon that was clad in golden lightning——the “Thunder Dragon” glared fiercely at the leader who was leaking out idiotic sound, right after that, the dragon raised an intense lightning roar.

「NOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOO-」

The leader raised a scream like a girl and tried to escape, but there was no way someone could escape the thunder dragon using human legs, the surrounding underlings were also got dragged into the roar and the dragon’s mouth snapped them up.

——Myuu’s exclusive use jewel type magic invocation artifact “Yue-oneechan’s Love”

This artifact would react to Myuu’s soul and power of words where she would then be able to use the magic that Yue sealed into specific jewel (one time use). The colorful jewels fitted into the gun belt in place of bullets were each charged by Yue’s handmade magic, and only Myuu could invoke them.

It was just like the magecraft that was used by a certain careless family some…… something like that was surely couldn’t be said. Before when Myuu was watching a certain anime she was saying「Jewel magecraft is really cool nano.

But, Yue-oneechan's magic is more amazing nano」. Even though this artifact was the result of Yue's affection that gushed out when she heard what Myuu said, but if it was said that there was no connection with that then there was no connection!

「Myu-myu-myu-myu, Myuu! Just now! Just noww! Ma, magic, magiicc!」

Natalia was getting all flustered while asking for confirmation that 'as expected, Myuu is a magician!' with inarticulate words.

「Uh huh, that's "Yue-oneechan's Love" nano.」

「Eh? No, that was magic wasn't it?」

「Uh huh, that's "Yue-oneechan's Love" nano.」

「Eh? Huh? Love? No, but magic……」

「As expected, that's "Yue-oneechan's Love" nano.」

「……」

Natalia's mind was in chaos! It seemed, that after guts, next Myuu was causing a supernatural phenomenon with love! 'Geez, isn't it fine already even if you confess that it's magic!' Inside her heart Natalia was shouting like that.

A hand was put gently on the shoulder of such Natalia. When Natalia looked back, there was the youth Emile beside her who spoke「Isn't it fine, love」with an enlightened expression. The capacity of the youth Emile seemed to have met its permitted limit since long ago. It felt like he could accept whatever was spoken or did as it was if it was by Myuu. For the time being, Natalia shut up Emile with her fist.

The screams of the terrorists stopped less than five minutes after that.

Myuu left the liberation of the children who were imprisoned at another room to Demon Ranger and she headed to the command room. There, she discovered her normal smartphone and sighed in relieve.

「Hey, Myuu-chan. This is……」

「Nmyu?」

The youth Emile was taking back his own smartphone while looking at the PC's

display which he pointed at Myuu. The PC was mostly broken, so what was projected in that display was only an image that stayed frozen but, what was reflected there, was the scene of a destroyed airport somewhere and a smoking stadium.

It appeared, the terrorists not only did the kidnapping this time, but they also performed terrorist activities at another places somewhere.

Myuu nodded with「Fumu」and walked away *tote tote* briskly, then she stood still beside the leader who was charred black while smoking up, though it seemed that the man was still barely breathing.

While Natalia and others were watching over Myuu wondering what she was going to do, toward the leader who was lying upside down unmoving, Myuu…… kicked his crotch.

「Ohooo!?」

「Quickly wake up nano.」

Leader-san opened his eyes while raising a queer shriek. He was writhing and rolling on the ground while pressing on his crotch. Myuu called “Satan” to pinion the arms of the leader to stop him from moving around. That figure who was limply restrained with his arms spread wide, looked like as though he was being crucified.

「Yo, you, bast——」

「Don’t talk as you please, nano.」

Saying that, Myuu once more launched a splendid yakuza kick at the crotch of leader-san.「Hahiiiiii」, leader-san raised a queer shriek once more from that. With the youth Emile as the first, the other boys were also turning pale with their hands pressing on their own crotch while standing pigeon-toed.

「The thing that is happening right now. Your plan, your objective this time, spit out everything nano.」

「Who, who will——」

Myuu suddenly took distances with brisk steps, then she took out the black whip “This is Weapon Desu” into her hand. And then, *hyun hyun* she made the

whip to move in spiral around her that caused sound of cutting air.

「I want you to talk nano.」

「Su, such, th, threat won——*aa*———!!?」

As expected, the crotch of leader-san who was refusing Myuu's demand while turning pale, was whipped hard by tip of the whip that was swung fiercely along with *hyun* the sound of cutting air. Leader-san who was shrieking, and the paling boys, and the girls who were staring fixedly *jii* at the event development from between the gap of their fingers of their hands that were covering their face.

「Now now, quickly speak nano! If you won't, then your son's life will be gone nano!」

「Thi, this, *DEMON* girl-——*Aa*———!!!」

「Riight, leeft, riight, leeft, nanoo!」

「Stoopp-, don't lay your hand on my son anymoreee-」

「Until, you talk-, the whip-, won't stop nanoo-」

「NOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOO-」

「Ora ora ora ora ora ora ora ora ora ora ora-, nano-」

pan-pan- bishiii, bashi bashi supaaaaa-, the whip became a black storm, however, with a superb strength management, "This is Weapon Desu" was torturing leader-san's son. To left and then to the right, the son was tormented with hellish torture as though it was receiving Dempsey Roll!

The figure of a male terrorist shrieking from getting his crotch whipped hard by a ten year old beautiful girl, was right there.

Before long, everything of the large scale terror plan this time was spoken from the leader who was weeping his eyes out *hics hics* while pressing on his crotch with his body rounding up like turtle. Myuu who listened to him then stored away "This is Weapon Desu" and walked toward the leader.

「I, I beg you. I've, talk already……that's why, please——」

Leader-san was earnestly entreating. The brutal haki that he displayed at first couldn't be felt at the slightest anymore. Toward such frail leader-san, Myuu

smiled sweetly like a fairy. Leader-san, and also Emile and others, were forming a smile that was colored with relive thinking that Myuu's forgiveness would be given……

「You can become a manly woman nano.」

「Wai-, do-, *AAa*————————!!」

A single gunshot roared. In this day, leader-san's son was called to heaven.

Blowing 'fuh' at the smoking gun muzzle, Myuu then turned on her heel while leaving a backward glance at the leader who didn't even twitch anymore. It caused the boys to curl themselves thinking「That's just too merciless」, while Natalia and other girls were sending Myuu heated gaze with red cheeks thinking「Myuu, how lovely……」.

Myuu who returned back to those children then took out her smartphone.

「Myuu, what are we going to do?」

「Tha, that's right. Terrorism is happening here and there isn't it? Quickly, we have to inform this.」

Natalia and Emile talked at Myuu, telling her that they had to inform to their father what was happening right now to the government.

「Nn. That's also good but, I think that surely they won't be able to do anything about the places that had been blown up already, or the plane that was being hijacked right now, or all those besieged soldier-san that are stationed at foreign country nano. If it's normally.」

Indeed, it was just as Myuu said, the current situation was grave. There were already several airports and stadiums that were blown up, there were also several planes that were being hijacked. Near the coast there was ship loaded with missiles in anchorage where it would soon fire toward a city, while the army that was being stationed at the country of the terrorists were currently even now being besieged and annihilated in an isolated situation.

In addition, the terrorists had another base other than this base, there were a lot of hostages that were being imprisoned there too, and it appeared that even an attack targeting the president was being carried out right now. It seemed that

the president was attacked when he was in the middle of returning to the White House from his outdoor official business in order to deal with these terrorism cases.

Like this it would be surely impossible to resolve everything without any problem. It was easily imaginable that from here on too, within a few hours there would be great damage that came out.

Yes, it was just like Myuu said, that was if it was normally.

Natalia and other children were showing anxious expression, however, Myuu was ahem-ing proudly while puffing up her chest before making a declaration with a voice that was filled with absolute confidence and trust.

「I'll call papa after this nano. That's why, everything is fine already nano!」

Part 2

jiriririririri, A ringtone of a black rotary-dial telephone ringing was reverberating at the living room of Nagumo household.

「Hm? Is that from Myuu? I guess right now is about time htat the party is over huh.」

The receiving phone was Hajime's smartphone. Hajime was smiling warmly from recalling his beloved daughter going out in high spirits all dressed up while taking his smartphone into his hand.

「Ou, Myuu. Is it the time to pick you——」

『Papaa! Right now, it seems that the world is in a pinch, so I want help nano!』

「……Yes?」

The first sentence of his daughter that came out from the smartphone caused Hajime to spontaneously leaked out an idiotic sounding voice. Yue, Shia, Tio, Remia, Kaori, Shizuku, Aiko, Liliana, Shuu, and then Sumire who were relaxing in the living room went「Oh?」and directed their attention to the conversation. Hajime turned the voice into speaker mode and then he asked just what did she meant.

『Uu~n, see, when Myuu arrived at the party I was then kidnapped by terrorist. At the place where Myuu was kidnapped, Myuu acted rashly. As the result of Myuu having ***a talk*** with terrorist-san's son, it turned out that the world is in a pinch. Right now that's how it is nano.』

「I see, I can understand……not-! Just what were you doing, that it become something like that……」

『Because Myuu is papa's daughter nano.』

「「「「「「「「「I see, I get it.」」」」「」」」」」」

Yue and others nodded deeply at Myuu's words. While staring at them all with reproachful eyes, Hajime changed his expression quietly.

「So? What do you want papa to do? I don't really get it but, Myuu had annihilated the kidnappers right? Of course I'll cover it up but, where do you want papa, papa and everyone else to go and what do you want us to do?」

『Ehehe~, as expected from Myuu's papa nano. Myuu love papa nano.』

Myuu hadn't gave any satisfactory explanation, but Hajime comprehended only the important point and left behind the trivial circumstance and instead asked Myuu's wish. Hearing that Myuu said such thing with a joyful voice. Since Myuu was an infant she had been straight with her expression of love like this, but recently, perhaps was it just Hajime's feeling, but it felt like there was charm that was excessively filled into her voice.

When Hajime took a glance at "all the onee-san", for some reason, all of them gave him a thumb up at once. Hajime could only smile faintly.

After that, Hajime used the compass and determined the locations of terrorism that were currently happening. He left the house sitting at Sumire and others before using crystal key to teleport to the locations all over the world.

Although it was unintentionally, but the terrorists had kidnapped Myuu and intended to publicly execute her important friend. And the wish of his beloved daughter to help with that……

For Hajime, the ideal or the sense of value or the objective of the terrorist organization was already something of no concern to him.

The one who indiscriminately scattered tragedy was them the terrorists. For the daughter of a monster to be included among those tragedies, and because of that it caused them to be exposed to irrationality, were nothing more than reaping what they sowed.

And that, would be proofed to them within the few hours after this.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

This became the last update by the end of the year.

Throughout this year, there were various things, like the publication or the completion of the main story.

The real life is always like real lifee, and the work is always seriously like workk, but thanks to Narou, and thanks of being able to have fun with all of your readers too, there is no doubt that it has been a fun year.

Narou-san, thank you very much!

Thank you very much for everyone who come here to read too!

Have a good new year!

And then, please take care of me next year too!

I think next week I can update at 6 P.M Saturday too.

Arifureta Chapter 189

Arifureta After – New Year Commemoration Happy New Year

AN: Happy new year.

I somehow wrote this chapter in the middle of the leisurely atmosphere of New Year's morning, while being buried inside kotatsu.

Recently, Yue component was few so……

If you like, please read it leisurely.

---

hou hou White puffs of breath dissolved into air. The cold air of the mid winter pierced the skin keenly, dyeing the nose tip and ears of the people who came and go to become red. The fallen snow playing the sounds *shak shak* from being stepped on and the icicles hanging down from the eaves of the buildings caused the people to feel the cold atmosphere of the few hours before the end of the year.

Although, if it was asked whether that coldness was also freezing the heart of the people who was coming and going through this place, then the answer would be no.

This place was a famous hot spring district. It was a tourist attraction that was colored with orange lighting and the white vapor of natural hot spring. Therefore, the people who were coming and going through the street that was lined up with street stalls and souvenir shops were mostly families or lovers who wished to welcome the end of the year in relaxation at this hot spring district.

No matter how low the temperature became, these people who were

snuggling close to each other wouldn't feel any coldness in their heart. When they came back to their inn, they could even warm their body in the hot spring.

Among those tourists, there were the figures of a pair of male and female.

「Yue, you don't feel cold? If it's necessary I'll take out an artifact you know?」

「……Nn. I'm fine. Winter is a time of cold. It's fine too to feel this cold air.」

「I see. Yeah, I guess so.」

A pair of lovers closely snuggling with each other——it was Hajime and Yue.

Hajime was wearing a moss coat with fluffy fur attached on the collar while Yue was wearing a cute duffle coat that was cream colored. Hajime and Yue were putting their hands inside the pocket and walking through the main street of the hot spring district at their leisure. By the way, the pocket that one of Yue's hands was entering was Hajime's pocket, naturally, their fingers were entangled closely inside that pocket.

「……Is this fine with Shia and others"」

「It's fine to be only the two of us like this occasionally. Or else, is it better if it's with everyone?」

Hajime shrugged his shoulders and answered like that toward Yue who was looking upward at him with her head tilted slightly. He strongly gripped the hand of Yue inside his pocket. He saw from the side that Yue's cheek which was facing down was faintly colored scarlet.

There was no need for answer. That gesture of Yue displayed her answer more eloquently than words. And then, there was no way Hajime wouldn't be able to comprehend Yue's wordless answer, their hands inside the pocket were tightly closing on each other's.

By the way, all members of Nagumo family came into this hot spring district. Unfortunately, Shizuku had a gathering in her family with all the disciples of Yaegashi dojo that was a custom every year, while Kaori's father was crying『Don't go, my angel!』while clinging at Kaori, so she could only see off Hajime and others tearfully without being able to participate this time.

And then, at afternoon Nagumo family finished their sightseeing and entered

the inn, then Sumire commanded ‘charge the hot spriiing!’at everyone of Nagumo family. Hajime used that chance to activate presence isolation at full power and secretly abducted Yue, and like this the two of them were enjoying the time of only the two of them after so long.

Currently, Shia and others who had noticed the fade out of Hajime and Yue were thinking「Well, perhaps it’s fine occasionally~」while they were turning boneless from the magic of hot spring. Of course, they intended to ask for compensation from Hajime later on.

「Oh, hot spring egg. You want to eat that?」

「……Nn? Soft boiled egg?」

「No, it’s a bit different from soft boiled egg. It’s white egg part is also soft boiled. Well, it doesn’t really sound like a big deal but, it’s standard good of a hot spring district.」

「I’ll eat♪」

Yue instantly answered. Yue was sensitive and also weak to things that were “standard” in earth. Her feeling of wanting to know about Hajime’s world even just for a bit more was making her to naturally lean toward that direction.

「……Hot spring egg, two of them. Please.」

The male worker of the stall petrified from seeing the soft smile of Yue who was humming cheerfully at the purchase of the hot spring egg. There was no need to even mention the reason why he petrified. Currently the two of them were more or less using magic to obstruct the recognition of other people, so the usual mass production of petrified people and people picking fight that normally happened when they were walking didn’t happen anymore. But, as expected when they were the one who was starting the conversation like this, that magic effect would get fainter in addition of seeing that smile of Yue from really close range.

While smiling wryly, Hajime lightly emitted “Pressure” that he had fine tuned. The male worker returned to his senses with a ‘hah’, and then with a bright red face that looked like boiled shrimp, he handed over two small cups and two hot spring eggs in a hurry. It seemed they could choose whether to crack the egg

themselves or made the worker to crack the egg fir them, but Yue chose the option of doing it herself.

They moved near the trash box where they could throw away the egg shell and there Yue tried to crack the hot spring egg on the cup that Hajime was holding with her fingertips trembling. Her expression was absurdly serious. Her spirit conveyed that she wouldn't let even a single fragment of the shell to fall off. The expression of Hajime that was watching such Yue was actually looking warm.

「……Nn-. ……Jiggle jiggle.」

Yue stared fixedly at the hot spring egg that jiggled when it fell on the cup with a splat. Then Yue guided Hajime's hand and made him to present in front of her eyes the cup that he was holding on his other hand. It appeared that Yue would also crack the egg that was Hajime's share for him.

Yue was staring at the hot spring egg challengingly with a seriousness that was even greater than previously. Hajime's expression was increasingly slackening watching that.

「Nn-. The egg is splendidly cracked.」

「Thank you for the delicious material.」(TN: I don't know what joke material Hajime is referring here to.)

Both of them cracked jokes at each other and then chuckled, then they ate the hot spring eggs with small spoon.

「……It's syrupy. Also it's really, thick.」

「Isn't it. Looks like they are using egg that is relatively good compared to its prices. If salt is sprinkled on this, then perhaps the taste will be locked and become tastier.」

Hajime immediately took out salt made at another world from "Treasure Warehouse" and sprinkled it on the egg. As the result, the expression of Hajime and Yue clearly turned into broad smile.

The two of them looked satisfied after finishing eating, but when Hajime saw Yue, he slipped out a chuckle. Yue tilted her head slightly.

「At the corner of your mouth, there is egg yolk left.」

「……Embarassing.」

Yue tried to wipe off the egg yolk with reddened cheeks, but Hajime's fingertip stretched faster than her. His index fingertip softly crept on Yue's lips. 「Nnu」For some reason Yue leaked out a captivating voice and before Hajime's finger could deal with the left over egg yolk, that fingertip got nibbled with a snap.

The soft and warm sensation of licking tongue on his fingertip caused Hajime to look troubled. Graphic sounds *chupa chupa* even began to be audible, so Hajime forcefully pulled out his finger.

「Muu, even though it was delicious……」

「Bear in mind about the TPO(time, place, occasion). We are smack dab in the middle of hot spring district, at the New Year's Eve. I don't want to my lover to become an erotic terrorist in that kind of place. There are already victims over there you know?」

When Hajime turned his gaze, there the worker-san of the hot spring egg stall before this, and the couples who were similarly enjoying hot spring eggs like Hajime and Yue nearby, they were all simultaneously averting their eyes. While the male camp was strangely crouching a bit forward.

「……I'm sorry. Looks like, I got too high spirited in this date with just the two of us after so long, 」

「Those were really joyful words. Anyway, let's move on. Let's look around leisurely while eating. It's New Year's Eve after all, so there are a lot of stalls. Also it looks like there will be firework matching with the countdown at the riverside ahead, surely we will be able to have fun there.」

「Nn-. ……Ah, but, the end of the year is——」

「Together with everyone, right? I got it. I will take Yue around only until before the countdown. As expected, if we neglected them alone until the change of the year, then Shia and others will snap.」

Hajime shrugged, but he had already resolved himself to give compensation to Shia and others. This was also the so called duty of a real harem man. ……Though if other people was asked of their opinion about this kind of resolve that would make anyone speechless, then it felt like they would say things like『Get stabbed

a hundred times over』or『How about you try dying for once?』.

Like that, the two of them began to walk around the hot spring district leisurely once more.

For a bit they fed each other 'aa~n' with the foods of the stalls, relaxing on a footbath while snuggling closely to each other, taking commemoration pictures at places they got attracted to……each time of that, they were mass producing merlion that was spitting out sugar even while not particularly doing anything special, they were really passing their time leisurely.

And then, about the time when it was about one hour before the changing of year, both of them finally arrived at a bridge where they could have a good view at the fireworks. It was an arching wooden bridge with romantic appearance. Its handrail was colored scarlet and it was maintained really well.

Yue was settled on Hajime's bosom snugly with her back leaning on Hajime's chest. Hajime's both hands were reversely put into Yue's pocket this time, and then like it was only natural, their fingers entwined with each other inside.

「This is our first New Year's Eve since coming to this world huh, Yue. So what do you think, not even a year has passed but, this is more or less a turning point. Do you think you can get used to it in this world?」

「……? Getting used or whatever, any place where Hajime at is the place where I belong. That is the best place for me. I have no feeling other than happiness here.」

「Aa~, that's not what I mean.」

Hajime's expression turned itchy from Yue's words, then he placed his chin on Yue's head and rubbed his chin there. While listening at Yue chuckling from feeling ticklish, and then he asked again his question with the intention of asking whether she was simply forcing herself or not from the changed environment or if she felt any inconvenience.

「……Nn~. Not particularly. Regarding the returnee, the society is still in uproar. It feels inconvenient in that kind of meaning, but everyone is also feeling it similarly. The prospect of resolving it can be seen, so it doesn't feel like a problem. Rather than that, there are a lot of things here that doesn't exist at the

world over there, so there are a lot of times where I feel fun.」

「I see. I'm glad hearing that. After all I don't want Yue to feel stress or anything. It is the world that is bad if it cause you any stress. If you feel any inconvenience then I'll reform it no matter what method I have to use, so just tell me anything without holding back okay?」

「……Fufu. I won't hold back at all toward Hajime. The time you are changing the world, let's do it together?」

Maou and vampire princess was making terrifying talk nonchalantly. At this moment, surely world-san was feeling a chill and twitched without doubt.

Time was flowing away gently for a while without any words. The stream of the small river, the snow that beautifully colored the blackness of the night sky, and the clear air were felt by the two of them. There were also other people at the surrounding, but it was like only the area around the two of them was like a separate world that was cut off from everything else. Solemn and silent, sweet and warm, it was such a world.

But, at that time, from afar「Yue-san yaa~I, Hajime-san yaa~i」「Papa-san yaa~I, onee-chan-san yaa~i」, familiar voices that sounded a bit theatrical could be heard. Hajime shrugged「Looks like time's up」toward Yue who was looking up at him from his chest.

While the two were like that, *pata pata* sound of footsteps resounded, Shia who was giving a ride to Myuu on her shoulder was rushing toward the two of them while she was waving her hand around together with Myuu. From behind those two, Hajime and Yue could see Shuu and Sumire, Tio and Remia walking toward here.

「I found you nano, phantom thief papa. Obediently get handcuffed nano!」

The moment Shia arrived at Hajime's side, above Shia, Myuu pointed sharply while saying such thing. That dramatic gesture of his beloved daughter caused Hajime to chuckle while tilting his head.

「Phantom thief papa? Just what are you accusing me of stealing?」

This time it was Shia who answered. Her finger pointed sharply just like Myuu.

「Phantom thief maou. You have stolen something really enormous. Yes, that is my Yue-san desu!」

「Yue, you, since when you belong to Shia?」

「Since around a hundred millions and two thousand years ago?」

「Thank you for the lovely material.」

As expected the whole Nagumo family was smeared with material. Shia and Myuu were bulging their cheeks while pleading that this time they wanted to be the one kidnapped.

「Oi oi, calling me kidnapper and so on, that sounds bad in people's ear you know. You don't think that Yue was slipping out voluntarily with me?」

Hajime seriously in all seriousness used his presence isolation in full throttle and full power, he instantly carried Yue and escaped. Shia and others should be unable to reject the possibility that Hajime and Yue were slipping away as accomplice. Hajime was thinking like that and asked with a mischievous expression, but Shia was looking blankly at such Hajime.

「He? Because, Hajime-san. Didn't you normally *erase* your presence, then carried Yue-san under you arm and jumped out from the window?」

「You, don't you notice the contradiction inside your own words? Even though you understand that I vanished, just how are you able to grasp the detail until that much?」

「About that, like this, it just suddenly came into my rabbit ears. The rest was by me confirming it myself with a sidelong glance I think. Even though Hajime-san was fast but it wasn't as fast as railgun anyway, so it's possible to confirm your escape using eyesight.」

「……Is that so. You are a bug character……」

Hajime was plainly feeling down from his super high speed secret action that he performed with his all getting detected normally like that. And then, he recalled how at their recent training so that their skill wouldn't dull, Shia was casually evading electromagnetically accelerated bullet with normal eyesight. Hajime once more sent Shia an exasperated gaze due to that bug character

behavior.

Like that, without change Hajime didn't let go Yue from his bosom, Myuu was clambering up on Hajime's back and secured her designated place on Hajime's shoulder, then Tio and others who caught up snuggled close to Hajime, Shuu who was looking forward to the naked socializing with his son after so long sent a sulky gaze at Hajime who was feigning ignorance while Sumire was cackling from witnessing that, during all that the countdown to the new year was finally beginning.

Facing the beginning of a new year, the vapor of the hot spring district was rising high.

Hajime and others also let out their voice for counting down the seconds. This was the first new year for the group members that originated from another world. Each second Myuu's feet went taut, her toes were tensing straight while she was showing a wide smile, Shia was equipping the artifact of recognition disturbance while the illusion hiding her rabbit ears went off, showing her rabbit ears jumping around *myon myon*. Tio was looking up to the sky with a deeply moved expression and Remia was smiling from watching over her beloved daughter's high spirit. Shuu and Sumire quietly linked their hands together and snuggled on each other watching over their son and daughters-in-law that were like that.

A beat later, the countdown reached zero.

「「「「「Happy Neeeeww Year!!!」」」」」

At the hot spring district, the yell of the people celebrating the new year reverberated. At the next moment, at the night sky of the hot spring district, *dodon* flowers of light bloomed along with reverberation that shook until the bottom of one's stomach.

「Papa, happy new year! Nano!」

「Ou, happy new year Myuu.」

Myuu tightly hugged Hajime's head while saying that, hearing that Hajime ruffled Myuu's head with one hand while returning the congratulations.

「Very happy new year, dear. From here on too, please take care of me along

with my daughter okay?」

「Yeah. Happy new year Remia. Take care of me this year too.」

Remia gently touched her hand on Hajime's back while sending those words to Hajime along with a calm smile, then Hajime also looked across his shoulder and replied to her calmly.

「Gohujin-sama. This year too I beg thou for a lot of puni——ehem, a lot of reward.」

「Don't try to varnish it over, you pervert. Later I'll promptly give you the first punishment of this year, so prepare yourself.」

The pervert was shuddering all over.

「Happpy~ Nee~w Yeea~ar desu. Hajime-san. Let's enjoy this year too a lot okay!」

「Looking at the result, you who in a sense is the one with the straightest common sense has helped with a lot since we returned to this world. Thanks. This year, I'll take you to a lot of fun places more for sure.」

Hajime's words caused Shia's rabbit ears to happily flap up and down.

「Hajime, this year too you have perpetrated various things, but just spare me from you disappearing all of a sudden anymore okay?」

「Right right. It's fine for you to go anywhere, but at that time take us along too with you. Especially when you are going to Tortus okay! Okay! Over there is a treasure box of material! No need to even mention everyone of Hauria clan, but even Gahard-san is unexpectedly a material character isn't he. Especially when he is in front of Hajime and Shizuku-chan. I want to meet him again~」

「Tou-san, I got it already. Also, Kaa-san. Stop toying with Gahart. Spare me from an aged middle-aged man clinging on me tearfully.」

Shuu was sending a gaze that was a mix of worry and anticipation, while at his side Sumire was speaking of something terrifying. The emperor of the empire seemed to be fated of getting thoroughly embarrassed by the whole Nagumo family. Already, once when Hajime went to Tortus while taking along Shuu and Sumire, it had become a famous story how Gahart became a shut-in due to

Sumire's persistent and tricky interview to him.

「……Hajime.」

Yue who was at Hajime's bosom looked up while calling on Hajime who was exchanging words with everyone. When Hajime turned his gaze at her, Yue's eyes stared fixedly at him. It was as though she was ascertaining something. As though she was thinking of something. Her eyes was like a movie film, it was as though memories were streaming in succession inside.

Before long, Yue returned her gaze on the fireworks. Then with a calm and mysterious voice, with the sound of the fireworks smoothly fading, she formed her words.

「……It might be too late for saying this, but it somehow strange.」

「What is?」

「……Nn. At the bottom of the abyss, the journey with the resolve to turn the world into enemy began. But, when I noticed there are a lot of important people around me, while I am celebrating a new year at a different world like this staring at the flowers of night sky.」

「That's right isn't it.」

「……Seeing objectively, the bitter time in my life is overwhelmingly a lot. Getting saved by Hajime, meeting with everyone, knowing about the truth of Ojii-sama, and also spending time with my new family like this, looking from the entirety, all of those is equal with a blink of eye. Like a dream.」

「……」

「……But, my feeling is the reverse. It feels like the long nightmare vanished and gone instantly like a bubble, and like this I am enveloped in happiness, as though this is how it has been all along.」

Hajime strongly embraced closer his lover inside his arms, who was mysteriously colored with the illumination of fireworks light.

Yue's gaze, that was surely staring at somewhere different inside herself even while it was reflecting the fireworks, returned to Hajime once more.

「……The world is unreasonable, irrational, and absurdly malicious. But, surely

at times, it will give a considerate arrangement to those who do their best. Meeting with Hajime, I came to think like that.」

「I see. ……I guess so. Surely, it's just like you say. No matter what happened, if you struggle, then surely, anyone is able to reach this kind of place in due course.」

「Nn-」

Hajime softly dropped a kiss on the forehead of Yue who was looking up at him. Yue's expression melted limply.

Even in earth, there was still a mountain of troubles. And then, surely in this new year there would be new unreasonable and irrational and malicious fate lying in wait for them.

But, surely, the world would show its kindness to those who struggled. Yes, they believed in that, whether Hajime or Yue.

Yue was feeling the heat on her forehead while running her gaze toward Shia and others too. And then, toward the family who responded to her gaze, toward her beloved people Yue showed them her greatest smile and gifted them her words.

「……Thank you for everything. Please take care of me from here on too.」

AN: All of your honored readers, Narou-sama, and everyone else, thank you very much for everything last year. Please take care of me this year too.

Tomorrow there will be update too.

Arifureta Chapter 190

Arifureta After – As the Daughter of Demon King Part 3

AN: Update even at 6 P.M. New Year……is nice isn't ittt.

In a room of a certain building, a fierce gunshot sounds reverberated. A past middle-aged man with ruffled silver-gray hair was confirming his smartphone with an expression as though he had bitten something bitter.

「No good. As expected, there is interference. What about the others?」

「No, it's no good. The transmission device is also not reacting.」

「Mine too……president.」

A black person clad in black suit holding a hand gun shook his head while answering. It was exactly as he said, the man with silver-gray hair was the president of America. He received terrorist attack at the upper level of a skyscraper where he was undergoing a concealed official business, and he somehow managed to escape and survive thanks to the do-or-die spirit of the secret services.

However, they were unable to escape from the building itself, their communication was also being interfered with, and like this they were hiding themselves in one of the room. Although, their opponent was a few dozen terrorists that were fully armed. In this situation where they were unable to expect reinforcement, it was clear that it was only a matter of time until their fate ran its due course.

The president——Artold Schwarnenegger, could feel the sound of the god of

death creeping up gradually from behind him.

「……The existence of the person who leaked out the information need to be dealt with but, it looks like, our lives will run out first before that huh.」

「Something like that……」

「But, we ran out of bullets already right? You all have done well. George, Chris, Bacchus, Keyes, Neil, Hank……you all have protected me well until now. It's an honor for me that I can fight together with all of you at the end.」

「President……no, we are the one who is honored.」

The president smiled calmly while holding out one of his hand. The male secret service who was called George, instead of handshake, he handed over his spare gun toward that hand. It was because the gaze of Artold was demanding for that.

It was exactly as he said, he was planning to fight until the very end. He was a former commando, even with his age that was nearing fifty year old but seeing his body that was still clad in muscles that looked like armor, he wouldn't drag the others down. Not to mention this was the man who was once called as the "End Bringer", a man who had amassed numerous legends behind. It was impossible for him to just sit around waiting to be killed.

Artold and George nodded at each other. But, right after that, 「Gaah」a pained voice was raised and Bacchus somersaulted from the other side of the door and returned inside the room. Looking at him, his stomach and shoulder were fiercely bleeding. Furthermore, 「Shit-」along with such cursing Neil who was shouldering Keyes also entered. It seemed that Keyes also had his stomach shot and his consciousness was already hazy.

The front line holding back the armed group from the corridor outside to come inside the room had crumbled. At the next moment, *kon*- with that light sound a black object was thrown into the room.

「President-, get down-」

「tsk」

George threw his body in order to cover for the president. Chris covered over

the two of them further to turn his body into shield.

At the next instant, explosive light and sound trampled inside the room. All the people inside the room were feeling a sensation of weightlessness, perhaps from having their body getting blown away, at the same time their breathing got blocked due *to the impact from below* toward their body.

「Gehoh, gehoh?」

「Guu, aa? We are alive?」

「-, what? How?」

Even though there should be a grenade that exploded from really close range, but they were surviving normally with only feeling dull impact and explosive sound. That situation caused Artold and others to make dubious face while looking up. And then, their eyes opened wide in astonishment for sure this time.

「The, the room is different?」

Yes, exactly like those words implied, what the eyes of Artold and others were witnessing wasn't the scene of a room that was trampled by explosion, far from that the scenery of the room was completely different from the room they were in just before.

Suddenly, a clear voice called at them who were being dumbfounded.

「I'm glad, Looks like I made it in time.」

「-, yo, you are……」

The surprised Artold turned around, and there he witnessed a further unrealistic sight.

At the window, with a beautiful black hair in a ponytail that was swaying due to the wind from outside, and a black katana that was held in one hand, there was a dignified female of orient——it went without saying, that this was Yaegashi Shizuku. (However, this was the recognition obstruction glasses equipped version)

「I have you all fell to the lower floor by directly cutting the ceiling. It was a rough method, but because this is an emergency please forgive me okay?」

「Ye, yeah. Eh? No, cutting the ceiling?」

「O, oi oi, this is a lie right?」

Artold's mind was in chaos, while George was lost for words when he looked up. Up there, certainly there was a ceiling that was cut off in triangle shape. When he then turned his gaze under their feet in fluster, there was the fallen floor there, and when he further ran his gaze at the surrounding, there were also Neil and others at a bit of distance who had also fallen into this lower floor with them.

「Just who in the world——」

「I'm sorry, but there is no time to explain. Go to the corner of the room right now.」

The president was overpowered with that strong tone that didn't tolerate any question. But, at the same time the hunch that it would be bad to stay where he stood pushed his back, and he dragged off Neil and others to the corner of the room along with George. The swiftness of that decision was just as expected from the person who stood at the top of a country and his bodyguard.

Right after that, multiple masked men peeked down from the hole at the ceiling. And then, they saw Shizuku who was grinning and they gazed with puzzlement for a moment, but they immediately aimed their gun at her. But, before the triggers of those guns were pulled,

「——Sword Draw – "Flash Cut"」(TN: Battou – "Zendan")

The drawing hand couldn't be seen. The blade also couldn't be seen. There was just a small whisper at the same time where Shizuku's left hand that was clutching the sword hilt turned hazy. However, the result was an obvious phenomenon——it was displayed by the collapse of the ceiling.

Along with a thunderous roar, the terrorists who stepped into the room upstairs fell down along with the ceiling. There was no way they could land properly, the terrorists tumbled down unsightly. At the next moment, *chin*- a clear sound entered their ears, and like that their consciousness fell into the darkness.

「President. I heavily acknowledge about how you must be brimming with

questions and how suspicious I looked, but if you want to survive then please believe in me. I will protect you.」

「……」

The situation was too absurd. Was this reality? The beautiful woman who appeared before his eyes, was she actually the personification of devil, and she would demand an enormous compensation in exchange for her help? Such questions were running around in his mind. But, he had no option. If he was only looking at the fact that was currently happening, putting aside the impossible phenomenon, they were certainly being helped.

Then,

「Got it. I'll follow what you are saying.」

「How decisive. Then, give the people over there this——」

Shizuku's words cut off at the middle. She could hear a lot of footsteps from the corridor coming here.

「President, please give this medicine to them.」

Shizuku took out magical recovery medicine from her "Treasure Warehouse" and threw them to Artold. Artold opened his mouth about to say something, but before he could do that, the door was knocked down and bullets assaulted inside the room.

Like that, what he could hear next was *gin gin gin gin*- such a hard sound. The jaw of Artold and the others dropped down comically. It was understandable. After all, countless beautiful curves were drawn on the air, at the same time remnants of bullets were getting scattered at the surrounding.

Consecutive god speed sword draw. From a glance, they could only see Shizuku standing still holding a sheathed katana, but when they looked carefully Shizuku's right hand was blurring. That was exactly the proof that even right at this time, the small pebbles that were attacking with speed surpassing sound were being slashed apart altogether.

There were no way the terrorists could comprehend the abnormal situation occurring inside the room, even so, the terrorists who sensed that their target

was still going strong inside the room kicked open the door and tried to charge inside.

But, within an instant, Shizuku drawn out her katana with a large motion. She didn't immediately sheathed back the katana just like before, the blade of the black katana that was being swung could be properly seen.

After that, what could be heard from outside the door was thudding sound of collapsing bodies.

——Yeagashi-style Katana Art – Black Katana Kata Secret Technique "Zenith Severing – Soul Demolition" (TN: Shizetsu – Hakuhou)

Ignoring all the obstruction in the path of the blade, this technique cut only the target that was aimed, regardless whether it was the flesh or the consciousness. Against the current sword art of Shizuku, the option of blocking couldn't be taken. People who couldn't evade would have everything of theirs that were aimed by Shizuku to be cut apart by that one attack without harming anything else.

Shizuku quietly closed her eyes and searched for any presence. The presences that she captured, were seven in the same floor.

「——"Zenith Severing – Soul Demolition"」

The sound of drawn sword that was like the ring of a bell rang once more. At every direction, invisible sword flash penetrated every obstruction and severed the consciousness of the lurking terrorists. Surely they felt it, the sensation of cold blade caressing their inside, just before their consciousness was severed. And then, they surely hallucinated it, the scene of their body bisected into two.

「President. All the attackers of this floor has been suppressed. They won't wake up for a few days, so when you have time sends someone to apprehend them. Wait, just what are you doing! If you don't make them drink the medicine quickly, they will be dead for real you know! Now, don't just getting dazed like that and move, move!」

「Ah, yes.」

It was an unbecoming response for a president. Artord made Keyes and others drank the recovery medicine with a mechanical movement and expression that

was still dumbfounded. After the medicine was taken, the bleeding of Keyes and others stopped, and their complexion was clearly becoming better. Witnessing that, Artold couldn't do anything anymore other than laughing dryly.

「Well then, let's go. I will guide you all until the first floor like this. Right now there are terrorisms being carried out toward this country everywhere, so please quickly return to White House.」

「Ah, yes. Thank you, very much.」

The man who was once called as the "End Bringer", a former commando, and the one who stood at the top of this country, seemed to have become a mere yes-man.

After that, the terrorists who had half-occupied the skyscraper and were moving to murder the president were annihilated by Shizuku using slash that penetrated the wall, or by a charge after cutting apart the wall and hitting them with the back of her blade, or by flying kick or slap, or by slap after making them lost their spirits seeing their bullets got cut apart. Then Shizuku succeeded in escorting Artold and others safely to the White House.

It went without saying, that due to Artold and George and all others the surviving secret services, the black haired samurai girl became a hot topic not only at White House but also all over the world through mass media.

At the same time while Shizuku was slashing apart through the terrorists attacking the president, at a certain airport.

That airport became the target of terrorist similar like several other airports and got destroyed, currently the site had been transformed into a picture of hell in pandemonium. Here and there fire was bursting, crying and yelling voices were reverberating, and the rescue squad was trying to rescue the people who were buried alive under the rubbles in desperation.

At that place, there was nothing but despair. There was not even a single factor that could be a salvation, inside the destroyed airport there was a spreading hellish scene that could only be expressed using the word tragedy. Everyone understood that.

「Aa, damn it……」

A young man from the rescue squad was desperately performing first aid at the heavily wounded infant before his eyes while cursing with a face that could break into tears anytime. The bleeding was not stopping. Torn apart arm, deep wound on stomach……he couldn't stop the bleeding no matter how much he was treating the injuries. And then, the blood that was flowing out was exactly the life of that young child, the child's face was already colored by the shadow of death.

The child couldn't be saved. Such feeling beat down the young man from inside his body. Inside this maelstrom of tragedy that was like the personification of hell, this young man was completely powerless. Just why the hell he joined the rescue squad? Even such thought was passing through the back of his mind.

「I don't care who, someone, please help. Please, just help this child.」

While talking to himself like that, only his hand was continuing to keep moving following his training. However, reality was ridiculing the result of the young man's effort. Right now, in front of the eye of the young man, the light of a small life was vanishing.

His hand stopped, the young man hung down his head crestfallen. His head understood that this wasn't the time for this. Right now, there were still a lot of people waiting for help other than this scattered life. Even so, he couldn't put strength into his four limbs.

The young man looked up to the sky, with expression and tone that could be thought as hatred, as courtesy, as escapism, or as prayer,

「……God……I beg you. If this voice can reach you then, please save this child……」

He whispered.

At that moment,

Pure white light poured down from the sky. It was powerful like a flash, however, it was soft and gentle like a moonlight. Such light, all of a sudden, without any advance notice, was pouring down, enveloping the whole airport.

And then, right after everyone looked up to the sky wondering what was happening,

「Wha-, th, the airport, is vanishing!」

「Ju, just what is, that!?」

「What!? Just what is happening!?」

People unanimously yelled. The pointed their finger, with a shocked state and while getting half-panicked they turned their gaze, and there, indeed, just like those words were saying, an abnormal situation was occurring where the destroyed airport was vanishing into dust from the top as though it was going through an accelerated weathering.

The great mass of the rubbles that were touched by the pure white light were vanishing without effecting the surrounding people at all.

「O, oi, that-!」

「A person? No, but, he is floati……wait, wings?」

Someone noticed the silhouette that was descending slowly from the sky. But, they hesitated whether it was really okay to call that silhouette as a person. Even though there was no parachute that could be seen, even though descending down slowly from the sky itself was already an extremely strange phenomenon, that silhouette was even witnessed of having pure white wings.

The people was in stupor from the disappearing mountain of rubbles and the winged silhouette descending from the sky, it was at that time

「——The wind of blessing to the children far and wide, the light of salvation driving away the calamity——”Mighty Breeze of Turning World”」(TN: Kaiten no Ibuki)

Such prayer was echoing with a voice that sounded like a ringing bell. Right after that, every single person was wrapped in pure white light. Without any reason, emotion of relieve and joy was welling up in the heart of the people. Without any reason, they understood. That currently, they were being aided by a large existence.

「Aa, good lord……」

The young man was trickling tears while his gaze turned toward the child that was already gone.

There was a miracle there.

The arm that should have been lost was returning to its former shape as though going through a rewind, while the injury on the stomach was healing in the blink of eye. The expression that showed the color of the shadow of death was changing into gentle color with good complexion.

Right now, from the site where the rubbles had been completely erased, the buried people who were lying down on the ground were showing their figure, and as expected they were being healed into perfectly good health from being enveloped in pure white light.

The airport site was flooded with light of miracle. The people were following the hard to describe great impulse that they couldn't hold down and shed their tears.

Before long, all the wounded people were healed, by that time the space around the silhouette in the sky undulated and like that the figure was quietly vanishing along with the space.

「Angel……」

「Oh god, my greatest gratitude to you.」

The people who were left behind was shedding tears that weren't stopping while offering their feeling of gratitude with words or with the whisper inside their heart, toward the angel that caused the miracle and the god who sent her.

……Actually, that god, was the man that was called as the godslaying maou and so on, while the angel was the mistress of such maou……such thing, no one would even guess it even in their dream.

After that, the angel that was Kaori flew around to all the site that became terrorist target and healed absolutely all the victims.

Through the internet, a certain recording was being broadcasted to all over the world in real time. The place that was reflected in the recording was a large room

that was painted pure white, with small children whose head were covered with cloth made to kneel. There were about forty children.

Surrounding the children, were masked terrorists holding rifle, they were staring at the scared children with cold eyes.

With those children and armed group as the background, a terrorist was standing in front of the camera while unfolding a speech with smooth tone. The content of the speech was bullshit that didn't worth listening. Something like the vested interests of the large country, or the god that they believed in, or the liberation of their compatriots that were being held in injustice, or the simultaneous terrorisms that were carried out as the punishment of not recognizing their grievance, or the withdrawal of the stationed army, the contents were things like that.

And then, the people watching the recording began to harbor suspicion「This is, not a trick?」while the government officials were gritting their teeth watching the children of their country was going to be publicly executed. In front of all of them, the terrorist speaker commanded his subordinate to drag one of the children in front of the camera.

「The judgment ceremony that will be carried out after this, everything, is the proof of the sin of you all. Carve it into your heart, you foolish people.」

The terrorist put a large knife on the neck of the kneeling child. If that knife was pulled back, then a tragedy that even the word tragic would be insufficient for it would spread in front of the camera.

The common public reflexively covered their eyes, while the government officials yelled「Stop-」even knowing that it was meaningless. Perhaps guessing those reactions, the terrorist's cloudy eyes shined darkly with unbearable joy, and he put strength into the knife his hand was gripping,

「Now, judgment's ti——」

「Time to stop, desuuu——!!」

The man was sent flying. The beautiful woman with faint blue hair that leaped into the room from the pulverized wall along with a thunderous sound made the man ate a jumping kneepad on the back of his head. The man was spinning in

midair.

dokusha With such graphic sound, the terrorist crashed on the wall at the opposite side. Blood was flowing like river from his eyes and nose and ears and mouth while his body was convulsing *twitch, twitch*.

The common public, and also the government officials had the same feeling. That was,「What the hell happened!?」.

「Hey hey, you criminals. This lovely rabbit ear onee-san, will give you all a beating all over. Have you all resigned yourself desuu!?」

At that moment, rabbit ears appeared from the head of beautiful woman with faint bluish-white hair, at the same time, a huge war hammer materialized from empty air that caused a sudden gust when it was swung.

The gust toppled the camera down and the recording became sideways with blurred image but……

「GIIYAAAAAH」

「BUBERAH」

「GOBOSUH」

「KUPEH」

Such sounds that sounded like scream along with crash sounds resounded, and then, a masked man flopped down in front of the camera with the white of his eyes exposed, and the people who was watching that recording guessed. That the beauty with rabbit ears growing on her head just now, was beating up the terrorists using that huge hammer.

Before long, when all sounds were dying down, the white eyed terrorist that was lying down in front of the camera got blown away with terrific force, and in place of that terrorist a white slender beautiful leg was projected.

「Ee~, I think that you all are likely to hear this, the people of the government? Anyway, all the criminals in this base has been all beaten up for the time being, so please quickly safeguard the children. Very very please okaayy~」

With such words as the last, the recording cut off.

The people who were watching the recording were all dumbfounded while they sputtered out「What the hell?」

A few minutes after that, at another place, a different terrorist with similar background of children hostages were about to recite out his principle and position「We are~」, but「CHEEESTOOO——!!」as expected a rabbit ears beauty leaped and curbstomped that place.

Such scene repeated for three more times in succession after that but……the government officials who narrowed down the places where the recordings were taking place were all greatly cocking their head in puzzlement. After all, each of the terrorist bases were all separated with great distance of more than a hundred kilometer, thinking from how the recordings were all taken in real time, it was unimaginable that the same person could run around to all those places in such time limit.

「Just who in the world, that woman is……」

That was the honest feeling of all the people watching the terrorists' recordings.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Today I updated even in 6 P.M.

My writing brush is moving and moving by its own will writing the curbstomp drama. When I noticed it felt like it will easily surpass 20,000 characters……. If, next time, I don't make it in time at 6 P.M., I will split it further and posted it even if it between 8 until 9 P.M., and finish the compilation of demon king's daughter before the day is over.

It's new year after all, even updating in one sitting is okay isn't it.

Arifureta Chapter 191

Arifureta After – As the Daughter of Demon King Part 4

AN: The second chapter for today.

There is the third. Pay attention.

Ten kilometers above the sky.

There was a jumbo airplane in that sky. With sea of cloud below, while the powerful jet engines were rumbling loudly, the plane was heading straight for America.

But, the flight of that airplane was in a situation that wasn't normal at all. It was because there were multiple fighter aircrafts following behind that airplane from slight distance. It wasn't because there was near miss between planes or because this airplane was actually the exclusive airplane of the president. The reason why fully armed fighter aircrafts were flying behind passenger airplane keeping watch was one.

It was for the sake of shooting down the airplane in the worst case, before damage could be inflicted to the country. Because an airplane that was hijacked by terrorist wasn't any different with a flying cannon shell possessing great mass.

Yes, that passenger plane was currently being hijacked by terrorists. Due to the terrorists that somehow slipped handguns aboard the plane, inside the plane was now being ruled by nervousness and fear.

「Oi, you……」

「?」

Everyone was staying quiet, only waiting for this fearful time to leave. A passenger businessman stole a look at a patrolling terrorist before calling with a small voice at the young man across the pathway beside him.

So that he wouldn't be standing out, the young man only lifted up his hanging down head slightly. When he directed a glance at the businessman that was calling him, immediately after a small paper scrap was thrown on the lap of the young man.

The young man was startled and he directed his gaze at the businessman, but at that time the businessman was already looking down and sitting quietly on his seat, as though nothing had happened.

The young man was feeling a sensation of cold sweat going down on his back while being careful of the patrolling terrorist, he spread open the folded paper scrap inside his palm.

——17:35

There was only that written on the paper. Normally such writing would be too cryptic, but the young man felt a shock as though electricity was running through his body. He guessed it. The written time which was ten more minutes from the current time, was the time where the situation inside the plane might change greatly.

With a glance, the young man gazed at the businessman at his side. The businessman also moved his gaze without moving his face, and gave a small nod. The will to rise in counterattack in order to resolve this hijacking incident, existed in that businessman.

Most likely this paper had gone not only to this young man, but also to other people. It was unknown who was the one that started circulating this paper, but the person who dispatched this paper, should be expecting for even one more people to answer the call.

Surely it was because that person had vaguely guessed the objective of the terrorist, that he decided to make a sink-or-swim gamble. In the recent news, there was an abundance of topic regarding suicide bombing. The features of the terrorists' face obviously looked like the characteristic features of the people of the country where the famous terrorist organization that was reported everyday

in news belonged. In that case, it was possible to imagine the worst case regarding the objective of this plane hijacking.

The young man, thinking that they would die anyway if this situation kept on, scolded his heart that was withering in fear and nodded briskly at the businessman. And then, in order to increase the number of courageous comrades even just by one, he secretly handed over the paper where the time for counterattack was written to other person.

Before long, inside the plane where eerie silence was ruling, the watches of the passengers were about to reach the time that was written. Tension was suddenly rising. Beside the young man, the businessman was wiping the sweat on his forehead. The young man also understood really well that feeling. Their fate might be decided at a few minutes later. The tension the businessman was feeling wasn't something average. The young man himself was feeling the sweat that was trickling down on his back and neck and the feeling of his body growing cold.

But, at that time, the back of the plane suddenly became noisy. Angry yell and scream, and then *pan* the sound of gunshot resounded. The young man lost color. It finally began.

The young man and the businessman, and then several men——a father with family, a middle aged male who seemed to ride the plane with his wife, and so on, they were looking for chance while their face was straining with tension.

And then, the terrorists who noticed the strangeness at the back of the plane rushed from their post while saying something, it was at that moment

「UOOOOOOOOH」

「Hold them down-」

「Steal the gun-」

The passengers who had conspired beforehand simultaneously revolted. One of the terrorists who turned his back was tackled from behind, the tackler desperately held down the hand of the terrorist who didn't let go of his gun even when he fell. One other terrorist, when he turned his gaze at his tackled comrade he was also immediately wrestled by the father with family who was right at the

terrorist's side and both of them fell on the floor.

It became noisy inside the plane. At the same time, the hope that perhaps at this rate they would be able to subdue the terrorists, were beginning to spread between the passengers.

But,

pan-

A single gunshot resounded, at the same time, the businessman who was holding down a terrorist slumped down while groaning. And then one more shot. *pan* A gunshot resounded, and the father with family who was holding down another terrorist screamed and fell.

Immediately, the terrorists punched away the other passengers, and then they further shot with their handgun while cursing and standing up. The young man who was similarly shot on his leg was making a pained voice while turning his gaze, and there he saw the figure of a flight attendant holding a small handgun.

「No way……why……」

The young man leaked out a bewildered voice. That was only natural. The flight attendant was a blonde haired Caucasian, no matter how he looked her nationality was different from the terrorists.

Due to the feature of the terrorists and the everyday news, the passengers were completely under the impression that the terrorist organization was made up from the race of that country only. But in fact, the terrorists had took methods of abducting people of various countries which they brainwashed, before they returned the people to their original country in order to cooperate with the terrorisms, so terrorists were not necessarily limited to the race of only that country.

「Father-, father-」

「Dear-, hang in there-」

Anxious voices mixed with scream reverberated. Looking there, a young girl and a mother were crying while clinging at the shot father.

The male terrorists who were swearing while venting their anger at the

revolting passengers, the moment they saw those family crying, their expression changed into something ugly as though to say that they had found a good target to be made into lesson. They then walked toward that family.

「The sin of treating with disdain our kindness of making you all accompanying us in a honorable death is heavy. Just die meaninglessly, along with your whole family.」

The terrorist aimed his handgun at the family. The shot father, even while his expression was growing pale from bleeding too much he desperately tried to cover over his daughter and wife.

Everyone imagined the tragic end of the family. The fact that their revolt ended in complete failure would be planted inside the passengers with this public execution.

But, when the terrorist was about to pull the trigger, suddenly gunshot thundered at the back of the plane. The terrorist's hand stopped moving due to that sound. However, guessing that the same thing like here was happening at the back, he immediately put strength into his finger on the trigger.

Right after that, gunshot sounds in succession could be heard once more. The terrorist's movement stopped once more while thinking that they were being really flashy at the back there. At that time, the terrorists who were in this area were believing without doubt, that their comrades were also making example at the back there.

After all, there was also brainwashed conspirator from other country hiding back there too, so no matter what happened they could launch surprise attack, there were also more terrorists that were stationed at the back compared at the front here. Regarding the consecutive gunshots, there were a lot hot-blooded guys among the terrorists, so the terrorists here thought that it was because of that.

「Oi oi, just what are those guys doing back there?」

「……Yeah. As expected they are shooting too much. Just what are they going to do if a stray bullet hit the window.」

The terrorists looked at each other's face dubiously. The cause of that was

because of the intense shooting sound that was reverberating even now.

The objective of the terrorists was a suicide attack at the capital of America using the hijacked plane. They couldn't let the plane to crash until then so they had to pay meticulous attention even when they were using gun. Yet regardless of that, right now the gunshot sounds audible from the back of the plane made them think that the shooter wasn't making any consideration like that, instead it sounded like a shooting that was done in desperation to death.

「Oi, Nadim, Karim, what are you all doing? Report the situation.」

Because the front and the back area of the plane were partitioned from each other and they couldn't see what was happening, they were unable to grasp the situation by eyesight. And so they used communication device to contact the others, but what they could hear was only「Impossible-! What, is that-」incomprehensible voice that was a mix of terror, unease, and confusion.

「Oi, Nadim! Just what is going on! Report-」

『A woman is-, it's impossible-! The gun doesn't work-. The blonde woma——』

The voice of the man called Nadim cut off. At the same time, the fierce gunshot sounds also stopped.

An eerie silence enveloped inside the plane.

The terrorist who was staring at the communication device gave a signal using his gaze at the other man and the flight attendant. Both of them nodded and aimed their gun at the partition toward the back area.

『This is Yosef. Saeed. What happened to Nadim and others? Just what is happening over there?』

The communication from the terrorist comrade that was occupying the cockpit came. The door to the cockpit was solidly closed, it had been arranged previously that the door couldn't be opened no matter what happened at the passenger area. And so, the terrorist who introduced himself as Yosef didn't come out from the cockpit, but he could still communicate and asked for report that the other terrorist couldn't ignore.

Furthermore, Yosef was able to accomplish the trespassing into the sturdy

cockpit that normally couldn't be opened by any mean in the middle of flight, was because beforehand the terrorists had taken the pilot's family hostage. The pilot who was pressed with mortifying choice, even while vaguely understanding that he would be killed anyway in the end, even while comprehending that the option would only worsen the situation, but when he was shown the image of his young son's soft skin being pressed with a knife, he finally chose to obey the terrorists. The one who carried the guns inside the plane and opened the cockpit door was also the pilot.

「I don't know. We will confirm it now.」

Saeed said that, and then he approached the partition to the back area while readying his gun.

But, before he reached the partition, the cause of the abnormality finally arrived from the other side. A slender finger peeked out from the edge of the partition, and then like that the partition was casually opened wide.

「Oo」

「……」

For a moment, Saeed forgot even the situation and leaked out an admiring voice. The other male terrorist was also wordless, but his eyes opened wide in obvious shock.

The one who showed her figure from the back area, with smooth and fluffy golden hair fluttering, crimson eyes narrowing with sleepy look, was a peerless beautiful girl that was like a bisque doll. It went without saying, that it was Yue in girl mode.

In order to trample all the scheme of the terrorist and made all of their action to become meaningless, she boarded the hijacked plane using space teleportation.

Yue's eyes ran through the terrorists in turn. Saeed whose gaze met Yue's felt his body temperature rising against a girl who could only be seen as a girl in the first half of her teen. Even though the appearance of this girl could only be seen as a small girl no matter how he observed her, but the atmosphere she was clad with was the personification of bewitchment itself. It felt like he was an insect

that was lured by an insect trap, if he let his guard down then it felt like he would assault the girl while staggering on his feet.

Yue turned his gaze at the family who was trembling at Saeed's feet. The family was also directing dumbfounded gaze at the beautiful girl who suddenly appeared.

「……It's fine.」

Yue smiled at the little girl who was clinging on her father and gave her those words. And then, casually, without any wariness, she walked toward the family.

That extremely defenseless figure reversely caused Saeed to return to his sense, then his gaze moved toward the back area through the opened partition. Over there was……

「-, What, are. What are you doing……Carlo-」

There, he saw a scene of his comrade on his knees, strangling his own neck by himself. It seemed that the man was already unconscious, the white of his eyes was exposed while foam was coming out from his mouth. It was really an abnormal scene.

「……I'm no match for Kaori, but this much is no problem.」

Saeed returned to his senses once more due to that voice which came from below him. With a 'hah' he lowered his gaze, there the figure of Yue holding her hand over the shot father, and the figure of the father enveloped in faint golden light could be seen. It was as though time was being rewound, the blood was flowing back into the wound of the father before the wound was visible closing. The bullet that entered the body was also pushed out from the wound and fell down with a 'plop'. The mother and daughter were dazed, staring at that miraculous scenery.

Yue who ascertained that the wound had been closed quietly stood up. She was just right in front of Saeed. Perhaps because he had witnessed unimaginable scenes one after another, the inside of Saeed's head was already all messed up.

Even so, his long years of training and experience of terrorism that he had moved his body on its own accord, telling him only that the too beautiful girl in front of his eyes was a threat for him and his comrades. His gun muzzle aimed at

Yue's head and his hand thrust forward the gun.

「Yo, you, just who in the——」

「……All of you too, it's fine already.」

Even with gun muzzle thrust at her, the girl didn't show even a bit of agitation. Rather, Yue who looked like she didn't even acknowledge his existence caused Saeed's expression to cramp.

Yue who acted as though she was not concerned of Saeed waved her fingertip like a baton and scattered golden light. After that, the businessman who was on the verge of death from heavy wound, the young man, and the other passengers who participated on the revolt had their wound healed similarly like the father just now. It didn't stop there, even the people who had already lost their life had their heartbeat brought back and they recovered their consciousness.

For the passengers, that was exactly a scene of miracle.

But, for the terrorists, it was a scene of nightmare.

Therefore,

「Kuh, this monster-」

pan-, Saeed pulled the trigger and the bullet flew toward Yue. It was a shot that was impossible to miss from this close range. Everyone's mind showed them the scene of death where the brain of the girl who manifested this miracle would be splattered from her head.

But,

「Such, thing……impossible.」

The bullet stopped still at the space in front of Yue. In the air where there was nothing, as though something soft was blocking the way, without any change on the shape of the bullet it was floating still.

Yue's gaze was turned at Saeed once more. There was no emotion at all in those cold eyes. The moment Saeed saw that, he was made to understand whether he wanted or not. That for the girl before his eyes, he was something without value, just like the pebble at the roadside. There was no meaning in him getting born, he brought nothing but harm by living, just a hindrance to be

removed, he would vanish without anyone even lifting an eye of it……that was the kind of existence he had.

「Uh, aaAAAAAAAA-」

His very existence was rejected. That terror, that humiliation, caused Saeed to burst. From very close range, he continued to pull the trigger like possessed. Following after him, the other terrorist and the flight attendant also aimed at Yue and fired.

The passengers screamed. However, that too happened only for a bit. When they saw that all few dozen of bullets were floating still midair around Yue, their scream was gradually dying down.

Saeed and others desperately changed their handgun's magazine and continued to shoot until all the bullets that they had ran out.

Like that, *kachink* such transient sound echoed. The handgun that had its top slid back still, informed them of the end. Yue who was completely unmoving during all those slowly ran her gaze through Saeed and others. The bullets floating around Yue fell on the floor all at once and scattered. And then, a word.

「……so?」

「-」

「Ua……」

「Hih」

Saeed and others staggered backward. Their handguns fell on the floor with a thump. Already there was only fear that could be seen in their eyes.

「You are, you are, what are——」

「…….You have no need to know. For now,『Shut up』.」

「-」

Saeed's mouth opened and closed trying to ask Yue's true identity. But the moment Yue told him「Shut up」, his voice couldn't come out. While Saeed was staring in a daze, Yue's words came out further.

「……『Kneel』」

Saeed and others simultaneously kneeled. There, Yue let out the finishing——”Divine Statement”.

「……『Slowly strangle, your own neck』」

Until the end, Yue’s crimson eyes possessed no color of emotion at all toward them. That became the last sight that Saeed and others saw.

Yue’s gaze moved toward the last enemy, toward the terrorist who was occupying the cockpit. And then, when she walked toward the solid door between her and the cockpit as though such thing was only something trivial,

DOGOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOON-

「-」

Fierce shock and thunderous sound assaulted inside the plane. Right after that, the plane tilted down with a jerk, and oxygen masks fell down from overhead all over the place. The passengers screamed. The passengers who were seated at the back area witnessed black smoke spouting out intensely from the two wings of the plane and their face turned pale all at once.

It appeared that all the four engines that were installed on the plane were destroyed. Perhaps it should be said that it was a miracle that the wings themselves were still intact. Or else, perhaps it had been calculated to end like that.

Yue’s gaze quietly narrowed toward the cockpit. The cause of this was obvious. The last terrorist judged that at this rate there was a high possibility the suicide attack to America’s capital would fail due to the abnormality happening inside the plane, so he activated the set up explosive.

As a matter of fact, this was the third hijacked plane that Yue had boarded and suppressed. The judgment of Yosef that was made with great resolve was surely because he was thinking that even if the plane he hijacked himself couldn’t fulfill the objective, there were still the other hijacked planes. Rather than having this plane completely suppressed and then taken back, he would prefer to crash this plane down sacrificing the many American passengers, bringing as much tragedy as possibly for America. He didn’t directly destroy the body of the plane and instead only the engine, was surely because of his thinking of making even

greater damage by choosing the place where they plane would fall.

「……Nn, this is my error. I'll balance this mistake.」

Right after Yue was talking to herself like that, she used "Heaven Existence" to erase her figure from inside the plane.

「Am I, dreaming?」

The one who muttered that in a daze was the pilot who was following after the passenger airplane. There was a voice demanding situation report resounding from the radio, but the pilot didn't have the composure to answer that.

But, surely it would be cruel for anyone to criticize the pilot for that. The reason was, because at the end of his gaze, there was the blackly smoking plane that had just been falling due to the sudden explosion which was then enveloped by golden light at the next moment and continued to fly straight even now, it was because of this extremely absurd sight that caused the pilot to be like that.

And what caused the pilot's gaze to be nailed in place, what forced him to be dumbfounded, was the figure of a girl standing on top of that airplane. A person was standing on top of a plane that was flying in high altitude——even though just that was enough to make him doubted his own sanity, there was also how that girl was enveloped in the same golden light like the plane and furthermore a pair of shining wings were spread from her back.

Perhaps noticing the gaze of the pilot, the golden girl——Yue turned her face at his direction. And then, she suddenly showed a smile. ——The fighter aircraft jerked violently. The pilot was pressing on his chest as though he had been shot through by something. He should quickly grasp the control stick instead of that.

Yue who returned her gaze to the front then normally began to walk on the plane, as though the wind resistance and the temperature had no effect at all. She got down in front of the cockpit.

「A, a girl? No, but, eh?」

「Wha-, wha-, wha-wha-wha-wha-」

The pilot who was bleeding from his head and Yosef were making really funny faces. The copilot was lying down from getting shot. It seemed that he was still

barely breathing, but perhaps he could only kept his life just for a few more minutes. Yue, while being enveloped in golden light too, quietly pointed her fingertip at the copilot.

Immediately, a faint light enveloped the copilot and healed his wound.

「Yo, you are-. This, monster-」

Yosef guessed the reason why he couldn't contact his comrades at the passenger area and raised a trembling angry voice. And then, he aimed his handgun at Yue who was outside the cockpit and he was about to pull the trigger. He planned to crash this plane anyway. After this far he wouldn't even hesitate about something like breaking the window of the cockpit.

However,

「……『Don't move』」

「-」

Naturally, his movement was easily stopped. The pilot was bewildered at Yosef whose movement hardened with a snap like a stone. But, at the next moment, Yosef's figure vanished into thin air.

Yue teleported him. That Yosef the appeared right above the plane at the blind spot from the cockpit. Yes, he appeared at the outside of the jumbo airplane flying at the altitude of eight kilometer with speed of few hundred kilometer per hour. Furthermore, he was looking up with his hands spread apart as though he was being crucified, he was completely attached on the top of the plane.

「……Die while freezing.」

Yosef opened wide his eyes. Normally a normal human would immediately lose consciousness in this condition, but savagely he was given protection of cold and oxygen supply, so he wouldn't die that easily.

Yue softly flew backward. She flapped her golden wings and then she was flying while matching her speed with the airplane speed. Looking from the point of view of the pilot and the copilot who had recovered his consciousness, it looked like there was a girl floating casually in front of a flying airplane.

Yue floated a smile at the two people who was staring at her in astonishment

and,

「……Do your best.」

After saying that, her figure vanished with a puff.

Even after Yue vanished, the plane was still enveloped in golden light. There was only one engine that was still operating, but the plane could still maintain its altitude. The difficulty of the piloting was going up, but mysteriously the two pilots didn't feel any anxiety of the plane crashing.

「……William. I am a criminal.」

「Captain……」

The pilot was holding the control stick while squeezing out those words from his throat. Hearing that, the copilot William made a complicated expression that couldn't say anything. From the conversation of the terrorists, he had guessed that the pilot's family was kidnapped and he was threatened that his family would be hurt right in front of his eyes. Perhaps because he could see the expression of the pilot that was filled with bitterness, that even now after he almost just died William was unable to say any word of vilification.

The pilot told to such William.

「But, god has told a criminal like me, live. Do your best, deliver the passengers safely home. If you cannot agree with this, then I'll stay quiet and yield the control to you. But, if——」

「Captain. I too have a family. If my son meets the same experience like your son, a confidence that I can say that I'll prioritize the passengers still……is something that I don't have.」

The words of the pilot were cut off in the middle by William. And then, he nodded with a serious expression while returning to the copilot seat. That gesture indicated more eloquently than any words, that he would leave this plane to the pilot one more time.

「……My thanks. This is, my last flight. No matter what happen, I swear I'll land this plane safely.」

「It's going to be fine, captain. After all, the protection of the goddess is with

us.」

「Yeah, you're right.」

The captain's face warped difficultly. That was a complicated expression that was a mix of relieve and regret, gratitude and apology, and various other feelings.

(Goddess. Please I beg you no matter how shameless this sound. My family…….please-)

The captain couldn't help but pray like that in front of the miracle that he witnessed.

Half day later, the tattered airplane that was enveloped in golden light safely landed. In the middle of the airport that was in uproar due to the unprecedented situation, the captain who was receiving questioning heard how his family was saved by a rabbit eared beautiful woman. And then, he became a zealous believer of the golden goddess and the rabbit eared beauty.

AN: As I thought I need to split it.

I'll update at 8 or 9 P.M.

Arifureta Chapter 192

Arifureta After – As the Daughter of Demon King Part 5

AN: This is the last for today.

I cannot write anymore……

So far as it goes, today I have posted 2 chapters before this chapter (Part 3, Part 4), so please pay attention.

Part 1

Offshore America East Coast.

There a large cargo ship was anchored. It was an unregistered cargo ship, so the coast guard immediately rushed to the ship and called at it, but there was no reaction. The coast guard kept calling for a while, but not a single response was given, with no other way left the coast guard decided to board the ship.

It was at that time, several people appeared at the deck of the cargo ship. The coast guard spontaneously stopped moving and called at those men. However, those men didn't respond at all and instead took off the sheet that was covering over the cargo that was placed on the deck.

「-, those guys, are they sane-!?」

One of the coast guard turned pale while cursing. That was only natural. What appeared from behind the sheet that was taken off was a missile launching pad. At the same time, the men——the terrorists leaned their body forward from the deck. What was held in their hand was familiar weapon for the coast guard.

「-, Get back-」

When the coast guard captain yelled that, it was at the same time when the terrorists pulled the trigger. Violent bursting sounds rang consecutively, *poshu*- along with such stupid sounding sound, the grenade launcher that was attached on the rifle mercilessly lobbed explosive on the coast guard ship.

Several people got caught in the explosion and they fell on the coast guard ship while screaming. Next the steering room erupted in flame.

Naturally another coast guard ship returned fire, but the attack of the terrorists that was fiercer than their imagination made the coast guard unable to get near. They called for reinforcement from the navy, but in the end whether the navy would make it in time or not before the missiles were launched to the

city was……

「Shit-, don't-. Stop itt-」

Several of the coast guard yelled. Right at this time their beloved birthplace the coastal city was about to be destroyed. Thinking about the range of the missile, it could aim at anywhere at the coastal city. At the place the missile landed, perhaps there would be their acquaintance, friend, lover, or family there.

But, emotionlessly, a mechanical operating sound was reverberating while the missiles were aimed toward the coastal city, and then……they were launched.

From the multiple launching pads, a total of six missiles were flying toward the city.

「Aa……how can this be.」

Someone whispered with a tragic voice.

Like that, the missiles crossed above the coast and kept flying toward the center of the city, it was at that moment,

GOU-!!

Black flash cut through the sky. A very thick laser that no one had ever seen except in SF movie, suddenly flew out from further behind the cargo ship.

The black laser instantly swallowed the missile that was at the very right, and then the laser was mowing horizontally and annihilated all the missiles.

The coast guard and also the terrorists felt the same astonishment from the unimaginable happening. As though they had made arrangement beforehand, all of them similarly turned their head at the direction from where the laser came with botchy movement *gigigi* that was like a machine that hadn't been oiled, and gazed there.

There, ahead of their gaze, the sea was beginning to swell up as though a mountain was forming. Like that, what appeared from there was……

「GO, GOZIRA-!!」

A dragonified Tio. By no meant it was Godzio. But, with that appearance it couldn't be helped even if they thought like that. Dragon eyes with vertical split

on its pupil and jet black scales. The sharp fangs lining up in a row. Such monster was appearing while stirring up the sea!

Like that Tio spread her wings and flew up, then she descended toward the terrorists who were staring vacantly with mouth wide open. And then, ignoring them who was screaming, Tio's sharp claws pierced the hull of the cargo ship and she lifted the ship up all at once.

The terrorists were screaming while firing bullets and grenades at Tio. Having an experience of fighting giant monster was an experience that was too valuable in a sense, however, the fact that they couldn't make a single scratch caused the terrorists to exposed their expression of terror.

『Foolish people. Thou can cool down thy head a bit.』

Suddenly a majestic voice came down from the sky, it was at that moment that the ship was powerfully thrown. The cargo ship fell on the coast while the terrorists were scattered out from the deck like snack scraps. The ship split into two along with a thunderous sound.

『I guess these gentlemen will have question, that's why I will go easy to *all of ye.*』

The voice poured down once more, and then within an instant, thunder fell on the cargo ship from empty air. Thunderous roar and lightning trampled the coast. The terrorists inside the cargo ship were grandly electrocuted and collapsed without even a single exception.

Right after that, a slight sound was reverberating. It was something like the sound of flight that was created by an aircraft. When Tio turned around, she could see a large missile coming at her.

Actually, further offshore there was a ship that was loaded with long range missile standing by. The cargo ship at the coast was also acting as decoy in this attack at the coastal city.

『How lukewarm. Thou foolish people can perish.』

Such attack couldn't even be considered as attack. Tio who proclaimed that opened her jaw wide open. Inside, a black light of ruin was converging.

Right after that, the second dragon breath was fired. The breath instantly reached the missile and annihilated the missile without causing any explosion, continuously it impacted the ship that was anchored at several dozen kilometer from here.

Just before the breath impacted, the terrorists who were on board of that ship saw the black wall approaching toward them. There wasn't even time for them to pray to their god. Right after they was aware that an incomprehensible black shining wall was approaching near, everything was blown up altogether along with their consciousness.

Tio who finished firing her breath gave a glance at the coast guard members who were unable to stand up due to fear, before she used regeneration magic and healed the wounded. Even people who had stopped breathing were also similarly healed by soul magic's resurrection.

The scene of their comrades enveloped in black light before their wound was closing up was truly far removed from reality.

In the eyes of the coast guard members, the pure terror began to be replaced by awe.

『O protectors, be strong.』

Tio left those words and began to dive into the sea once more.

The coast guard members sent their salute while staring wholeheartedly at the greatness of that figure. No matter how separated from reality this happening was, no matter how atypical the existence of this figure, it had protected, saved, and gifted them with valuable words. There was not a single person who stopped saluting until Tio's figure vanished from view.

And then, with awe and respect, they called that name.

「Thank you, Gozira.」

In a ruined city at a certain country in Middle East. Currently an American army was stationed there. The reason of their stationing there ranged from apprehending or killing the leadership of terrorist organization until the humanitarian aid to the vicinity.

If it was normally, the evening was supposed to be the time when the army would distribute food ration that was done twice a day even while staying alert of terrorist attack. The army garrison should be crowded with the local residents visiting for getting water or food, or visiting the army medical facility to have their injury treated.

However, in the present,

「Reinforcement request from east gate-. Many are injured. Delta and Zetta are almost isolated-」

「Take some men from the second division-」

「Enemy tank appear at the west gate-. They are receiving concentrated fire-. Request for air support-」

「Someone-, three people got done in-. Send the medic-」

「South gate, they can't hold on anymore-」

The bellows of the American soldiers, the fierce gunshot sounds, and the thunderous sounds of explosion were everywhere.

The America army base of this city right now was in the middle of receiving large scale attack from terrorist organization.

The base that were using several buildings of the city, surrounded with barbed wire, was now receiving simultaneous attacks from east, west, south, and north of the city. Because the attack time was matched with the ration distribution time, there were already many of the citizens that got involved and departed to the next world.

Although the American army immediately evacuated the people who barely got away from the disaster into the base and the soldiers quickly fought back, the fierce attack which was to the degree it made everyone wondering if this was actually the gathering of all the war potential of the terrorist organization, caused the American soldiers to fall behind and they were forced into a hard fight.

「Shit-, is the reinforcement still not here-. At this rate……」

The leader of this base, Armando Aston's fist hit the desk of the command

room loudly. Aerial bombing toward the enemy force was already impossible because the enemy's distance to the base was too near. There was one other America base at the scale of one division at the neighboring city, it would take them twenty minutes for the reinforcement to reach this city. If they used combat helicopter then it would be even faster but……without crushing the enemy's anti-air weapon first, it would be too dangerous for the helicopter to give their support.

In the end, whether this base could hold out the defense until the reinforcement came or not was……Armando scowled with impatience and he roughly wiped the unpleasant sweat that trickled on his jaw.

But, at that time a fierce impact sound attacked the command room, cloud of dust was scattering down from the ceiling. Armando who almost stumbled unintentionally held on the desk and braced himself while「What happened!?」yelling angrily at the communication officer.

A transmission that deepened the impatience of Armando further entered from the radio.

『The enemy, they have a great number of unmanned attack aircraft-! Currently the east gate is receiving aerial——』

「Impossible, just how far those guys had prepared their equipment-. There is no intelligence about that at all! Just what was the intelligence department doing!?」

After hearing the cut off transmission, even while understanding that this wasn't the time, Armando still spontaneously cursed. He immediately gave instruction but……in the back of the mind of everyone in the command room, the word "annihilation" was floating.

Like that, Armando was considering whether he should abandon the citizens and instead escaped from the city even if they had to bulldoze their way through. While understanding how low the success rate of doing such thing and the risk that they might lose their great cause for deploying their army in this foreign land, he was still about to make that decision. It was at that time, *hyuuuuu* an ominous sound of something cutting through air entered his ear.

「-, all hands, get down-」

Armando's immediate instruction made the surrounding soldiers went pale while they dived on the floor. Right after that, a violent impact and thunderous roar assaulted all of them. Their consciousness was shaken as though they had been entered into a mixer and got whipped up.

「Guh, someone-, situation report-」

Armando was feeling painful ringing in his ears with his hand pressing on his painful forehead. He somehow stood up and looked around him. And then, a part of the ceiling crumbled down, the scenery of many of his subordinates crushed under rubbles, and the sight of the outside that was completely visible from the blown up external wall entered his eyes.

When he got outside with staggered steps, he could see the many black smokes rising from the south gate. And then, he witnessed the enemy tank force advancing while crushing the cars and humans on the street, they were flattening people underneath like bug while forcing their way through.

The south gate was broken through. In the end, just what happened with the unit that defended that spot……

「……To all hands, retreat by following the judgment of your own commanding officer while maintaining your force as much as possible. We are abandoning this base. Aim to link up with the third battalion that should be heading here.」

Armando who was speaking that into the communication device was quietly watching the countless tanks that were approaching from the other side of the street while running over everything in their path. He made a bitter smile. He ridiculed himself, at how powerless and incompetent he was.

And then, he saw the tank that was running at the lead moving its turret toward him, or more accurately at the command room behind him, and he discerned his end.

「……You demons. Even though I am an incompetent, but my country is different. Someday, the hammer of god will——」

DOGOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOON!!

A terrific impact rushed through, cutting off Armando's last words. The tank's shelling——wasn't the cause, instead it was the sound of that tank getting

pierced by a jet black stake three meter long.

「Fue?」

A stupid voice leaked out from the middle-aged man named Armando.

His shock was only natural. The movement of the tank force of the terrorist organization was also stopping.

While the time of the battlefield stopped, on top of that jet black stake, without anyone knowing just from where he could possibly come, a single young man landed down with a thud. Young, with a face that looked oriental, it was a normal young man that seemed like could be found anywhere, if you didn't see the giant things on his two hands that seemed to be weapon that couldn't possibly be carried by flesh and blood human.

While everyone stopped moving, that young man——Hajime shouldered the pile bunker while his right hand casually lowered down the gatling gun, and then he opened his mouth with an expression that was like a yakuza.

「Now then, it will be a curbstomp after this, but is there anyone who want to surrender? Good, there is none huh. Then, die.」

In this battlefield where sounds of gunshot and explosion were still knocking incessantly on eardrum, for some reason those words could be heard clearly as though it came right from across communication device. Hearing those words, Armando and several of the terrorists made a retort in their heart「Fast-, you've got no intention of listening right from the start right!?」but……at the next moment, such voices of heart were sent flying.

Along with the situation, where the tank force was literally sent flying.

DOU-DOU-DOU-DOU- Such consecutive heavy bass sound and *DURURURURURURU* such peculiar rotation sound, those sounds were the indication of the pile bunker stakes that were fired rapidly and the crimson swarm of bullet cutting through the air becoming countless flashes that were like meteor.

The two ton stakes that were fired six times per second pierced through the tank with a force that made the tank looked like toy and pulverized the tank crews inside one after another, the gatling railgun was instantly changing the

buildings into scraps just like paper scraps while mercilessly changing the terrorists that were at the other side into meat lump.

「We surrender-. Stop it-」

Several of the terrorists riding the tanks came out with both their hands raised. This was honestly unexpected, because he thought that these people were all having martyrdom mentality. And then, Hajime who received the surrender proclamation was,

「Eh? What did you say?」

While saying something that sounded like a deaf protagonist that came out in a gal-game somewhere, he fired his pile bunker as though he hadn't heard anything at all. The tanks somersaulted midair from the impact. The man who declared his surrender was squashed underneath red stain was spreading.

「Wh, why-. You heard already that those guys are surrendering right!?」

One of the terrorists raised his voice at Hajime's unreasonableness. In respond to that, as expected Hajime without even replying properly……

「No negotiation with terrorist. This is the international common sense. Don't you know that?」

「A surrender declaration, is not negotiation right!?」

If it was asked whether that statement was too much or not, than it was too much. However, the terrorist couldn't even object for the second time, he received the strafing of the railgun and ended up as mere pieces of meat.

「Chih, they are like bugs huh. I don't like those guys who only swarm with number. Annoyingg.」

The tank force that broke through the south gate which should be called as the greatest land battle force of the terrorist organization was literally instant killed. Hajime who did such thing stored away his gatling railgun and pile bunker, and then he kicked on the building wall and jumped to the rooftop, and then following the rooftops he reached the rooftop of the highest building in the city.

Armando who saw that sight with faint smile,

「……It appeared, the salvation isn't bestowed by god, but by demon, huh.」

Whispered such thing.

Hajime fired a lot of missiles from the rooftop using “Agni-Orkan”, the fire trails of the missiles covered the sky of the city like spider web. The unmanned aircrafts were easily shot down, next grand explosive sounds could be heard resounding from everywhere in the city.

After that, Hajime who annihilated the large scale troops of the terrorist organization next operated his smartphone to activate the satellite artifact “Bel Agarta” (By pouring down light exposure that had been enchanted with regeneration magic, it would regenerate the target at the above ground. Hajime developed it so it was possible to immediately heal his friends and family even when they were far away) that he willfully launched in stealth mode using space magic until above the satellite orbit before this, and healed the American soldiers.

Looking at his subordinates that should have died coming back to life (It was impossible for those who had died too long), at the enemy force that was easily returned to ash, and at Hajime who interrogating several terrorists before leaving the battlefield like nothing happened and vanished, Armando could do nothing except laughing.

Armando who later returned home to his country, even though he was a pious believer of god, but his tendency that was starting to have excessive interest to demon greatly worried his family and colleagues but……that was another story.

On the other hand, Hajime who had asked about the current whereabouts of the leadership of the terrorist organization from several of the terrorists attacking the city, teleported to that place.

The location seemed to be a suite room at a high class hotel at the capital. Surely the choice of this location came from the thinking that the possibility of aerial bombing was gone in this location where there were a lot of common people, making it into a safe place.

It seemed that they were reserving the whole floor as their base, thinking from the extravagant terrorist force just now, it appeared that the terrorists were in possession of considerable financial clout. Actually Hajime became curious about the connection of the terrorist with that area.

Hajime who ignored the front desk and directly teleported to the floor advanced through the corridor with brisk steps. Then, men who seemed to be guards immediately pulled out their gun——faster than them, Hajime floored the guards with double lariat.

While confirming that the presences inside the room suddenly became noisy, Hajime kicked open the splendorous door with yakuza kick. Immediately countless bullets rushed at Hajime. While carelessly warding off the bullets with his left hand, Hajime entered the room with a rude entrance and,

「Who the hell are-gobohaa-!?」

The first thing Hajime did was launching yakuza kick at a middle aged old man that seemed to be the terrorist leader. The man seemed about to say something but, he was made to swallow his words back so it was unknown what he was going to say. Even terrorist wasn't a match to the approaching old age.

The people around the middle aged man were about to fire at Hajime further, but as expected Hajime's slap was overwhelmingly quicker. The guards were all artistically rotating twelve times midair before getting floored, or getting buried into the wall, or breaking through the ceiling and lost consciousness.

「Now then, old man. You are the mastermind of the simultaneous terrorisms this time huh?」

「Guh, gohoh, you bastard——」

The yakuza kick burst on the middle aged man's solar plexus for the second time today. Trampling on the middle aged man that was vomiting while screaming with a voice that normal people wouldn't be able to endure, Hajime grinded his foot further as though to add on the pain.

「Well, it's actually inconsequential whether you are the ring leader or not though. I'll have you spit out the information about the shitty bastard financing you all here.」

The middle aged man who seemed about to prattle "Who will tell you huh!" got the muzzle of Donner pressed hard on his forehead by Hajime who searched for the company and person who were financing the terrorist organization.

「Wait, you, do you understand what is the meaning of this revolution? The

exploitation by America is——」

「Aa, enough about that.」

DOPAN-

The head of the middle aged man that was about to start talking about something got blown away. That act of Hajime who seemed as though he didn't know of the existence of the word mercy itself caused the remaining leaders to back away while shuddering.

Hajime turned around at those leaders while tapping Donner on his shoulder. The leaders were desperately begging for their life, saying things like they would give him money, or they would prepare woman or anything he liked, but

「Oy, look here you guys, it seemed you tried to publicly execute my daughter and her friend. I won't let you guys get off with excuse of not knowing you know? Indiscriminate terrorism is something like that isn't it? You guys tried to push for your own conveniences, indiscriminately. And then among those people there was a relative of a monster. That's why, you guys die. That's all there is to it. Think of these in your mind, I have done something stupid huuh, I failed huuh, and then die.」

Like that……in this day, one terrorist organization that was once the biggest was annihilated from this world. Just in case, it seemed that there were two or three people of the leaders who were thrown at a garrison of US army in a state of beaten up black and blue, where they were safely(?) retrieved.

Part 2

At the living room of Nagumo family, Hajime and others were enjoying tea time while watching special news report. If it was asked what kind of special news it was, than naturally it was regarding the simultaneous terrorisms that occurred at America the other day and the many miracles at those attack sites.

The male presenter was moving the news report forward with a voice and expression that looked excited.

「Now then, there were existences that changed the many tragedies that were caused by the cowardly terrorists at that day into miracles that will remain in history. Many people killed and wounded were healed by holy light, a passenger plane that was protected by golden light just before it crashed, the hostages that were on the verge of execution were saved from the terrorists by flying kick and giant hammer, the president was protected by someone using a single katana……just what in the world those women were? No, just what in the world those existences were? Were they secret agent of the country? Such opinion seemed to also exist, but no matter how, it was unimaginable that what they had done was the work of human. It-was-truly, the work of god! Many people who witnessed them had spoken unanimously.」

There, the male presenter put a long pause before,

「They spoke, that those women were exactly “goddesses” that descended to this world.」

Kaori and Shizuku fell prostrated on the table. Their ears were dyed bright red. When Hajime sniggered, the news report moved to the recording of the interview toward the witnesses.

A young man of the rescue squad that was carrying out the rescue operation at a destroyed airport, was answering the interview with an excited state.

「Eh? You are asking me what I think of the woman’s true identity? Such thing

is obvious. She is the goddess. A goddess that is overflowing with kindness. If possible I want to know her name but, no, that is too disrespectful perhaps. At any rate, that person is too beautiful, noble, and warm. The light that rained down on those injured people, it was truly divine. That was——」

The interview cut off. Surely if that young man was allowed to keep talking then he would keep at it even for several hours. The screen changed back to the male presenter.

「He was really excited isn't he! But that too is only natural. Clad in whitely violet light, with beautiful pair of wings, raining down light of healing that resurrected even the death. Furthermore, she appeared almost at the same time at multiple places that were damaged by the terrorisms, protecting the people with warm light. This existence that cannot be possibly human, has been called with a certain name by the people, and this program, will recognize that given name. Now, everyone in the studio, and then, you who are in front of the television, let's extol that great existence! Her name is——Angel of Kindness!」

「「「「「Angel of Kindneesss!!!」」」」」

Kaori sunk down. She crouched while plugging her ears and entered the posture of seeing no evil, hearing no evil, and speaking no evil. It appeared the limit meter of her shyness had already surpassed its max number.

Wasting no time, Yue was making a sadistic expression while she was trying to make Kaori to stand up and watched the television. After giving a glance at Kaori who was saying 'no no' with her head shaking in refusal and Yue that kept pulling on her, Hajime and others then paid their attention at the next interview in the news program.

The one who made the next appearance was the unit members that belonged to the coast guard of the West Coast (TN: I realize that at the beginning of the chapter it said East Coast. But it was written West Coast now here.).With body and hand gestures, they excitedly spoke about how tremendous the existence that saved them before protecting the city from the missiles.

And then, they said it. With their mouths in unison, they called that existences as——

「「「「「It was Gozira-!!」」」」」

Like that.

「Why——!! No matter from where and how thou see it, it was dragon wasn't it!? It was a legendary existence that everyone loved art not it!? What's with this fictitious character treatment!!」

Tio went 'UGAA—' while standing up in protest. However, the coast guard members in the television were all greatly excited saying「Thank you Gozira!」「We won't forget Gozira forever.」「Gozira-tan, haa haa」「Gozira, FOREVER」extolling Tio=Gozira.

「Oh maaan, who ever thought that Gozira really exist! And, it appeared at the same time with the angel, and saved the people……the world is just too lovely! Does everyone also think so!? It will come you know, it will absolutely come you knoow~. The GO-ZI-RA Boom is coming-!!」

The tension of the male announcer was already reaching ecstasy. And then, the tension of Hajime and Shuu who had anticipated the coming boom and had already bought a lot of the stock of the company that was selling Godzi○ goods was also in ecstasy.

The next interview subject was the army colonel that was stationed at the Middle East. When the colonel was asked, just what was he thought about what kind of existence that had annihilated the large scale army of the terrorist organization attacking his garrison, the colonel floated a nihilistic smile while answering.

「Fuh. That's obvious. He was a demon——no, he was the demon king-sama.」

Hajime spurted out the black tea he was drinking. No, certainly he was called as demon king, but he had never imagined that of all thing he would be also called with that name until here in earth too……his cheeks were cramping from that. The colonel inside the television was passionately speaking just how merciless, ruthless, unreasonable, and overwhelming Hajime was, how mere human was like a trash compared to that existence. It was as though the colonel was being possessed by demon.

「Whoops, it feels like this program will be banned if we broadcasted more than this, so let's finish the interview with the colonel until here. It's concerning what will become with the colonel from here on though, isn't it! Now then, it

seems that this man who repelled an army of terrorist organization by his lonesome has many female fans with their number rapidly increasing. For some reason all recording of this man is blurry which caused us to not be clear about his appearance, but the girls all over the world are going heart-eyed from that mercilessness you know. It seems there is even a fan club formed up already!」

The high tensioned yell「How enviouuus!」of the male presenter, and then the calm yet excessively cold gazes that were in contrast with that yell, they were all stabbing on Hajime. Hajime was pretending of not noticing anything while he drank his black tea once more,

「But, his popularity among men is also not losing! The gays from all over the world also seems to go heart-eyed. Really my condolences!」

「Buhoh」

Hajime spurted out his black tea. And then, he was sunk by the kisses and fierce winks that seemed like they were making *bachikon* sound thrown at him from across the screen by the many “big sis” who were excessively wriggling and acting flirtatiously despite their muscular built. Hajime fell prostrated on the table with *gon*- sound that sounded painful.

While Kaori, Tio, and Hajime were plainly receiving damage, the news continued with the interview of the pilot that witnessed Yue, he was making a statement that sounded like he was somewhat awakened to lolicon, the male presenter wasted no time to cut that off before moving at last to the president who was treating Shizuku as a valkyrie, furthermore the male presenter mischievously disclosed how the bodyguards of the president had formed a fan club for the black haired valkyrie, causing Shizuku to greatly turn red.

「I have done the information manipulation and recognition manipulation through the net at world scale so no one will know that those people are us but……in the end, we still receive damage huh.」

Hajime’s tired words were nodded by the people who had saved the world and now were drinking tea on the living room of Nagumo house.

「Come to think of it, Myuu. After that, what happened with your friend? Just in case, at that time I took out Myuu from the recognition of the children that were in that place but……that child named Natalia is the only one whose

recognition I didn't tamper with. Will it become a problem?」

At that day, Hajime applied the measure on the children that Myuu saved so they would only remember that a blond haired girl annihilated the terrorists while making them forgot that the girl was Myuu. Hajime used a silver tube artifact to go flash on the children. That thing which was exclusively used by the black suited agents who protected the earth from alien.

But, regarding Natalia, with Myuu's wish and the strong hope from the person herself, she was not given the recognition manipulation treatment. Natalia herself also promised that she wouldn't reveal anything about Myuu to other people no matter what. Just in case there was a situation where for example someone knew about Myuu and tried to do something to Natalia, Natalia was given an artifact to make other people believe the girl's deception as truth.

「Yep, no problem nano. But……」

「But? Is there something?」

「Uu~n, perhaps it's just Myuu's feeling but, it feels like the way Na-chan is looking at Myuu has changed……」

「……Like how?」

「It's like, Altina-san when she is looking at Shia-oneechan……」

「Myuu, cut off your relationship with Na-chan, right now.」

「It's fine nano. Because Na-chan's face looked satisfied when Myuu gently patted her and she immediately returned to the usual Na-chan.」

「……I see.」

Hajime's expression turned into one where he couldn't say anything. Shia was directing a gaze that was shuddering at Myuu while saying「Myuu-chan, has she surpassed me before I realized it……」. It appeared that Myuu was steadily climbing the stairs of "wrong person".

「Ah, that's right, papa. Has you flashed Emile-kun too properly nano?」

「Hm? I don't know which one is this Emile that you refer, but all the children at that place other than Natalia, everyone of them have been treated for sure. What's the matter?」

「……Emile-kun, for some reason, he remember about Myuu nano. It looks like he doesn't know that the one who was fighting at that time was Myuu, but he remember that Myuu was there as Na-chan's friend, and it looked like all this time he was contacting Na-chan saying that he want her to let him meet Myuu. Although Na-chan is refusing it all.」

「……Hou.」

It appeared, the youth Emile was unable to forget the battling fairy of that day. Strangely he was remembering Myuu and seemed to wish for a reunion. Surely it would be boorish to ask what kind of feeling that drove him to do so. After all if it had to be said, then it was the case of 'Boy meets girl".

The doting parent papa Hajime who guessed that emitted a voice that sounded a level lower than usual. He was thinking, so there was one more pest that was approaching his beloved daughter. Since Myuu was advancing to elementary school, the number of the pest that was approaching Myuu was increasing day by day.

Youth Emile, now what to do about you, was what papa Hajime was beginning to ponder. Myuu who was seeing Hajime being like that looked excessively happy and she cheerfully sat down on Hajime's lap. And then, she looked up at Hajime with wide smile while speaking.

「Papa don't need to be that worried. Myuu, will forever be papa's Myuu nano.」

「Mu, that's, well, I don't have any intention of doing anything about such a brat though……」

「Papa, Myuu said that Myuu understand.」

「……」

Hajime was making a troubled face and turned his gaze at Yue and others asking for help, but before his face could move, Myuu's small hands caught Hajime's cheeks from two sides and fixed Hajime's gaze on herself.

And then, while she was showing a bewitching smile that reminded him as a certain someone somewhere,

「It's better for papa to think, that you won't be able to escape forever nano.」

「……」

She said such thing.

Hajime thought. In this five years, Yue's magic, Shia's taijutsu and war hammer art, Tio's whip art, Kaori's twin swords art, Shizuku's Yaegashi-style, and then, Hajime's gun-kata were all learned by Myuu to a high level. Originally, the sea dweller race didn't have a body that was particularly excellent in battle, yet regardless of that Myuu had achieved all those.

That was surely because all the cheat characters around her taught Myuu their essence to her without sparing anything, and Myuu who trusted and adored those girls from the bottom of her heart was seriously working hard, but even with those factors, Myuu's learning rate could still be praised without reserve.

Perhaps because of that, Hajime hallucinated, of his own figure that was being held down by Myuu even after he used all the methods in his possession and yet he still got outdone……

(No, no way that could be……)

「Nmyu?」

With a surprising switching speed, her bewitching expression of just now had gone somewhere, Myuu had returned to the usual innocent Myuu with her tilting her head, that appearance……

For some reason, it caused Hajime's to shudder with a sudden shaking.

AN: The new year holiday will end soon too isn't it.

Let's work hard throughout this year too!

The next update is planned at 6 P.M Saturday too.

Arifureta Chapter 193

Arifureta After – Nagumo Family's Bride Riot

AN: Attention, the timeline of this chapter is going back again. This chapter happen in between the return home and the one year anniversary gathering.

The after story is written as the author pleased (the main story was also haphazard though), so the chronological order is also all over the place. Perhaps it's hard to read but, please treat it well.

「I wonder……what to do about the marriage ceremony?」

At the living room that was illuminated by bright sunlight, Sumire who was drooping limply on the sofa whispered to herself.

This day was a holiday for the society, however, Sumire who was a famous manga artist from the beginning didn't have holiday. In order to sail across the time of judgment with the name of the deadline that was approaching her today too, she class changed into zombie and headed to her workplace but……in the end, Sumire who ran out of material couldn't advance, and instead of sulking in bed she was sulking in her house acting sluggishly.

At present Hajime and Shuu weren't at home, there were only the female camp of Yue and others here. What was unusual that despite Hajime going out but he left behind Yue and others.

Hajime and Shuu were going to a meeting regarding the new game that was being created at Shuu's company, but putting aside Hajime who was recognized as an important battle strength even while he was still a student, for Yue and others who only had meager knowledge about game, they couldn't participate in

the meeting just with the reason of wanting to be together with their lover, that was the *surface* reason.

In addition, today Myuu was also going out. It appeared she was taking along her friends(underlings) in the kindergarten to make clear of their position with the kindergarteners from the neighboring town. When Myuu got out from the house entrance, Myuu said「Today is the decisive battle nano. Myuu will teach those pretentious kids, just where is their place in society nano」with a fearless smile, just who she was taking after……such question didn't even need to be asked.

Because of that, Kaori and Shizuku were also invited into the house, and they spent a laid back holiday with only the females but……

That silent explosive which Sumire threw brought about a ripple that by no meant was small among the females. Above their head, there was the "!?" mark floating like a certain soldier who loved cardboard box when he was discovered by enemy soldier, and they turned their gaze at Sumire with a momentum that seemed to give off the sound *bat-*. It was only Yue who was drinking black tea while directing a gaze at Sumire as though she was looking at a somewhat good-for-nothing person.

「E, err, Kaa-sama? What do you mean by just now?」

Shia represented everyone and asked the true meaning of Sumire's whisper. In respond to that, Sumire sluggishly raised her face that was buried on the sofa and opened her mouth with a really uneasy expression.

「There is no deeper meaning to it, Shia-chan. Sooner or later, we intend to grandly hold a wedding ceremony of Hajime with Shia-chan and others, but as expected, it's impossible for all of you to do it right? See, in this Japan, a country with a constitutional government, polygamy is prohibited by law.」

「Ce, certainly……」

Shia nodded up and down. Kaori and Shizuku went「Hm?」and tilted their head, they were about to open their mouth to say something, but Sumire's words continued to forestall them.

「Everyone's parents should absolutely want to see their daughter in wedding

dress too. But, how sad, based on the law of Japan, there can only be one bride in the wedding ceremony……that is to say, there is only one person among you that can wear wedding dress!」

zugaaan! While lighting was roaring behind her back, Sumire loudly yelled the shocking truth(?). Shia and Tio, and also Kaori and the rest made a face that seemed to say「What did you say——!!」. Shizuku was about to make a retort at what Sumire pointed out but……

「Shizuku-chan……don't you want to wear a wedding dress?」

「Wh? N, no, Sumire-san. That is, that, of course I want to wear it, but……」

Sumire firmly grasped Shizuku's shoulder and asked that question to her while peering at her face from really close. Hearing that question, Shizuku's body leaned back from the pressure and expressed her honest feeling. As though taking advantage of that opening, Sumire's verbal attack was not stopping!

「Shizuku-chan. Also, Remia-chan who is acting 'my my ufufu' over there, and also Yue-chan who for some reason is staring at me with a lukewarm gaze as though I am a good-for-nothing person. Everyone too also want to wear wedding dress aren't you? You want to walk along with Hajime on the wedding aisle wrapped in the ceremonial dress aren't you?」

「That……yes.」

「……Nn. Of course, Okaa-sama.」

「I also feel the same here, Okaa-san.」

Sumire nodded with 'yep yep', however, immediately after she looked up above with a gesture that was excessively dramatical.

「Isn't that right. But, only one person can do that. And then, about the marriage registration, that is the notification for the sake of being seen by the people outside as Hajime's wife, it's also only one person who can have that…… in this Japan, it's only one person that can be formally recognized as Hajime's wife.」

After saying that Sumire ran her gaze at Yue and others with a sad expression. And then, Shia and others, when they heard the words「There is only one person

among these people here who will be Hajime's formal wife」they sent each other gaze containing slight nervousness at each other. Amidst such atmosphere, Sumire released those words that would push down Nagumo family into chaos in this day.

「Now, I wonder, who among these women is truly worthy to be Hajime's wife? I wonder, as his mother, who should I choose? Hey, all of you, Hajime's "self-proclaimed" wives?」

「「「「!?」」」」

Shock ran through the body of Shia and others!

Self-proclaimed——that word deeply, truly deeply pierced their chest. Indeed, they hadn't submit any marriage registration or even holding the ceremony. No matter how they insisted that they were husband and wife, but seen from the eye of the society there was no proof of that. The word "self-proclaimed", for some unknown reason it caused a violent discomfort welling up that they couldn't negate!

「Ka, Kaa-sama-! What, what should I do desu!?」

「Ah, Shia, that's unfair! Okaa-san! I will do my best for Hajime-kun's sake! That's why!」

「E, ee, me too, I'll do my best so……」

「Hmmm, I too, perhaps it wouldth be soon the time to show mine seriousness.」

Shia, Kaori, Shizuku, and Tio who got all flustered and shook up gathered to their mother in law and begged for her teaching. Even Yue and Remia who had somehow guessed Sumire's ulterior motive only slightly exchanged glances and troubled smile before closing to Sumire's side.

Sumire was smiling complacently inside her heart looking at her obedient(?) daughters-in-law, however, she didn't show even a speck of the inside of her heart, and then with a force that seemed to make sound *zubishi*- she thrust up her finger. And then, she proclaimed.

「Yue-chan, Shia-chan, Tio-chan, Kaori-chan, Remia-chan, Shizuku-chan! Do all

of you want, to wear wedding costume at Hajime-sideee——!」

Naturally, the wives replied back「Oo~~~」in high spirits.

「Do you waaant, to be seen as Hajime's wife by the neighbooors——!!」

Naturally, the wives replied back「Gung ho, gung ho, gung ho!!」in high spirits.

「Do you waaant~, to have your name written in the marriage registratiooon———!!」

Naturally, the wives replied back「Uu~raaraaraaraa———」in high spirits.

The trivial things already didn't matter.

After that, with Sumire's incitement, Yue and others progressed the preparation for the sake of「The deciding match of who is the most worthy as wife in Nagumo Family!」.

At evening, Hajime and Shuu finished their work and went home. They were passing through the house entrance while talking about this and that regarding the meeting today about the new game production, and they put their hand on the entryway's door. And then,

「I'm home~」

「We're back~」

They said the returning home greeting while opening the door……

「……Nn. Welcome home, dear, Otou-sama.」

「Welcome home desu!」

They were welcomed, by Yue and Shia who was *only* wearing frilly pure white small apron. Shuu spoke「O, oo!?」from the side, but at the next instant, 「pugeh」such scream was raised and he crumbled down. The swift inescapable attack from his son sent his consciousness flying.

「What are, you doing, Yue, Shia.」

Those figures of pure white tight beautiful legs and slender arms and shoulders, and then, the breasts that were bared by more than half which was

too lascivious caused Hajime's cheeks to cramp while asking.

「……Of course, toward the husband who had just worked hard and returned home——」

「The wife welcomed him with her all desuu.」

「With naked apron?」

「「With naked apron.」」

Yue and Shia twirled on the spot. Their naked back and jiggling butts were shown to Hajime.

「You aren't happy?」

「Is this a failure desu?」

Yue and Shia tilted their head while confirming to Hajime. Naturally, Hajime bowed his head saying「Thank you very much」. It was the sad nature of man. Seeing such Hajime, Yue and Shia asked him something strange「From 1 to 10, what is our score?」. Even while feeling suspicious, Hajime answered「Full score」without hesitation.

Yue and Shia took a guts pose「Yosh-」, then they too off Hajime's coat and baggage before vanishing inside the room with their lovely butts exposed to him throughout.

「What is going on……」

While feeling as though he was watching a waking dream, Hajime shouldered his fainted father and opened the door to the living room.

There, this time it was,

「You guys too!?」

「uu, we, welcome, home, Hajime-kun.」

「We, we, welco——impossibleee, as expected I cannot endure this!!」

「My my, fufu. Welcome home, dear.」

「Yes, welcome home, Goshujin-sama.」

Kaori and Shizuku, also Remia and Tio were wearing naked apron as expected

while welcoming him home with a bow with their three fingers of each hand pressing on the floor. Hajime's spontaneous retorted caused Shizuku's face to turn bright red from shame while she was rushing to inside the room. However, it didn't change the fact that she was wearing naked apron, so it went without saying her captivating jiggling butts were exposed to him.

「Uu, what, suddenly an impact hit my jaw……hah!? What is this place, is this Shangri-la abeshih-」

Shuu who Hajime discarded on the sofa appeared to open his eyes, but as expected he received a swift unavoidable attack that made him collapsed with the white of his eyes exposed.

While glancing at such Shuu, as expected a question of「The score?」from the wives came at him. Hajime livelily told the point「2 point」only at Tio before he said to Kaori and Remia「Full point」. Ignoring Tio who twitched before starting to pant, Kaori and Remia made a guts pose and as expected they disappeared into the kitchen with their butts exposed to him.

「So, Kaa-san. What are you making them do this time?」

Hajime was sighing while asking at Sumire who was grinning broadly while making a cool pose for some reason at the corner of the room.

「My, what's with that. You make me sounds like I am a problem child. I am merely accompanying everyone in their homemaking training you know?」

「This is the first time I heard that naked apron is a bride training.」

「Welcoming the husband home is also one of the creditable bride training. You see, Yue-chan and others, right now they are competing with each other you know, about who is the worthiest as the bride of Nagumo family. As their husband, you have to properly watch them. The conclusion won't be reached if everyone get full point, so you have to grade properly! Okay!?」

「……」

Hajime was sending the most reproachful gaze he could make to Sumire. Before the girls had done training for housework, laundry, and cooking as bride training. And now they were competing with each other after this late with abnormal way like naked apron, no matter how he thought about it this must be

a prank. And the mastermind of this prank could only be one person in this place.

Hajime was about to question Sumire further, but at that timing Yue approached him with small steps. Her clothing was still the same.

「……Hajime, the preparation for the dinner and bath is finished.」

「O, ou, I see.」

「……Nn. So……」

Yue tightly clutched the fringe of her apron while fidgeting. If she did something like that, than the apron that had already been in a risky length from the beginning would be further rolled up and became something dangerous. Naturally Hajime's gaze was pulled into that territory like a monster who was being sucked into the mouth of thunder dragon.

Toward such Hajime, Yue mouthed that template speech.

「……Will you not take the bath, and do me? Or will you not take the dinner, and do me? Or else, will you do me, or do me?」

「……In the end there is no option for me though……」

It was off by a bit from the template! As expected of Yue quality. But, however, the matchless vampire princess wasn't finished with just this level!

「Then, will you take a bath while doing me? Or else, will you have dinner while doing me?」

「What does that mean!?」

「……As expected, it will be embarrassing, doing it in front of Otou-sama and Okaa-sama. But, if Hajime wished for it」

「I don't wish that! There is a limit even at being abnormal!」

「Myy, Hajime you! This pervert son!」

「Kaa-san shut up a bit there!」

Hajime's retort gushed out. On this occasion he left alone Yue who was blushing while fidgeting with both her hands on her cheeks. For the time being, he should make her wore some clothes and recover the order in Nagumo household. Hajime was about to act with that objective.

But, before he could do that,

「I, I cannot let, only Yue taking the spotlight! Ha, Hajime-kun!」

「Ka, Kaori?」

Still in naked apron, Kaori who peeked out from the cover of the kitchen leaped out as though she had been waiting for her turn. And then, while she was fidgeting pigeon-toed looking embarrassed, she yelled with an expression that was filled with resolve.

「Won't you eat me as dinner!?」

「What are you saying!?」

「What seasoning that you wanttt!?」

「Calm down-, what you are saying is just too lacking in common sense!」

「Myy, Hajime you! This Mr. gourmet master-」

「I'm going to throw you out from the house, Kaa-san!」

After that, Shia and others who leaped out after that were saying similar things which Hajime retorted back at severely, Sumire who watched that stirred up the place, Shuu who recovered his consciousness with a 'hah' was made to sleep with a swift unavoidable attack, and in the end, it was one hour later before they could have dinner normally.

By the way, as expected everyone was wearing clothes when taking dinner. For some reason everyone was wearing risqué cosplay appearance though……

In the middle, a delivery service young man was making delivery, but he was startled by the blonde miniskirt police woman that came out from the house, and then he stepped back seeing the miniskirt nurse that came out from behind the police woman saying「You forget the stamp heree」, next he sweated coldly due to the miniskirt shrine maiden that came in panic saying「What are you two doing going out with that appearance!」, in the end the young man expressed his gratitude「Tank ou hery much-———」that was filled with various meanings with red face and also panic, such thing happened but……

At any rate, the cooking showdown had everyone made one dish which got judged by Hajime, and it went mostly peacefully.

「Haa」

「Nmyu? What's the matter papa?」

At the bath, Hajime was washing the hair of Myuu who was going home before the dinner while unintentionally making a tired sigh. Myuu was tilting her head that was covered all over with bubbles.

「Myuu……grow up into a normal girl for me okay.」

「??」

「No, it doesn't matter. Just forget it.」

Looking at his beloved daughter that was tilting her head in incomprehension, Hajime was smiling wryly thinking 'just what I'm saying' before rinsing off the bubbles on Myuu's hair.

But, at that time, Hajime's senses detected the presence of several people approaching the bathroom!

「Wait, Kaori and also Shizuku, those two haven't go home yet?」

Before Hajime entered the bath, he had told the two of them that they should go back home soon. But regardless of that, Hajime could sense the presence of Kaori and Shizuku among the presences that were approaching, it made Hajime to be at his wits' end. Immediately after, the door of the bathroom was opened loudly. Just as he expected, there were the stark naked figures of Yue and others boldly standing imperiously! Not even a single string was covering their body, it was to the degree that Hajime wanted to tell them to at least use towel to cover their front. (For the moment, it was only Shizuku who was using towel to hide her body.)

「……Nn. Now-」

「Charge desuu」

「I won't lose! The one who is the most skilled at washing Hajime-kun's body, is meee!」

「Ufufu, today is the day I'm washing the front.」

「Haa haa, Goshujin-sama, haa haa」

「……Pardon me.」

It appeared this was a competition about who could wash the body of the husband the best. Hajime's eyes were twitching while he quickly headed to the bathtub and urged Myuu to follow. It was as though he was asking her if she could accompany him.

But,

「I won't let you!」

Along with those words, *whoosh* Yue instantly appeared before Hajime's eyes.

「Wai-, don't use "Heaven Existence" in this kind of place!」

「Level X–」

「Maximum body reinforcement!? Ah, idiot, let go, this pervert rabbit!」

「Even me-, Limit Break-」

「What kind of limit are you planning to break huh!?」

Hajime was completely surrounded by the vampire princess and the bug rabbit and the angel mode maiden! Using that opening, Remia secured Myuu, while Tio used wind magic to form a barrier and shut out the voice from leaking outside by laying out a veil of air.

Like that, at the next moment, the bathroom was turned into a battlefield. A battlefield of carnivore maidens.

「Kuh, who can stay in this kind of place where there is only beast! I'm going back to my room!」

While standing up a strange flag, Hajime slapped Tio severely that made her panting while rushing out from the bathroom. There Yue who teleported and Kaori who activated her God Speed leaped to his back, while Shia clung on his waist with her greatest body reinforcement. Because of his wet feet and the polished floor, Hajime slipped and fell down.

There Yue and others jumped further at that chance, even the revived Tio also got on top of Hajime.

At the corridor of Nagumo household, there was the figure of Hajime who was

lying upside down while being covered with beautiful women and girls.

At the same time,

There was the figure of Sumire, cackling loudly while rolling on the corridor holding her stomach from seeing that situation.

Somewhere, *snap* the sound of something snapping resounded.

Right after that, Yue and others raised「Aahn」coquettish voice. Their weak spot was fondled by Hajime. Strength reflexively left their body~, using that opening Hajime stood up. Kaori was saying something foolish「Hau, Hajime-kun's Hajime-kun is in front of my eyes」, but he ignored that.

「Kaa-san, it seem that a family meeting is necessary between us. Also, it has to be an extraordinarily harsh meeting.」

「My, Hajime. I don't think that such meeting is necessary though?」

「No, it's necessary. ……The meeting for the sake of making Kaa-san reflect on yourself!」

Hajime's store of patience had run out from his mother's prank that was too much. He took a step forward. He intended to even wrap his mother in a bamboo mat then hung her up for a night so she could reflect a little.

But, it seemed that Sumire had already predicted that action of Hajime. While saying「I've thought that this will happen!」with a triumphant look, she took out a vacuum cleaner that was leaning at the shadow of the corridor.

——Cleaning Artifact "Sniper Mark II"

By any chance, do you have the experience of sucking even the thing that must not be sucked carelessly when cleaning using vacuum cleaner? It can become a cause that broke the vacuum, but opening the lid to fish it out every single time is troublesome isn't it? In that kind of time, use this. The next generation vacuum cleaner "Sniper Mark II".

If you have this, you can select the target that you want to suck and the target that you don't want to suck! Furthermore! If you put this to practical use, it's even possible to suck the soy sauce or the remote control that is far away into your hand, just with a single push of button! The next generation vacuum

cleaner is already not limited for just cleaning in its utility!

The absorption force will never fall. The era from here on, is the era of multiple absorption force that suck only the prey you aimed for!

The vacuum cleaner (exclusive for Nagumo household) that Hajime developed with such catchphrase, was held in Sumire's hand.

In front of the suspicious eyes of Hajime, Sumire took out the degraded version Crystal Key from her breast pocket. It was handed over to her so in the case that something happened to his parents because of the matter of Hajime and others, they could immediately teleport away.

Before Hajime could say「What are you」, Sumire stabbed the degraded crystal key to the front. Immediately the space distorted, and a gate materialized. At the same time, Sumire pushed the max mode button on the vacuum cleaner. Naturally, the powerful absorption force pulled on the target from inside the gate.

「Wha, wha, what!? What is going on!? Nooo——, I'm being pulleeeeeeed-」

Like that, a familiar scream could be heard, then from the other side of the gate a petite female figure in suits tumbled out. Sumire turned off the switch at the same time when that figure came out, but following the law of inertia, the female that leaped out from the gate rolled on the corridor of Nagumo house, the figure finally stopped when her face crashed *munyu!* on the obstacle in front of her.

「……」

「……」

The female that rolled out from the gate and plunged into a certain thing with her face——Hatayama Aiko-sensei, wordlessly, slowly, pulled away her face from that place where her face was buried into. And then, looking at that thing dangling in front of her eyes that seemed to be familiar, she tilted her head while saying……

「Hajime-kun?」

「Aiko, can you spare me from you calling my name while looking at my

crotch?」

「Hah!? Awawawawawa, I, I'm sorry~」

Yes, the rolling out Aiko, due to the momentum, her face landed on the son of Hajime that was currently standing imposingly stark naked.

Aiko instantly blushed hard while her mind was in chaos thinking 'I don't understand the situation!'. Looking from her suited figure, perhaps she had work regardless of the holiday and she only just came home. Despite so, she was suddenly made to teleport, and on top of that she dived face first at the crotch of her lover that was hidden from society except to some people……it was only natural for her to be astonished.

「Yo, you are wanting me using this kind of forceful method!?」, or「No, it's not like I hate it but……waiting naked like this is a bit……」, or「Pe, perhaps I cannot go home tonight……」, it also couldn't be helped if she was talking to herself like that, perhaps.

Anyway, after Hajime wrapped a towel on his waist he ran his gaze around once more, but Sumire's figure had already gone, he could only see the door of the entrance that was closing and a piece of paper fluttering midair. It seemed her plan was to make Aiko as distraction while she escaped. It was a splendid escape.

Hajime picked up the memo paper that fell at his feet and his gaze fell on it. There,

『I received enough material. Thank you, very much. Mama is going back to her work now!』

Such thing was written.

「Haa, I thought it was something like this……Yue, you noticed it already right?」

Hajime was sighing to his mother's deed while questioning Yue who was standing at his side unnoticed. In respond Yue nodded. Hearing hat, Shia who had similarly recovered tilted her head and asked what Hajime meant.

「Look here, whether the wedding ceremony will be done one by one, or with everyone all at once, either is fine, but there is no rule that only one person can

do it. Besides, if need be we can also just do the ceremony at Tortus.」

「Aa~, now that Hajime-san mentioned it that's true isn't it.」

「Besides, even the marriage registration, I have already faked the official papers about you all itself, so fussing about the marriage registration for everyone right now is meaningless isn't it. Something like consistency of the data or whatever, it can be taken care of later as we pleased.」

「Now that you mentioned it, that's true. Then, why did Okaa-san did something like Bride deciding battle……」

「That's obviously for her material collection. Just why do you think she was slackening in the house from the afternoon?」

In short, Sumire said whatever sounded appropriate to incite Shia and others, and then the uproar that was caused due to that would be turned into the material for her manga that currently was reaching the limits. That was Sumire's scheme.

Shia and others thought. It was also their own fault that they got caught into the provocation thoroughly like that, but Sumire's capability of letting out flowing speech just by adlibbing like an agitator, it was just as expected from the mother of Hajime.

And then, Yue who noticed the intention of such Sumire still participated without really objecting was because,

「Today too, is a fun day.」

「I see.」

That seemed to be the reason. For Yue, this kind of stupid uproar was also included in her lovely ordinary days. Something like boorish fair argument could be just tossed into the trash can. The satisfied expression of Yue made Hajime to shrug「Well, then, it's fine」.

「Say~, I really don't understand what are you all taking about though……」

Aiko called timidly at Hajime and others that were feeling warm and fluffy by themselves. Hajime glanced at such Aiko and,

「My body got completely cold now……let's enter the bath again. With

everyone this time.」

Saying that, Hajime carried up Aiko in a princess carry.「Eh? Eh?」Giving a glance at Aiko who was in confusion, Yue and others raised「Oo~」in harmony and returned to the large bathroom of the reconstructed Nagumo house.

After that, including Aiko who was stripped by Hajime's hand, Hajime and the wives relaxed and enjoyed the bath without particularly any competition.

……There was no one, who paid any attention at Shuu who was still fainting at the living room.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

The next update is planned at 6 P.M Saturday too.

Arifureta Chapter 194

Arifureta After – Protector of Angel

AN: My nose isn't stop dripping……

Everyone too, please be very careful against cold.

Part 1

A famous foreign manufacture car(Mercedes Benz) that was reputed to be the firmest in the world was gallantly driving on the road along the coast. The car frame that was shining silver showed how it was well polished, making anyone who saw it understood how much the owner cherished it.

Inside that car, the sea breeze that flowed in from the opened window and the classic song that was the favorite of the car owner were flowing, making the time of the people riding that car to pass in relaxation.

「This sea route still feel pleasant every time we come here.」

Yes, the refreshing voice that expressed the feeling of this drive, was the driver of this car and also its owner——Shirasaki Tomoichi. His hair that was lightly flowing to the back and long slitted bit gentle eyes, his balanced body despite his age that was at the middle of his forty, just from his appearance he was a handsome man that could pass as a man that was still in his late twenty.

And then, sitting beside Tomoichi was a woman that nodded at Tomoichi's words while saying「You're right, no matter how many times we come here, this is a really good place」, was Shirasaki Kaoruko. Looking from her straight black hair without any white hair, her droopy eyes, the neat and clean atmosphere she was clad with, she was a woman that felt like a lady. She was the same like Tomoichi with her age in the middle of her forty, but she still looked young like a woman in her late twenty.

Just like their family name showed, both of them were married couple. Just from their atmosphere it could be clearly seen how they had been building a satisfactory marital relationship.

But, even while Tomoichi's consciousness was concentrating on the driving, it didn't seem like he was paying attention at his wife. Since before he kept glancing at the rearview mirror and repeatedly paid attention at the rear seat.

Even his impression of the drive just now seemed to be a bit forced if someone listened carefully, rather than saying that it was his true feeling it was more a lure for starting conversation. And then, it was clear that the cause of that was the passenger at the rear seat.

Hearing no other response to his words other than from his wife, Tomoichi coughed「A, ahem」, this cough was also seemed to be forced, and then he once again formed his words to try to attract the attention of the person at the passenger seat. This happened while his wife beside him was giggling at him.

「O, Ojii-chan and Obaa-chan, their age is already quite old, so how about we move here soon? A home near the sea is nice don't you think? Hey, what do you think? Kaori?」

「……Absolutely, no.」

The cold voice and words that came back caused Tomoichi to let out a small groan「Uguu」. And then, he once more began glancing repeatedly at the back mirror to look at his beloved daughter——Kaori's expression who was sitting at the back.

Kaori was emitting an assertion「I am displeasured desu!」from her whole body while staring fixedly to outside, as though to say that she absolutely wouldn't meet Tomoichi's eyes. But even with such super displeasured mode being turned on, her sitting without putting her elbow on the window or crossing her arms, but instead her two hands were put on her lap with her posture straight, it really was like Kaori.

Tomoichi further talked with an expression that looked a little desperate at such Kaori.

「I, is that so? At the past, each time we came to play here, didn't you always said 'I still don't want to go home!'. Remember, Riko-chan who live next door, or your cousin Sakura-chan, you always played together with them right? I think moving here is not really ba——」

「Then, isn't it fine if Otou-san move here alone?」

「!? No way!? That's too much you know, Kaoriii!」

With a snap Tomoichi turned around to the back seat. The Benz of Shirasaki

family was zigzagging! A string slap landed on Tomoichi's face! Tomoichi's face was forcefully faced to the front!

A call「Dear?」from Kaoriko that made Tomoichi felt a small, but intense chill resounded inside the car.「Forgive me」Tomoichi honestly apologized. Tomoichi knew really well. That the true anger of his wife was like a production machine of trauma. In his dream, the Shiro Yasha-san was making appearance! (TN: Shiro Yasha=white demon)

「Geez, dear you really……there is no way Kaori will accept that suggestion right? There is Shizuku-chan, and also her friends at school back there.」

「Pe, perhaps that's true but……」

Tomoichi's eyes were swimming while he was feeling stinging pain on his cheek. Seeming very reluctance, he whispered「Even so, I think that idea is not bad though……」

Currently Shirazaki family was heading to the home of Tomoichi's parents where both his parents and his older brother and his wife were living. Tomoichi's elder brother and his wife had a daughter that was four year older than Kaori. That daughter was a really helpful daughter even though she could be a bit frank, she was an existence that was like a big sister for Kaori. The home was near the sea, so the two of them often played at sea together with Riko of Ayasaki family who lived next door.

Kaori was an only child, because of that too she really idolized Sakura, when Kaori was little she often clung at Sakura while throwing tantrum「I don't want to go home yet」. Due to that, Tomoichi was thinking, could Kaori possibly consider moving there even now……could she be distanced from that nasty shitty brat……and so on, but…….

Kaoruko who seemed to clearly grasp those thinking inside Tomoichi's heart was giggling while saying about the thing that Tomoichi didn't want to hear the most, about the reason why Kaori was displeasured, about the young man that was the reason that Kaori absolutely wouldn't accept moving home.

「Beside, you see? There is no way that Kaori will leave the town where Hajime-kun is don't you think?」

「Stop it Kaoruko! This is our long-awaited family's homecoming without any outsider you know!? Don't say anything about that shitty brat who dare to make a pass at the cute angel of our family——」

「*Otou-san?*」

Tomoichi felt a chill at his back and twitched. He understood even without looking. This was, a presence that really resembled his wife's! It would be there if he looked back! The incarnation of fury that his daughter inherited from her mother before he noticed——the Hannya-san!

But, just with this much, Otou-san wouldn't lose. For the sake of his beloved daughter, the apple of his eye!

「Ka, Kaori, calm down? My words just now is a bit poor. But, as expected Otou-san, about that bagwor——ahem-. That tras——ehem-. That shitty——」

「……I'm going home right now. I won't listen anymore to what Otou-san say.」

「Nooo! Kaori, listen to what I'm saying! Otou-san is thinking what is best for Kaori's sake……」(TN: Here Tomoichi is saying nooo in English.)

「Otou-san is badmouthing Hajime-kun, because Otou-san is thinking what's best for me? I never thought that Otou-san is that kind of person.」

「You are wrong, Kaori! Even Otou-san doesn't want to say bad thing about, Ha, Haji, Haji——about that guy. But, but still? While that bastard already has Kaori, he still made many other girls to serve him and open their legs for him, on top of that instead of feeling guilt, he is acting defiant you know? Do you think there is any father that can entrust his daughter to that kind of shitty bastard? No, such father doesn't exist! I'm telling this for your own good. Kaori, cut your relation with that cocky rubbish scum——」

「I hate someone like Otou-san so much!」

「Gahah!?」

Tomoichi who was hit by the speech that would empty the HP of the father at the whole country if it was said to them by their daughter, caused the car to zigzag once more. With tears gathering at the corner of his eye, Tomoichi was leaking out the voice「No waaay, Kaorii, My Angeeeel~」looking really pathetic.

(TN: The ‘my angel’ here is said in English.)

A few months after Kaori returned home from the other world Tortus. Tomoichi and Kaoruko were already introduced to Hajime. From the beginning, before the summoning, Tomoichi and Kaoruko already knew that Kaori had a boy in her mind, but putting aside Kaoruko, from the start Tomoichi was already unable to stomach that boy——Hajime.

It wasn’t like Tomoichi had a clear reason. It was the feeling of a father whose really treasured daughter might be taken from him, that feeling might even be called as a conditioned reflex. Tomoichi sometimes even bared his hostility toward Kouki and Ryutaro. If he acted like that even to the childhood friends of his daughter, then Hajime who had started to live inside his daughter’s heart before he noticed was already like his sworn enemy, that really couldn’t be helped.

Naturally, because this was Tomoichi whose level as doting parent had already reached the max value, when Kaori disappeared it was already a disaster for him. At that time Kaoruko’s physical condition also worsened, but Shirasaki family somehow held on by borrowing the help of the elder brother’s family and their parents, and also their whole relatives.

And then, his beloved daughter returned home like miracle. They were told about the truth of the disappearance which scared them out of their wits from various things, and then they were shown many mystics in order to prove Kaori’s story, naturally all of those were a succession of astonishment for them but…… there was a matter that was really hard to forgive, to the degree that all those absurdity seemed like trivial matter.

Yes, it was the matter about how his beloved daughter(My Angel) had made a lover.

Furthermore, that lover had several other lovers other than Kaori, he didn’t even have any intention to separate from any of those lovers, and at the end he started talking about taking them all as wives. ‘Are you making a fool of me-, you bastard!’ Tomoichi roared angrily like that many times……

On top of that, the daughter in question was accepting of such harem situation and making a really happy expression that even Tomoichi had never

saw before. She was saying, ‘together with the other girls!’. Hearing that, just how many times Tomoichi was yelling angrily ‘You bastaaard, you are putting my daughter under some strange magic aren’t you! No, it absolutely must be like that, you harmful pest-!’……

Furthermore, the speech that all the fathers in the whole country feared that someday it might be said to them, no, the speech that the fathers had resolved they wouldn’t let any man said! ——「Father-in-law, please give your daughter to me!」, that speech instead became「Father-in-law, I received your daughter. Please take care of me from here on too」. When that curve ball was thrown to Tomoichi, he very naturally thought this,「Yosh, let’s kill this guy」.

Everything was for the sake of his beloved daughter, to protect her from a bad man. Yet despite so, when he was about to punch the bastard, the one who pinioned him from the back was the daughter herself. While Hajime who was about to be punched was only kept sitting calmly and composedly. That self-assured attitude (Hajime himself was aware that he had something that was the worst, so he was only waiting to be punched) was also something he couldn’t stomach! Tomoichi who was raging「This shitty bastarddd-, I’ll beat you to deathhhhh!」like that in the end was stopped by Kaori「Otou-san, calm doooooown!」with a suplex. Because Tomoichi lost consciousness, the meeting at that time was dissolved just like that but……

After that, Tomoichi knew that actually Kaori had already climbed the stair of adulthood, which caused Tomoichi’s killing intent to climb without knowing the place to stop.

This time too, actually Kaori wanted to participate at Nagumo family’s little gathering. But Tomoichi who thought ‘No way I’ll let my daughter go to the devil’s place’ hurriedly made schedule to visit his parents and took along Kaori half forcefully.

When Kaori was in the middle of talking to Hajime about the arrangement, Tomoichi took away Kaori’s phone and said to the phone「Kaori has a plan! She is going to spend her holiday with me! From here on too she won’t have any opening in her plan! Don’t call anymore, you scum bastard!」, and then he cut the connection as he pleased.

Naturally, Kaori was getting angry to her father's doing, but Tomoichi only looked aside with a huff and turned a deaf ear at Kaori. While that was happening, Hajime used telepathy to Kaori saying「You should spend time with your family this time. Actually, I really understand how your father is feeling」with a wry smile, and so Kaori reluctantly acquiesced to visit her grandparents.

Although, Kaori's mood who had her phone call taken over as it pleased and on top of that her lover got abusive language spouted to him was at its lowest, so since they departed from their home, Tomoichi was desperate in currying favor to his daughter.

「Come on you two. Leave it at this, we are going to arrive soon see.」

While smiling wryly at the cold war (one-sided) between father and daughter, Kaoruko intermediated between them. Just as she said, before they realized they had entered a residential area and in front of the car, a splendid house with two buildings that they were really familiar with began to become visible.

While being concerned of Kaori's state, Tomoichi stopped the car at the road shoulder in front of the house. In the middle, *garigari*, an ominous scraping sound that should not come from a high class car could be heard, but such thing was only a trivial matter for Tomoichi who was hopelessly bothered with his daughter's state. He left aside the expression of his wife that was looking like she had a headache.

Kaori immediately got down from the car without saying anything. Tomoichi also hurriedly got down from the car and took out the luggage from the car trunk.

「Kaori. Otou-san will carry the luggage for you!」

They planned to stay for three or four days, so Kaori's luggage was Boston bag sized. Tomoichi carried that luggage while speaking smilingly, but Kaori walked briskly to him and tore off her luggage from him with a huff.

「It's only until the entrance, Otou-san is too exaggerating. ……If it's Hajime-kun, he will naturally bring the luggage without saying anything like that.」

「!? Is, is that so!? Ha, Haji……that bastard, earning point in petty way like that(Hajime-kun, really is a considerate child isn't he~)」

「……Haah. Dear, your true feeling and surface attitude are reversed there you know.」

Kaori averted her face ‘Puiihh!!’ from Tomoichi who was plainly leaking out his true feeling without hiding it at all, and then like that she ignored Tomoichi and walked away briskly. Tomoichi fell on his knees at the entrance of the house. His figure that was on all fours with his head hanging down was really inviting pity……

「……Just when I thought that you all finally arrived. Oji-san, what are you doing in that kind of place? The neighbors are looking, so I want you stop doing that though.」(TN: Oji-san=uncle)

When Kaori was about to ring the chime of the door, a residence of the house that seemed to come from the backyard circling the house to the front called with a voice that sounded exasperated and astonished.

「Sakura-oneechan!」

「Welcome Kaori. As always, it looks like it’s difficult for you about various things, but I’m glad that you look energetic. Just relax slowly here.」

Kaori smiled widely at the owner of that voice——her cousin Shirasaki Sakura and embraced her.

Sakura who was a female college student had straight brown hair. She was a beautiful woman with well proportion body like a model (TN: The words used here has the meaning beautiful well-proportioned woman (body 8 times longer than head)). The features of her face itself vaguely resembled Kaori, but the atmosphere she was clad in was basically cool. She felt like the so-called frank girl. Her hand was holding a hose that was trickling water, so surely she was just watering the garden before this.

Sakura’s cool gaze softened at her cousin that was like a little sister who leaped into her chest, and then she used her empty hand to gently caressed Kaori’s head.

When she heard that Kaori was involved in a group disappearance, she was really worried that she felt lost. Naturally, when she was notified that Kaori had gone home, she immediately went to meet her directly. And so, different from

the other distant relatives, she had already met with Kaori several times since Kaori's return.

Even so, the society was still in commotion in regard with the topic of the returnees, the topic could even be seen enough in the television, so as expected it was something joyful to be able to see Kaori's energetic face directly like this.

Having the sharp words of his niece directed at him, Tomoichi hung his head down even lower. Kaoruko was dragging such Tomoichi while entering together with Kaori and Sakura into the house where the grandparents and uncle were living.

Part 2

The sun had went down. On the coast street where the veil of night was beginning to fall, Kaori and Sakura were walking close to each other like true sisters.

「The live show was amazingly lively isn't it? I don't really go much to that kind of event, so I was really excited.」

「Is that so? Then that's good. There were only local bands, so I wondered if it was strange for you.」

Kaori who received a passionate welcoming at Sakura's home had passed a relaxed time there while talking to each other about their families' recent state for a while. And then when it was evening, she was told that there was a live event of the local bands at the coast venue starting in that time, so she was taken along by Sakura to attend at the live to kill time.

Sakura responded to her cheerfully smiling younger sister that she was glad if Kaori was able to enjoy the show, however, Sakura's expression was twitching a bit. The cause of that was one person. Sakura glanced across her shoulder to behind them.

「Uu, Kaoriii. My angeeel. Can you make eye contact with Otou-san soon? Otou-san is going to die here from the loneliness.」

Yes, it was Tomoichi. For two women to go to live show by themselves, they didn't know what could happen to them. Giving that argument, Tomoichi went along with Kaori and Sakura, but the attitude of Kaori that treated him like he didn't exist caused Tomoichi to make a contorted face that was about to cry. Furthermore, Kaori didn't change her attitude at all even after looking at her father acting like that, instead she was still smiling cheerfully, looking at such Kaori, honestly speaking it was a bit scary.

The cold war between the father and daughter was definitely inflicting damage

to Sakura's stomach.

By the way, the reason Kaori was taking such attitude wasn't only because of the quarrel at the car and also Tomoichi's accompaniment to the live show. Actually, when the families were talking at Sakura's house, a topic about Hajime came up, and urged by Sakura, Kaori made a call but……anyway what could be said was that Tomoichi bombed that phone call once more.

「……Hey, Kaori. How about you forgive Oji-san soon? Oji-san, he look like he is seriously going to cry there. Honestly, having an uncle with face about to cry following behind you on the street at night, it's normally scary.」

「Fufu, sheesh Sakura-oneechan. What are you saying? No matter where you see, there isn't anyone like that here you know?」

「Kaoriii! Otou-san is right here! Now, look here, please!」(TN: The 'please' is said in English.)

「See? There is no one right?」

「Haa……」

Sakura's stomach received further damage. For Sakura, if her cute little sister made a boyfriend, then she also wouldn't be so accepting of that boyfriend. Therefore, it wasn't like she couldn't understand Tomoichi's feeling. But, in reverse, to have a parent saying this and that about the person that she liked was……as a girl in the same position of being a daughter, she was also able to understand Kaori's feeling. She was exactly being stuck between a rock and a hard place.

'Geez, anything is fine, so won't something happen that will end this father-daughter fight that has become quite troublesome', when Sakura was running from reality by thinking that……

「Eehh? You girls there, you two were at the live show just now right? What a coincidence! Want to talk a bit?」

It came. Inside her heart Sakura held her head thinking「What kind of timing this is」. Ahead of the gaze of such Sakura, there was a group of youngster with really flashy atmosphere as though they were someone that really like messing around. Judging from their appearances, there were about ten people. Sakura

grandly made retorts, like why were they calling to two girls when there were about ten people in their group, or whether they even saw the man who seemed to be the father behind the two of them. Of course those were done inside her heart.

「My bad, but we have plan after this.」

「Plan? It's plan to go play right? Then, let's go together yeah. The more the merrier.」

Sakura politely refused, but the seducer group was grinning while surrounding Sakura and Kaori. No matter how they looked at this, it didn't seem that they weren't planning to let the two of them to merely go home. Because Sakura and also Kaori were beautiful woman and girl that really couldn't be found that often in this area, these men too wouldn't give up that easily.

But, naturally, seeing his beloved daughter and cute nephew getting hit on, there was no way Tomoichi could just stay quiet,

「You all. My daughter just say that she don't want to go with you. Now, open the way. We all just enjoy a nice live show. Let's both of our group avoid any troublesome matter.」

「Aa, what is it old man? Rather, your daughter? Eeh? By any chance, you are coming along with your daughter? Uwaa, that's seriously disgusting.」

「Hey old man, being overprotective is no good. Is this what is called as over-demanding parent? Have some self-awareness. Seriously, how uncool.」

「Rather, the one harassing these two here is you old man. Seriously, realize that. Come on, you two too, let's leave this stalker father and go play with us yeah?」

The men who were trying to pick up girls guffawed loudly from the words of Tomoichi who came out to the front while verbally abusing Tomoichi. Hearing their words, Tomoichi didn't even look particularly angry, far from that he didn't even show any fear being surrounded by more than ten people, he firmly said something more to stop the men from picking up girls more than this but……

Perhaps feeling that Tomoichi who was blocking their way as irritating, one of the men passed beside Tomoichi and stretched his hand toward Kaori.

「Can you not touch my daughter?」

「-, you are really noisy huh.」

Tomoichi suddenly gripped the man's hand, his almond eyes quietly narrowed and he gave words of restrain. Tomoichi wasn't particularly strong in a brawl. In his occupation he was a first class architecture, there was no chance for his physical strength to be questioned in such occupation. Even so, as an adult man who had piled up experience, furthermore as a father who was witnessing someone trying to lay their hand on his daughter, the light of his eyes contained a considerable pressure.

Therefore, the man was reflexively overpowered mentally, however, it seemed the man felt shame from that fact and his face immediately turned red indignantly. The man shook off the hand of Tomoichi that was grasping his hand, at the same time he hit Tomoichi.

Tomoichi let out a muffled voice and something red oozed from the corner of his lips.

The man driven by his indignation swung his arm further, while the other men also stepped forward to further hurt Tomoichi who was a hindrance for them. Sakura was raising her voice to stop them while her fingers were gliding on her smartphone to contact police, it was at that moment,

「What are you all doing I wonder? I wonder?」

A dread rushed. Through all the people in that place.

And then they noticed. Before they realized, Kaori who was already at Tomoichi's side had stopped with one hand the fist of the man that was swinging down.

A chill that was impossible to understand lathered on their skin bumpily, and the strange situation of a girl smilingly stopping the serious punch of an older man with just one hand, it caused everyone to stiffen, in the middle of that Kaori further let out words with flat tone that was the opposite of her smiling face.

「I'm asking you here, just what are you doing to my Otou-san I wonder?」

「Wha, what the hell, are you. Aa!? The father of you bitch was screwing

around, so I was only giving him a lesson!」

The intimidating air that Kaori emitted caused the man whose fist was stopped to get into frenzy while ranting. And then, the man's other hand tried to strike in order to "give a lesson" to Kaori.

「Otou-san was screwing around? I guess so. Indeed, he is a troubling Otou-san who is always screwing around. He is overprotective, treating me like I'm still a small child, he immediately sulk if he is not paid attention to, and he keep badmouthing Hajime-kun.」

「hrk, wha, what the hell-. This stupid strength-」

Kaori was talking with small voice in murmur, leaving the dumbfounded surrounding into a lurch.

While still gripping at the two wrists of a man with a build far larger than herself.

From a glance it was clear that the man was trying to pull away his hands with all his strength, but the hand holding at him didn't even twitch as though he was being shackled with iron to a wall. Kaori's words reached toward such man who was half falling into panic.

「But you see, Otou-san is kind you know? He always think of me, no matter how busy he is with his work he always try to make time to speak with me, he always protected me even though he is not strong in a brawl, when I worked hard he praised me a lot, and when I make mistake he scold me a lot.」

Kaori lifted her face. However, that gaze wasn't directed at the man in front of her eyes. What she was looking at was Tomoichi at the side.

「……Otou-san, I'm sorry. I should have stopped it before you got hit. I recalled many things that I was late to move. Thank you, for trying to protect me.」

「Kaori……」

Tomoichi only called Kaori's name looking at her wry smile. He could do nothing else but that. The reason was, because his daughter's figure was looking really grown-up for some reason. It was as though, she was letting go of his hand, where she had already left the nest since a long time ago. Even though

they were in the middle of a situation like this, the loneliness that flooded his chest clogged up all his words.

Kaori moved his gaze from such Tomoichi toward the men surrounding them, and then she let out her words along with an icy gaze.

「My father is the greatest father in the world. Don't you dare, humans at the level of you all make fun of him!」

「You bitch, let go of me alre——bugeh!?」

A kick that pointed to the sky was launched immediately after the angry yell. That kick impacted the jaw of the man whose both hands were gripped, and like that that man was blow away like a joke in parabolic arc.

The air returned to dead silence.

「If you all disappear right now, then I'll overlook this.」

Kaori's words resounded dignifiedly. A dainty girl was sending a young man with good physique flying with one kick——normally, the group of men would surely sense the abnormality of the situation, however, the difference in number between both sides and the common sense that said there was no way ten men could lose against high school girl caused them to mistake their choice for the sake of their tiny pride.

The men were breathing roughly in agitation, their mouths hurled out unrestrained abusive language, and they adjusted their stance in preparation to attack.

「Yep, I guess it can only be like this. People like you all surprisingly all has the same pattern.」

Saying that, Kaori lightly waved both her hands. Immediately, *kyakin!* a satisfying sound resounded and two metallic poles appeared in both her hands. Those were extendable batons.

Kaori was wearing a short sleeve clothes, which made anyone wanted to retort just where did she hid those batons, but those who knew, knew. That it was great that what came out were only extendable batons weren't it. Inside the ring that was attached with a crimson jewel dangling on Kaori's neck, there was even

brutal large swords that could easily split even a great rock into two, those swords were exactly Kaori's specialized weapon.

In the end, two sword style using the extendable batons (Adamantium made-Lightning Clad enchantment) flashed in the coast street at night, it became a fierce society study for the young men. Along with a trauma that wouldn't disappear.

「Oji-san. It's great isn't it. Kaori get angry like this for Oji-san's sake. See, she is just like Oba-san. Please look, at this goosebumps. It's also like this when Oba-san is angry.」(TN: Oba-san=aunt)

「……Yo, you are right. Also, is, is it just my feeling? It feels like I can see "something" on Kaori's back just like Kaoruko though.」

The last man ate a fierce blow at his butt that would make even Thai kick looked like a mere child's play, the man screamed「Aaa———!!」while flying on air. Sakura and Tomoichi who were looking at that scene with a distant look raised a dry laugh.

After that, Kaori tampered with the memory of the seducers with her own soul magic before she returned toward Tomoichi and Sakura with a really nice smile. It went without saying how Tomoichi and Sakura shivered altogether.

After that, seeing Kaori getting all fidgety looking like she wanted to talk with Tomoichi, Sakura who read the mood went back home first. Currently, Tomoichi and Kaori were walking silently with just the two of them on the path home.

「Otou-san, it doesn't hurt anymore?」

「Yeah, it's fine already Kaori. ……Magic is really amazing huh. You have shown it to me many times so it feels too late saying this but, even now it still makes me feel admiration witnessing it.」

The wound on his lips had been healed due to Kaori's healing magic. Tomoichi said his thanks at Kaori with an admiration just like he said. Feeling relieved hearing that, Kaori's expression softened. And then, her gaze began wandering as though she was searching for words.

Seeing that state of his daughter, Tomoichi half-guessed just what she wanted to speak about and sighed inside his heart, then he urged on Kaori to speak.

「Kaori, if there is something you want to say then you can just say it as it is within your mind. After all I'm the best father in the world. No matter what is it, I'll listen to what you say.」

Kaori chuckled at the way her father spoke and she opened her mouth.

「Say, I noticed this just now but……Hajime-kun, he resembled Otou-san isn't he-, that's what I think.」

「……Can you pause there, Kaori. Even Otou-san has this thing called limit to what I can and cannot accept you know? I'm similar with that harem man that is like a walking and talking haughty arrogance? I wonder, can Otou-san go out for a little bit of journey? It's okay, I think after finding myself back for about a year, Otou-san will be able to stand back again.」

「Ahaha, that's not what I meant. What I mean is not the current Hajime-kun, but the previous Hajime-kun.」

「The previous?」

Kaori nodded toward Tomoichi who showed a questioning face. And then, she narrowed her eyes in nostalgia and began to talk.

「Yes, previously. He couldn't fight or anything at all, but when he thought that it was necessary then he would step out without hesitation, that kind of weak but strong person. Yep, surely, that was why I became curious about Hajime-kun. Because, if I can be with a person that is similar with Otou-san, then I will be happy, I know that from looking at Kaa-san.」

「Kaori……. Right now, Otou-san's feeling is really complicated. I'm happy but, or perhaps not happy……. However, that's really hard to believe huh. That him, and the him of the past that Kaori talked about, I really cannot connect the two of them……」

「Isn't that right. I too, when I reunited with Hajime-kun I was really shaken then. That was how much he changed. It was really terrible for him, to the degree that it was absolutely necessary for him to change. But, even so, deep inside he didn't change. That's why, there are people that love Hajime-kun that much. A person who is merely insincere and like woman, it would be strange if that kind of person is surrounded by that many people isn't it?」

「……Perhaps it's just as you say. But, even so, as expected as a father it's hard for me to consent. No matter who, if it is a father who has a daughter, then he will surely want to entrust his daughter to a person who will treasure her the most and only her.」

Tomoichi scratched his head looking troubled. Kaori took Tomoichi's arm and then hugged him happily.

「Thank you, Otou-san. But, I have confidence. Indeed, it's not just me alone that is with him, and I might not be the number one, even so I'm confident that I can have happiness that won't lose to anyone. Even though there are many people that are walking together with him, even so I can puff up my chest and say I am cherished. Because, the person who had crawled up from the bottom of the abyss just with the thinking that he wanted to go home to his important family, and defeated even god just because he wanted to take back his important person, such person is the one who gave his promise to me you know?」

Saying that, Kaori showed Tomoichi the ring that was dangling from her neck. Different from treasure warehouse, it was just a ring, but it was the eternal ring that was filled with the oath of her loved one.

Seeing that ring, Tomoichi's expression turned extremely bitter.

「Otou-san. Hajime-kun, he is a person that will treasure every aspect of his important people, even the treasured people of that treasured people. That's why, he said that he won't give up no matter how much Otou-san hate him. He told me that he will treasure Otou-san and Okaa-san too.」

「……」

「That's why, I understand that this is not normal, that this is something outlandish, but, it's fine even if it will take time, but I want Otou-san to treasure Hajime-kun too. I want Otou-san, to treasure my treasured person too.」

Kaori's words rode the flowing night wind that carried the aroma of salt and vanished. Tomoichi's expression was still bitter without any reply. If anyone looked at his eyes, they would be able to see a horrible discord whirling inside.

The long silent was continuing. Only the sounds of footsteps and sea waves

were resounding in the ears of the two.

It was unknown how much time had passed, before long Tomoichi deeply, and grandly sighed. Toward Kaori who was staring at Tomoichi anxiously, his shoulders dropped while one of his hands held out to Kaori.

「Kaori. Can you contact that guy……Hajime-kun for me?」

「Otou-san……yes, wait a little bit.」

Kaori took her smartphone and called Hajime with a few rings. Hajime who answered the phone was told by Kaori that Tomoichi wanted to talk. Hajime consented readily without sounding particularly worked up. Hajime's attitude that looked composed caused Tomoichi's face to turn bitter once more. Kaori handed over the smartphone while smiling wryly at that expression of his father.

「……It's me.」

『It has been a long time.』(TN: Hajime used extremely polite language here.)

「Hmph! We just met around two months ago. Saying it has been a long time from that……it appears that within you, the matter of me is just like a mere stone at the roadside huh.」

『No, that's unthinkable. The family of Kaori is as important as a jewel for me.』

「Hmph! As always, it's only your mouth that keep spouting out pretty words isn't it? Is that how you trick my daughter?」

『Never. If pushed to say, then I think it is me the one who got caught.』

「Hmph!! Is this that? 『Not really, I am not really feeling anything here, but Kaori said that she want this no matter what sooo, I just give it a try』That's what you think huh! Just what in the world you are——」

「*Otou-san?*」

「I'm sorry.」

When Tomoichi heard Hajime's voice, his hostility flooded out like a conditioned reflex. At the same time, when he heard「*Otou-san?*」from his daughter, he also let out words of apology from conditioned reflex. He wasn't a mere father. He was a trained father.

While keenly feeling the gaze of Hannya-san from the side, Tomoichi cleared his throat while trickling cold sweat and opened his mouth once more.

「Ahem-. That, see, today, I called because……well, I too have various things in my mind. A father that has a daughter, no matter what he cannot be gentle toward the man who is the partner of said daughter.」

『I understand. After all, I too have a daughter that makes me resolve to be a father. If I am in your position, and my daughter bring along a man like me, then there is no doubt that I will break all the bones in his body and buried him inside concrete, and in the end I will throw him in the middle of Pacific Ocean.』

「Eh? Ah, yeah, tha, that's it. I, I too, is thinking of doing at least that much, yup, to such man you know?」

『Yes. That's why, I understand how your blood must be seething. So much, that you must be thinking that you want to drop a nuclear bomb right now at me even if it will drag the surrounding to it, that you want to dye everything in dark red isn't that right?』

「……Yo, you really got it huh!」

This time Tomoichi was trickling cold sweat from a different meaning. Hajime's hostility was too extreme that far surpassed him. Furthermore, just by imagining the imaginary loved one of that daughter who might appear in the future, Japan might fall into a pinch in the future. Tomoichi was thinking, 「Ee? Isn't the scale of hostility is a bit too different from mine?」, which caused him to succumb to a complicated sense of defeat.

「Ahem-. It feels like, I somehow come to understand really well how you are thinking, so let's put this matter aside for a bit. More than that, I want to confirm something to you.」

『Yes.』

「You don't have any intention to separate with Kaori, conversely you also don't have any intention to separate with the other girls. You are planning to remain married with them all for life, and you don't have the intention to bend that will. Isn't that right?」

『It's just as you say. I understand how such thing is outlandish, how it goes

against ethics, and how there are people like you who think unpleasantly of such thing. But even knowing that, let me say it once more. Everyone, they all are my wives. That will of mine won't bend. No matter what can possibly happen from here on, I won't yield of that will at all. My deepest apologize but, I will stick to this will for my whole life until you can possibly accept it.』

「tsk, you are brazenly acting defiant huh.」

『I will do everything in my power, so that someday, you can possibly accept this as a sincerity and determination of my own way.』(TN: The way Hajime used you to call Tomoichi here is also done in the politest way.)

Tomoichi's hand that was holding the smartphone tightened. His fury was welling up hearing that nonsensical things being spoken so brazenly. However, he saw the eyes of his daughter that was staring fixedly at him from the side, and then Tomoichi sighed once more to let out the heavy thing inside his chest.

「I really want to punch you flying right now you know? The ideal future for me is that I won't see your face anymore with my daughter completely forgetting you once and for all.」

『I guess so. The troubling thing is, I understand your feeling painfully well. I also understand how it must be irritating for you that I am acting sympathetic like this. This is really a highly difficult problem, even more than adventuring in another world that was filled with death and absurdity.』

「I don't know about the absurdity of another world, but there is not even a single doubt in me that this is the greatest trial that I have ever faced in my whole life. Aah, really, just why my daughter encountered you in the past.」

『Surely, that's because there is no one who can stand superior to this mean world.』

「No doubt about that. Good grief, this world really make me go through something uncalled for. ……However, what is really, reall~y unfortunate is……my daughter, is happy with this, with an expression so lovely that I have never seen before.」

『……』

Tomoichi stood still there. His parent's house had come into view. But, he

couldn't muster any will to enter the house like this. First, there was something that he had to ask, for the sake of the words and wish of his daughter that he had heard in this night, and above that, for the sake of producing a conclusion inside himself.

「Let me ask this to you, the shitty bastard who is trying to have your own way for a screwy future. Can you vow, that you will able to make, my daughter, my Kaori, to keep having that kind of expression forever? Can you vow, that she will be able to throw out her chest, and declare without hesitation that she is happy, can you make her continue to be that kind of girl forever?」

At the other side of the phone, Tomichi felt that the atmosphere suddenly changed. It was something that made Tomoichi felt Hajime's serious feeling beyond any doubt before even hearing his next words……

『If it's those vow, I have vowed it since a long time ago. This life, is for that sake. It will never change, no matter what.』

「……」

Standing still in place, Tomoichi looked up to the sky. While feeling the gaze of his daughter that was looking up at him, he repressed the excessive urge to yell「BASTAAARDD————!!」inside him. And then, breaking the silence, he formed the words, while feeling a strange sense of defeat, he summoned up all his strength to the limit, in order to grant the earnest wish of his daughter.

「……Next time, come to my home. You can have dinner there.」

『……Thank you very much. I will surely visit to trouble your hospitality.』

An impact run through Tomoichi's arm. When he looked there, Kaori was hugging Tomoichi's arm with a full smile. With a small voice,「Otou-san, thank you. I love you!」she sent him the greatest words for a father. His feeling that almost made him scattered bloody vomit from working up the sentence just now, and also his murky feeling, all those feelings were somewhat cleared up if he could receive such words.

At the same time, when he thought that he received those words due to Haijme's existence, as expected he couldn't help but felt a sense of defeat, so

「Do, don't you misunderstand! It's not like I recognize you or anything! Until

the end, I'm just thinking of keeping an eye at you for a bit, that's all there is to it, don't you dare make Kaori sad even for a bit! If you dare do that, then it will be that, that! It will be concrete and Pacific Ocean and Nuclear I tell you!」

『Haha, that's really terrifying. I will engrave those words deep in my heart.』

Tomoichi's speech that was just like a tsundere caused Hajime and also Kaori to leak out chuckles reflexively.

Like that, it was at that timing when the talk almost end with a good feeling,

『Goshujin-samaaa~. Thy beloved servant has returned~. For the reward, please, chastise mine butt a lot toniiight!』

From the other side of the phone, some kind of voice that was filled with a mix of excitement and charm resounded. The moment that voice became audible, the atmosphere of Hajime changing into astonishment could be felt transmitted from the phone receiver.

『Tio, you, how did you come back!? Even though as the punishment of making merry in front of my Jii-chan and others before this I had wrapped you in bamboo mat and tied you up to a missile before launching it……』(TN: Jii-chan=grandfather)

『Of course, it's obviously by crawling back without untangling Goshujin-sama's love(rope)! The kindness of not exploding the missile……if I didn't answer that kindness, how could I be Goshujin-sama's servant!』

『That's a lie right……I sent you flying until the other side of the mountain, you shouldn't be able to come back without crossing through the downtown……』

『Yes! When the people saw this crawling figure that art like caterpillar, cheers(screams) were raised everywhere. As expected even I felt shy, furthermore the authorities came out, so I traveled with higher speed, everyone was already loudly cheering(pandemonium) then.』

『You are making a new urban legend at the city where my Jii-chan is living……』

『Now, grant the prize to me who hath worked hard in coming back. Specifically, a reward using that black, hard, and large thing, to chastise mine butt! Recently, Goshujin-sama didn't do it much, so it feels lonely!』

『You stupid idiot! What kind of thing you are running your mouth about with that loud voice!』

Of course, that perverted exchanges that were done with loud voice were properly transmitted through the phone, to the father and daughter with cleared feelings.

「……Oi, perverted bastard.」

『! ……This is a misunderstanding desu. Give me a chance for explaining——』

「You think I'll give you a chance? You think I'll let you? Fufu, isn't it strange? Aa, you are really, a strange man. Fufufufu.」

An eerie chuckle came out from Tomoichi. At his side, Kaori was holding her head while murmuring「Tio you idiooot」. And then, she tried to cover for Hajime and tried to talk to Tomoichi, but before she could do that, Tomoichi exploded.

「I take back my words-. You shitty bastaaaaarrrdd-! I absolute won't hand over my daughter to a perverted bastard like you! I prohibit you to approach her until the end of the world-! Someone like you, just explode with nuclear at Pacific Oceaaaannnnnnnnnn————!!!」

『Wai-, ple-——』

Hajime tried to make excuse, but before he could do that, Tomoichi swung up his hand holding the smartphone, and then he threw the phone to the ground. A grievous scream「My smartphone————!!」could be heard from the side, but such voice didn't reach Tomoichi who had transformed into a warrior that was a father protecting his daughter.

Far from that, as though the smartphone was a nemesis that couldn't be allowed to live under the same sky, or possibly so that the hateful scum wouldn't be able to call from the other side of the phone anymore, he stepped on the smartphone and grinded it many times.

Naturally, Kaori's smartphone was invited into heaven.

「O, Otou-san! What are you doing!」

「I am severing ties with that maggot-, with all my strength here! Kaori, don't meet with that perverted bastard, until the end of the world! This is a promise

with Otou-san!」

Indeed, if there was a father who would still entrust the daughter after hearing that kind of dialogue from the other side of the phone, then it would be better to not waste time to take such father to a hospital. To a hospital for brain.

However, from the point of view of Kaori who had thoroughly witnessed Hajime's unique relationship with Tio at the other world where she had already accepted it as ordinary happening, although she could understand her father's feeling perfectly, but witnessing her smartphone got trampled and hearing the person she loved getting called as maggot caused her to want to object against her better judgment……

Tomoichi sensed his daughter's atmosphere that obviously didn't seem to obey him even after hearing that kind of exchanges in the phone, and on top of that even after he told her that she must not meet that man anymore. Tomoichi was trembling all over while declaring with all his strength at the residential area at night.

「Otou-san! Is abso~~~~~-lutely! Not appro————————ving-!!!」

「Ah, wait, Otou-san! Where are you going————!!」

Tomoichi suddenly started to run. ……To the direction that was the opposite from the house. And then, in the blink of eye he disappeared toward the night residential area.

If he went back to the house, then he would be talked by his daughter about that hateful shitty bastard again. That was why, he wouldn't go home anymore. Until Kaori understand, Otou-san will run away from home! It was such thing.

The shoulders of Kaori who somehow guessed his father's intention slumped down, while

「Normally, the one who run away from home because they are not being understood, should be the daughter isn't it.」

After whispering that, Kaori then chased after Tomoichi.

The father who absolutely didn't want to approve the person that his daughter loved, and the daughter who wanted his father to approve no matter what, both

of them began to race at night.

After that, whether Hajime could be accepted or not by Tomoichi……

Anyway, let's just say that Hajime worked even harder than even godslaying for that.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Everyone, do you know about [Aozora no Kishi] series at Nio Dou? (TN: This refer to Nico Douga)

I found it recently, and it was totally enthralling.

Watching that, my hand reached out to Ace Combat again (it makes me have misgiving about the update next week……)

I want to try writing light novel with idiot and cool fellows like that as the characters someday.

Uploader-sama, thank you for making my holiday lovely.

Perhaps, surely, maybeee, I think I'll update at 6 P.M Saturday next week.

Arifureta Chapter 195

Arifureta After – Secret of Yaegashi-style

AN: Yaegashi-style……how could it become like this

It was just before the sun approached the zenith of its climb. Hajime was walking expressionlessly at a residential area at a certain riverside.

It wasn't like he was having a bad mood, but when he thought about the destination where he would be visiting after this, it made him feeling somewhat melancholic, on top of that it also made him racking his brain with this and that about how to deal with it, so his expression was naturally stiffened.

Although, no matter how much Hajime was worrying about it, with how he had no intention of yielding the status quo and his will, resolving this was extremely difficult, and finding a solution that could work in one go was next to impossible. Compared to this difficult problem, conquering a great labyrinth was something really simple.

「Well, that's obvious, it can't be helped huh.」

He let out a small sigh while staring at his destination that came into view at the path ahead.

It was a spacious ground that was surrounded by splendid hedge, with a large Japanese house was inside it, or rather than a house it was an estate. History could be felt from its appearance.

With a glance at that hedge and estate, finally Hajime arrived in front of the entrance. The front gate was also a heavy and splendid structure. The wood and

iron were clearly conveying the months and years they had been piling up until now. If ordinary person visited this place for the first time, they would unconsciously straighten up themselves.

The family name written beside the front gate was——”Yaegashi”.

Yes, this place was Shizuku’s house where the dojo of Yaegashi-style was also established jointly.

For some reason Hajime looked at the name plate where the name “Yaegashi” was carved while pushing at the button of the interphone installed beside the gate, the only piece that approached the modern age here.

『Yes, who could this be?』

A female voice immediately responded. It sounded young, with pleasant tone that sounded calm, a voice that gave the feeling of maturity. The owner of that voice——if his memory from when he met her the last time was correct, then it was the voice of Shizuku’s mother, Kirino, she was the one who responded to Hajime.

「I received the invitation. This is Nagumo Hajime.」

『You are right in time, Hajime-san. Welcome. The gate is not locked, so please come inside as you are.』

「Excuse me for disturbing.」

Hajime put his hand on the gate. And then he pushed it open while, once more he sighed at “that” which he felt when he was walking the path that was facing the hedge.

Immediately after that, *hyu*- a sound of cutting wind!

「As expected huh……」

He carelessly lifted his hand in front of his forehead. Between the gap of his fingers, there were several spheres held in between. Those things flew the instant Hajime opened the gate which he caught between his fingers. When he put a little strength into his fingers, those balls split with cracking sound and from inside them colorful powder came out.

When he brought his nose near, the aroma of multiple spices like pepper or

cayenne pierced his nasal cavity severely. If the spheres hit the forehead and their content scattered out, normal person would shed tears grandly while writhing in an unstoppable sneezing.

「I want to make retort just what kind of period is this but……really this house. Besides, if I am told this is reaping what I sow then that's it…..can't be helped.」

Hajime strode across the threshold of Yaegashi residence while smiling wryly.

First the scenery of a considerably wide garden until the entrance of the main building entered his eyes. It wasn't something like a Japanese-style garden where one could enjoy the sight, but a garden with normal weed and gravel spreading even though they looked maintained. The path from the front gate until the main building's entranceway was shown by stone paving, there was a small pond a little bit distanced in between. Next there were also garden lantern hung irregularly and relatively big trees growing.

There was another independent one-story house at slight distance away, that place became the dojo of Yaegashi-style. But, in this holiday normally there should be the zealous voices of a lot of disciples practicing coming from there, instead eerily there was no sound from there.

Hajime who spontaneously wanted to sigh after guessing the reason of that silence advanced on the stone paving, approaching a spot where a tree nearby with dense leaves had one of its branches extending until above the stone paving, it was at that time,

A killing intent was suddenly-!!

When Hajime looked up, there was a figure of an old man jumping down from the branch above his head, the hakama of the old man was fluttering while his hands were holding a wooden sword aloft! The sword ki the old man was clad with wasn't something normal, determination of sure defeat with one hit was residing in his eyes! That figure which swooped down from the sky, swinging down a mighty attack, it was just like the technique of a certain wandering swordsman!

But, toward that sudden attack,

「It has been a long time, Shuuzou-san.」

Hajime who stopped still with one hand the attack which looked like it could pulverize at least a boulder, lowered his head normally and gave a greeting. The opponent in front of his eyes that looked like he was around 80 with deeply wrinkled face and white hair, was an instructor of Yaegashi-style and the grandfather of Shizuku, so Hajime must show manners to him.

「Yes, long time no see, Hajime-kun. Nice of you to come. You can relax here.」

「Thank you very much.」

Shuuzou was speaking words of welcome normally as though nothing special happened while looking completely expressionless with his hands pushing down the wooden sword until the very limit. In response to that, Hajime too also returned the greeting familiarly.

Hajime and Shuuzou stared at each other wordlessly for a while, but as expected Shuuzou then quietly pulled back his wooden sword as though nothing happened and he turned on his heel.

「I think Shizuku is in her room. But, it's a little unacceptable for you two who are still student to seclude yourself inside the same room. There are also delicious tea cakes, so come to the living room.」

「Aa~, yes, thank you-」

Shuuzou turned his back on Hajime and returned toward the dojo while talking. But, in the middle of that conversation in an awkward timing, a new killing intent attacked Hajime!

Hajime quickly crouched and over his head a sharp violent gale blew past. Furthermore, a cuff of hakama was reflected at the edge of the sight of the crouching Hajime. A low kick aiming for Hajime's head was rapidly approaching.

While evading that by leaping aside, Hajime used one of his hand in a handstand posture to roll before landing back. Ahead of his gaze there was the figure of the attacker still in a continued alertness.

「Yaa, Hajime-kun. Nice of you to come. You can relax here.」

「……Thank you, Koichi-san. Excuse me for my intrusion.」

Yaegashi Koichi. He was the father of Shizuku, and an instructor of Yaegashi-

style. He was a middle-aged handsome man with rather harsh look, a gash in his cheek that he got from somewhere was his trademark. While saying a speech that was the same with his father Shuuzou, and also with the same expressionless look as expected, he put his wooden sword on his waist as though nothing happened.

At that moment, a wooden sword was thrown with great speed from the side! Hajime who quickly turned his head and evaded it clearly heard a clicking tongue echoing from behind the nearby lantern basket.

Even furthermore, from behind the evading Hajime was *zapaa*- sound resounding, the moment he heard that one of the pupils who seemed to be lurking inside the pond threw countless iron rods the size of a palm from a pose that looked like a wild falcon!

Hajime evaded that with flowing feet movement like fish swimming in air, but right after that he noticed something and backflipped highly from that place. When he did that, at the next moment a young pupil smeared with soil leaped out from under the ground in the garden holding a wooden sword. The pupil was whispering「Chiih, so I failed bringing him down-」with small volume.

Hajime who landed while smiling faintly to those words quickly lifted his hand and grasped something that flew toward him. An arrow was caught inside that hand. When he followed the trajectory, above the roof of the main building was a figure of someone that seemed to be a pupil holding a bow.

「I'm thinking this every time but……Yaegashi-style is absolutely not a kenjutsu dojo right? Rather I think this place is a ninjutsu dojo instead.」(TN: Kenjutsu=sword art, ninjutsu=ninja art)

「What are you saying, Hajime-kun. Something like shinobi cannot possibly exist. Are you reading too much manga? It's troubling that someone trying to become Shizuku's partner is doing something like that.」

Hajime whispered his conjecture while staring fixedly at the pupils who were returning to the dojo quickly while likewise also acting like nothing happened. Hearing that Shuuzou said something like that with a tone that sounded really stumped.

The soaked wet pupil who was lurking in the pond quickly took off his dougi

uniform and underneath it there was black clothes but……his face looked as though saying「So what?」. Surely even though the iron bars thrown at him looked similar with the shuriken that he previously saw at museum, or even though the pupil who climbed down from the main building's rooftop was using special descending tool where the tip of the rope had something shaped like rake to be fixed on the roof edge, or that one of them wasn't making any footstep while running, surely, everything was just Hajime's misunderstanding.

Even if right now, in front of Hajime's eyes a pupil was quickly running with forward-bent posture——the so called ninja run right past him, surely that was just his misunderstanding!

「Hajime, welcome!」

But, at that moment, a slightly lively voice called toward Hajime who was seeing off the back figures of the people of Yaegashi dojo with complicated expression. When he turned toward the voice, he could see the figure of Shizuku dressed in gorgeous kimono waving her hand at him from the porch of the main building.

Hajime lifted his hand with a greeting of「Yo」while approaching her. Shizuku's expression burst brighter the closer he got. Looking from close, it seemed that she was wearing cosmetic even if just for a bit. It appeared that she was dressing up a little with Hajime coming here from being invited.

Shizuku who was lovable as usual in the small things quickly cleared up his gloomy feeling that had been piling up due to this and that since he stepped past the gate of Yaegashi house, which he couldn't retort at even when he wanted to.

「As expected, Shizuku is suited with Japanese clothes. Though it doesn't look like a pure yukata……」

「Ye, yes. I received this as sample from a prototype that Tio designed. It seems that this is a combination of dragonoid race's clothing with Japanese clothes.」

「I see, she is a pervert but she has good sense. It's like it was order-made for Shizuku. Besides, the sakura color also suit you.」

「-……thank you」

Shizuku looked shy while she quietly touched her lips. She couldn't hide her

happiness from Hajime noticing and praising her. The person who was there wasn't the usual gallant knightly Shizuku, but a normal girl in love that could be found anywhere.

Instantly, Hajime put his hand into his breast pocket and summoned a mini Donner that was attached with silencer. Without even showing drawing out motion, he rapid-fired to the right side with the gun barrel hidden under his arm! Right away, countless sparks and metallic sound scattered midair!

Shizuku came to her senses with 'hah', when she turned her gaze there she found bulge on the ground so small that no one would notice it was there without paying attention to it, from there several small things that looked like bamboo pipe peeked out from there……

It seemed, there were still several pupils hiding underground. Most likely there was a tunnel that could be entered by a person under the surface, by slightly lifting up the lid that was camouflaged as ground, they sniped at Hajime using blowpipe from that gap.

「He, hey-, you all! You all are doing something like that again! Come out here!」

Shizuku raised an angry yell with bright red face. But, they didn't respond to Shizuku's words, the ground was making slightly lumpy moving and they vanished somewhere away.

Shizuku was trembling all over. Hajime was sending her a slightly sympathizing gaze while trying to ask her about the matter that bothered him as expected.

「Hey, Shizuku. Your family, just as I thought they are the descendants of ninja or something right? It's true isn't it?」

「……There is no way that's true, I think. Before we were summoned, there is nothing like this. It's like this since Hajime came to my house. Even I didn't know that kind of technique existed in Yaegashi-style. In reality I was only taught katana, martial art and throwing art.」

「I don't think that's at the level of "only" though……. Or, how should I put it, you didn't ask them? Like,『Did I, receive kunoichi training while I'm not realizing it myself?』」

「I questioned them already. I asked, what is Yaegashi-style? Like that.」

「And the answer?」

「It's commonplace kenjutsu and a little bit acrobatics. That was what they told me.」

「So they concealed it from even their daughter ……」

Shizuku was whispering「This family of mine……」with faraway look, to which Hajime was sending him increasingly sympathetic gaze, while to Yaegashi family's mystery——not only they weren't hiding it at all even though they were obviously ninja like, even their deception was so noncommittal it made him wanted to retort 'do you all even have the motivation to hide it huh'——he was smiling dryly.

After that, Shizuku who knew about her grandfather and father's assault apologized to Hajime with teary eyes while heading to Shizuku's room for the time being, but even during their walk there, spears stabbed from the gap between wall, a pitfall suddenly appeared on the corridor floor, the wall in the middle abruptly turned where an expressionless Koichi came at Hajime with kodachi swinging, and when they thought they heard someone spoke「Muh, my hand slipped」, from the corner of the corridor a chain scythe flew making a pillar as its fulcrum which altered its trajectory using the centrifugal force toward Hajime……

「Shizuku……just accept it. Your house is a ninja residence. Your family is ninja.」

「I who don't know until this year that my own house has that kind of contraptions is…….I mean, Ojii-chan! Chain scythe is no good! Look it got stuck into the wall! That's obviously the real thing isn't it!? Just where are you keeping that kind of weapon!」

Shizuku angrily went to the corner of the corridor while waving her yukata's cuff, but there was already no one there. Shizuku crumbled down on all fours. This was the first time she saw the reverse face of her family since she returned from another world. It appeared Shizuku was burdened with the fate to go through hardships even inside her family.

「Hey, Shizuku. As expected should we go to the living room instead of your room? Shuuzou-san also told me that. Like this, I don't know what kind of

contraption will activate the moment I entered your room. It won't be a problem for me but, your treasured collection(plush doll) might be in danger you know.」

「……Uu. There is nothing like these odd contraptions in my room, supposedly. There is undoubtedly something in the living room……or rather, I'm already terribly angry by the point of time Hajime is attacked! I'll have Hajime together with me in my room until the meal timeee! If anyone be a nuisance, I aa~bsolutely won't forgive them anyone hear!」

Surely Shizuku was raising her voice loudly toward her family who must be lurking behind the ceiling and at the other side of the wall.

Like that they finally arrived at Shizuku's room. Inside there were many plush dolls placed that made the room cramped. There was lovely animal and cat calendar, pink curtain, a cushion attached with fluffy rabbit ear. The whole room was enveloped in soft atmosphere with faintly sweet fragrance wafting off. It was a really sly girly room.

Shizuku put sitting cushion of droopy raccoon in front of a small round table made of glass. When Hajime sat on the cushion it made「pukyu」sound. The figure of the demon king of another world sitting down on mascot cushion that made voice, if it was seen by the classmates and the fellows of another world (especially someone like the empereor) surely it would be a foregone conclusion for them to burst in laughter.

「Wait there. I'll prepare tea and snack right now.」

「No, you don't really need to do that. Rather, I don't want to be left alone in this house……」

「Uu. I, it will be fine. Because my room is a safe zone.」

Even while faltering in her words, Shizuku guaranteed that 'my room is safe!', immediately after that,

「Hajime-san, welcome. This is sweet bean jelly from a long standing shop. Please have some.」

Saying that, Shizuku's mother——Kirino appeared carrying tea and snack.

——From the ceiling *sucha-!* she jumped down

「Okaa-san!? Where did you come down from just now!? Wait, the ceiling board is out of place!? No way……even though I should have properly investigate my room when I knew that the house is a contraption residence……」

As expected Kirino was smiling friendlily as though nothing happened with a sidelong glance at Shizuku who was dumbfounded while looking up at the ceiling. That figure which was gentle and calm exactly like a Yamato Nadeshiko, yet with an atmosphere where a straight core could be felt from her, it caused Hajime to comprehend it 'I see', that she was indeed the mother of Shizuku. She was a woman that made him thought, or even made him anticipated that when Shizuku aged beautifully, surely she would become a woman like this.

However, by the point of time she jumped down from the ceiling while properly wearing kimono, with a tray in one hand that was placed with tea and snack, with not only her clothes unruffled, but not even a drop of tea was spilled, she wasn't someone normal at all.

「He, hey, Okaa-san. Let me ask in this chance, putting aside the matter regarding my room's ceiling for later, it's just as I thought that Okaa-san is a kunoichi? Hey, is that true?」

Since she returned home until today in this moment, different from her father and grandfather, her mother didn't show that kind of sign at all. Shizuku was asking toward such mother with a really complicated feeling that was half「Say that this is not true, mama」, and half「Okaa-san, so you too」.

Toward such Shizuku, Kirino was,

「My, Shizuku. You are too much in high spirits just because Hajime-san is here……. Forgive her okay, Hajime-san. Geez, this child, surely she is trying her best to make a joke that is in line with Hajime-san's hobby but……by nature, she is a serious person, so like this her joke is not really funny isn't it? A joke like『You are kunoichi?』toward her mother of all thing, see? She is a child like this but, please don't desert her no matter what.」

「……Please rest assured. I don't think that it's not funny or anything even for a little bit. Rather, I'm greatly in sympathy with her. ——Are you okay, Shizuku?」

「I cannot do this anymore, Hajime. I want to become the child of Hajime's family already……」

Hajime did his best to console Shizuky who was hanging her head down with an expression that was like a tired old man with ‘there there’ gesture. Seeing that harmonious(?) figure of her daughter and Hajime, Kirino said「My, geez Shizuku, acting like that in front of your parent. Yes yes, Okaa-san will leave right away」and left the room.

Of course, *hyupa-!* she jumped up to the ceiling.

Seeing the ceiling board that was returned back to normal soundlessly, Shizuku then looked at Hajime with an expression that could break into tear anytime.

「We, well, what……like this Shizuku is also taught the secret of your family little by little yes. I don’t know if that’s because you returned from another world, or because you were able to make a lover like me but……good for you.」

「In this world, I wonder if there is matter that is better off to not be known……. I feel like the thing they are doing is gradually escalating……」

Shizuku was comforted while being caressed by Hajime.

Hajime thought while looking at Shizuku that was like that. It was normally hard to imagine that she wouldn’t know about her family and the house’s contraptions until she entered high school. But, there was no way that Shizuku was lying, in that case, that meant that Shuuzou and others were seriously hiding it from Shizuku.

Furthermore, before the summoning, in other words even when she became high school student this matter hadn’t been told to her. That could possibly mean that Shizuku wouldn’t be told any of this for her whole life, such possibility couldn’t be discarded.

Then, why did a matter about one’s own family was hidden from their only daughter, or granddaughter.

At the great labyrinth of another world, Shizuku’s true feeling was exposed. After that Hajime became aware of the things that Shizuku was harboring from the story that he heard from Shizuku herself. About how happy her stern grandfather was when Shizuku displayed the talent for kenjutsu. About how much the people around her were putting their expectation on her.

And also about how as the result, just how much Shizuku’s true feeling was

suppressed because of those.

Hajime recalled the words that were said to him the first time Hajime first faced Shuuzou and Koichi.

——I see, so Shizuku, is fine already.

——My thanks, for letting Shizuku be a girl.

It seemed that rather than the return from another world, the two of them were feeling gratitude from the bottom of their heart at the fact that Shizuku fell in love from her own true feeling, at that growth of her. Relief also exuded out from them.

Hajime didn't ask much at that time, but he was able to guess.

By any chance, Shuuzou and others might be regretting that they made Shizuku studying Yaegashi-style. It was impossible to tell a grandfather to not be happy when his granddaughter had a lot of talent for the family style, parent having expectation for their children was also something natural.

That was why they got too passionate against their better judgment, and like that when they noticed, Shizuku already couldn't even make complaint to her family, creating a Shizuku who killed so many parts of herself.

Seeing such Shizuku, surely Shuuzou and others didn't teach her anything more than kenjutsu so that she wouldn't kill part of herself anymore than that. They thoroughly concealed the family secret.

This was just his guess, but Hajime was convinced that it was the truth.

Hajime spoke with gentle tone while caressing Shizuku's head.

「Perhaps they are troubling family but……you are treasured by them right?」

「……I don't deny that.」

It appeared that Shizuku also guessed that somehow. Though she couldn't help but unintentionally looking sour because it was hidden from her, and how extremely troubling the absurdity of that secret was.

「Now then, putting aside for the time being how one of my wives become a kunoichi」

「I don’t become a kunoichi, don’t put that aside.」

Shizuku looked increasingly sour with Hajime’s words, but when she noticed that presence of many people was spreading out little by little at the surrounding, her cheeks cramped.

「Well, there is also Shizuku getting taught about your family I think but…… more than half of this is a test for me I guess. This must be something like a revenge for a harem man who dared putting his hand on their important daughter. Even Kirino-san was merciless even though her face was smiling like that.」

「Okaa-san? As far as I know, Okaa-san didn’t do anything to Hajime though……」

「No, she is taking action even now you know. ……This tea and sweet bean jelly, something is entered inside. Poison doesn’t work on me, but from the sensation it’s something like paralyzing drug I guess. Perhaps they intend to attack while I cannot move.」

「OKAAA-SAAA————————N!!! WHAT ARE YOU GIVING TO YOUR DAUGHTER’S LOVER!!! STOP SCREWING AROUND, I’LL CUT DOWN ALL OF YOU TOGETHEEEERR-」

Inside Yaegashi residence in midday, the angry yell of infuriated Shizuku reverberated. She jumped out the room with black katana in one hand.

Hajime who was left alone in the room properly tasted the last piece of the sweet bean jelly before he whispered.

「Well, compared to the father of Kaori’s place, this brute force approach saved me the trouble.」

From the garden sounds of「Ojii-chan and Otou-chan, and Okaa-saaan-, kneel seiza over there!」, or the sound of something blown away, or「Ojou, she is going mad! Send reinforcement!」, or「Muu, Shizuku, your skill improved!」, or「Don’t think that the current Shizuku can be stopped normally! Form formation! Prepare Four Cardinal Thousand Execution formation-」, or「We are going to separate Ojou from that brat for sure! White Tiger squad, kill that guy now!」, sounds with that kind of impression could be heard coming from here and there.

Hajime was feeling the multiple presences who were approaching him while spitting out words「Whether at earth or another world, there is really not much change huh……」really emptily.

After that, whether Shizuku finally knew all the secrets of her family, and then whether Hajime was recognized by Shizuku's family or not……

For now, let just say that the pupils of Yaegashi-style (hidden school) got along really well with the rabbit ears of another world.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

I seriously don't have time to write.

Even so when I wrote following my whim, Yaegashi-style become like this……

The next update is planned at 6 P.M Saturday too.

Arifureta Chapter 196

Arifureta After – Aiko-sensei's Worry

AN: This time too, why did it become like this……

Bu, but, well, I think that it's fine if there is at least one of this kind of troublesome person isn't iiit, like that.

Sporadically growing weed, old stone wall, and blue sky that looked discolored were spreading out. Things other than those which entered the field of vision were only the laundry stand, rusty drum can with uncertain usefulness, and also the granny bike with punctured tire leaned listlessly on the stone wall.

(Nothing has changed other than Okaa-san's bicycle huuh~)

On the porch, with the cry of cicada and refreshing sound of wind chime as BGM, the one who was kicking around her legs back and forth while staring into nothing in a daze 'bohee~' was the eldest daughter of this household——Hatayama Aiko.

That day, Aiko who had managed to return from another world after that received interrogation not just from police and mass media, but also by school officials and government officials that spanned many days. After all she was the only adult among the group disappearance. Even if the students were talking about fantastical story they had experienced, the ratio of sympathy toward them was high, but for Aiko who was a working adult, she instead was seen with sterner gaze by the society.

Having said that, all of them had talked about it beforehand and the conclusion that they reached was to talk about the events in another world

Tortus as it was without changing anything, also, Aiko herself didn't have the confidence that she could fabricate "a really convincing story" that could convince the surrounding, so in the end she could only give an explanation with content that was the same like what the students were talking, which made her felt really ashamed as a working adult.

Naturally, in regard to her inability to bring back some of her students and how the students became obsessed with "wild delusion", even though in reality those weren't Aiko's responsibility at all, but a flow which was pressing the responsibility to Aiko was starting to appear.

That flow was powerful, furthermore even idiotic opinion which said that perhaps the disappearance itself was actually the full responsibility of Aiko was also beginning to appear.

It was an incident with too much puzzle. The culprit was unknown. Some students didn't return. The returnee's wild delusion. Because all these affairs wouldn't settle down without someone taking responsibility, so to speak a scapegoat, it was Aiko who was chosen to hold that role.

Aiko who was completely exhausted with various things every day was carried away by the flow of the surrounding, she tried to respond to the demand of the surrounding and wore the stigma as the person responsible for the group disappearance incident. She accepted severe bashing and the end of her job as teacher——no, the end of her social life. Seeing this, the parents of Aiko who couldn't endure to witness the figure of their daughter that was reported everyday in news also came to persuade her to return home. That was also one of the primary factors that affected Aiko.

But, just when Aiko resolved to distance herself from her students' side, suddenly the topic was going toward its end surprisingly and unnaturally, however bizarrely no one was thinking that nothing was strange with this development.

The culprit of that was of course Hajime.

Using internet and media, he manufactured a super large scale awareness manipulation artifact, and the forcefully and powerfully, without letting anyone complained, he interfered with the consciousness of the people all over the

world.

Aiko who knew that made a grandly convulsing expression and she leaked out「What have you done……」. After all, what Hajime did was a brainwashing at world scale. An evil deed that would make even an evil organization of a story went ghastly pale.

But, Hajime shrugged toward Aiko who was haggard in various senses.

「The world who put false accusation on you and made their own interpretation as they pleased is the bad one. Returning tit for tat at them is only the matter of course isn't it?」

In other words, the flow of society who laid their hand on Aiko was Hajime's enemy. He didn't kill them, so at least they could obediently got brainwashed, was his reasoning. They tormented his relatives with their curiosity, irresponsible remark, and so on, so it was a punishment they deserved.

As for Aiko, she couldn't say anything anymore having those things said her. It's unforgivable for you to leave my side because of the irresponsible flow of society. The person she fell in love with said that to her. Because of that he made the consciousness of the world into his own.

A demon king-sama to the extreme was here.

No matter what she said, it wouldn't stop Hajime anymore.

Aiko's shoulders dropped limply, even so inside her heart she felt flattered, she felt light as though she was floating, yet inside her chest she also felt so tiiiiight, that she writhed.

And so, in the end Aiko managed to get reinstated at the school where Hajime and others were attending. Furthermore there was also the plan of the administration that wanted the returnee to be lumped together, which even caused her to be employed as the homeroom teacher of the special class of Hajime and others the returnee. Thinking of how before the summoning she was just a teacher without a class in charge with, in a sense she could be said to climb up in life.

Now then, like this Aiko safely managed to get reinstated as teacher without getting separated from her students who were more important than important

with whom they had entrusted their lives to each other at another world, but here, a dilemma was produced.

That dilemma was,

——I am, teacher. Hajime-kun is student……It's too late already but—

Yes, now she clearly remembered the relationship between her and Hajime. Of course, after the legendary decisive battle she had already spent many passionate nights together with Hajime, so that thinking was reaa~lly something too late already.

Still, however. Like this, now that they were here in earth at Japan, when she actually returned to her teaching job, when she stood on the teaching podium and from there she saw the figure of student Hajime on his seat……

——Me, what have you doneeeeeeee-. You laid your hand on a studentttttttt—

Like that, she rolled around in a floor when she was alone. Her personality that was too serious by nature, and her extraordinary sincerity toward teaching profession, when she had returned to the normal everyday life and she calmed down, those two aspects mercilessly pierced Aiko's mind all over *gussa gussa* with spike and gouged it *chiku chiku* with marking pin.

Naturally, she was growing to avoid Hajime, however, looking at him flirting with Yue and others exacerbated her heartrending, but as expected her guilty feeling and whatever else became an obstacle that made her avoided Hajime completely……like that, a really troublesome person had resulted here.

These few months, far from spending time with Hajime, she didn't even have proper talk with him. Hajime being Hajime, he was running around fighting the government officials of the world, manufacturing artifact to make it easier to open the gate to another world Tortus, opening business in order to provide for Yue and others with his own hands, and so on, spending busy days like that, he didn't even go to meet Aiko.

——Lonely

That was the true feeling of Aiko without any falsehood in it.

——But, a teacher and a student, it's just……as expected……

That too was the true feeling of a troublesome person.

——As expected, I and Hajime-kun are……uu, there is also the difference in age……there is also my social standing……

That was the true feeling of a very troublesome person.

While worrying endlessly like that, 'There are thoroughly charming girls already around Hajime, perhaps a middle-aged woman like me should withdraw away……' she was getting closer to such conclusion while using the summer holiday to return home, and she became a no-good human like this on the porch.

「Hey, Aiko. You are making a very stupid face there. Isn't your soul leaking out from your mouth?」

「Even if it leak out, it can be returned back to its place you know, Okaa-san.」

Indeed, something like that wasn't any problem if age of god magic was used. Though it was a different story whether the mother could comprehend that or not.

While making an exasperated expression at her daughter's dazed reply, Aiko's mother——Akiko asked「You want watermelon?」. Aiko rolled over lazily and without stopping she kept rolling until the table. It was a wordless answer of「I want」.

Aiko waited for a bit while bathing in the wind of the electric fan. Akiko arrived carrying watermelon that had been cut into beautiful triangle shape. It was chilly cold, juicy, looking delicious just from a glance. Aiko was messing with the watermelon seeds with the provided toothpick before she bit into the edge.

The gentle sweetness spreading inside her mouth slackened the expression of Aiko loosely. Her appearance was completely an elementary student……an extreme of being child faced. She really couldn't be seen as adult woman at the age of 26. Her awakening to magic power also for some reason put her skin condition in an extremely excellent condition, surely that was also a factor that showed childish look in Aiko.

「……When you are like this, I cannot see at all that child whose face was shown a lot in TV, who was resolving herself with various tragic resolves」

「Mass media is scary. Government official is scary. Board of Education is scary……fighting god's apostle was still better.」

「Indeed, perhaps rather than magic, the flow of the society that cannot be seen by eyes is more frightening isn't it. But, isn't that fine. You have the strongest prince aren't you?」

「……Not prince Okaa-san. He is the devil. Rather, he is the demon king-sama.」

「Anything is fine, but stop delaying already, let Okaa-san meet with my daughter's benefactor soon. Otou-san, and Ojiichan and others too, they are totally curious you know?」

「U, uu~m……well, I'll think about it.」

Aiko halfhearted attitude caused Akiko to sigh exaggeratedly.

The composition of Aiko's family was her two parents and the grandparents from the mother side. Her family was fruit farmer, with her father marrying into the family. Even now that father was telling his daughter who came home for summer holiday 'if you are free then help out here~', going out to work hard in the farm energetically.

Currently, or rather recently, such Hatayama family had a matter that that they was really concerned about.

That was regarding Aiko's "lover".

That day, the day their daughter who disappeared together with students unexpectedly came home. Naturally, the members of Hatayama family who received the explanation of the situation didn't believe Aiko at first, but when Aiko's magic extremely improved the farm land of Hatayama family, and their crops also became highest class product, they believed in Aiko while saying 'well whatever!' to the trivial matter.

In the middle of their talk, although Aiko didn't make any declaration, but they understood that somehow their daughter seemed to have made a lover. She was able to return back to Japan was also thanks to that "he", and the unthinkable pacification of the kangaroo court which tried to denounce Aiko previously was also "his" doing.

If this person was their daughter's benefactor and the person whose heart had decided on, then they wished to be introduced to him by all means, but, for some reason Aiko was evasively avoiding that and didn't listen to them.

They were suspicious that this person could possibly be a horrible person, but seeing the figure of their disappointing daughter who grinned from seeing the ring that was always dangling on her neck, smiling cheerfully when she looked at her smartphone, talking to someone in the phone with her feet kicking back and forth and her face lovestruck, holding her red face between her hands while shaking her head when she suddenly recalled something while doing nothing, they could understand that she was thinking of the other party from the bottom of her heart.

The family of Aiko was worried in their own way about the future of their daughter whose growth stopped completely when she was in middle school for some reason and had no romantic story at all, because of that they were even more looking forward to be introduced to the person who was chosen by their daughter.

But, as expected, no matter how long Aiko kept acting elusive……

「Good grief, if you are like this, then "he" will get away from you eventually you know?」

「Uguh!?」

Hearing the terrifying warning that was given by her mother regarding her relation with him that she was currently worrying about, caused Aiko to spontaneously press her hand on her chest while a moan slipped out from her mouth.

「Even though you finally came home, you are just in a daze the whole day without even helping in home. After all you are worrying endlessly about "him" and ran away using going home as excuse right? Ah, or else, perhaps "he" actually already got away from you and you returned here because of heartbreak……」

「What are you saying, Okaa-san. That, I, don't really have, lo, lover or anything……」

Aiko averted her gaze, her volume turned smaller, and she toyed with the watermelon seed in high speed.

For Aiko, she understood her family's wishes for her to introduce "him" ——Hajime. But, as expected, their relationship of teacher and student made it difficult to speak even toward her family, no, it was extremely difficult exactly because they were family……

Inside her heart she was whispering「He is not my lover, I'm already treated as wife, so I'm not lying……」which sounded like excuse, making her to have a vivid resemblance with someone somewhere.

「……Well, that's fine. I guess you also have various things in your mind, and you are not a kid anymore. But, just remember that no matter what kind of person "he" is, we will welcome him warmly any time.」

「……yes.」

In the end Akiko backed down and the hand of Aiko that was playing with the seed slackened a bit. Akiko was smiling wryly at her daughter who was oozing out a relieved air while changing the topic.

「Speaking of, there is a festival this year too. It's a good timing, how about you even try to change into yukata? You haven't go there anymore for these few years right? You loved Yamashiro-ojiisan's cotton candy weren't you?」

「Yeah, now that Okaa-san mentioned it, it's this time……wait, Yamashiro-ojiichan, he is still alive……」

「You are really rude.」

「Because, when I was at high school, if I remember correctly he was already past 90 years old right?」

「Yes, this year he is 102 years old you know.」

「In, in that age, he is still opening festival stand? Is he okay? He won't ascend to heaven while making cotton candy?」

「You are really rude. Even now he is still lively. Even the person himself said that he will live for thirty more years.」

「He is planning to challenge even the Guinness record?」

Despite the silly talk, in the end Aiko decided to participate at the nostalgic local festival, also for relaxing the gloominess inside her chest.

At evening, when the beautiful sunset was about to disappear at among the mountains at the other side of the river, Aiko was at the front door with her body wrapped in pink yukata. In her hand was small and cute pouch, with her feet wearing refreshing Japanese sandals. When she was wearing yukata, to some extent charm could be felt from her usual childish figure, perhaps that was because she was a Japanese.

「You are really going alone?」

Akiko asked while tilting her head.

「Yep. I'll just aimlessly wander there. Otou-san and others are also helping there, I'll show my face at their place for a bit.」

「I see……even if this place is at the sticks, but that doesn't mean that there is no idiot so be careful. Especially because at the day of festival there are also people who cut loose too much.」

「I understand. Rather, after everything that happened the likes of hoodlum really won't matter much.」

「Don't be conceited. If you like, should I call Taichi-kun too to go with you?」

「Geez-, I'm really fine. Besides, Taichi-kun too will be angry if he is called for something like this you know?」

The one called Furukawa Taichi was a young man who as it were was Aiko's childhood friend. In the past the houses of Furukawa family and Hatayama family were close to each other, their farm was also next to each other that the two families were associated. Taichi and Aiko also went to the same school all the time from kindergarten until high school, so he was her trusted friend.

There was also time when they temporarily took distance from each other because of this and that at the puberty period, when they grew into adult they also never become a couple, their relationship after that was friend that met when they both came back here in an extended vacation where they would have friendly chat.

Taichi was graduated from a university at another prefecture and he immediately got a job at a company, but his father once was hospitalized for a time and he resigned from his job where he succeeded his family's farm about a year and a half ago. And so in the festival this time he was recruited as one of the young people group to help around……

「Is that so? I think that if it's Taichi-kun he will rush here happily though. Well, asking him to do that is too harsh perhaps.」

「That's right. Taichi-kun is good natured, but as expected he will get angry if he is taken advantage of too much.」

「That's not what I mean though……well, that's not where a parent should stick her nose to.」

「??」

Aiko tilted her head at her mother's suggestive words, but Akiko didn't look like she planned to talk more than that, so Aiko turned around and departed toward the festival.

She walked calmly at the familiar country road. Compared to the city, this place was accompanied with colors like the stars of the night sky which was exceptionally visible, illuminating the path at night, the frogs staying on the fields, and the chorus of the cicadas burning their life on the trees.

(Although, as expected the clearness of the air cannot compare with Tortus……)

What was revolving at the back of her mind while she was muttering to herself was her days at another world. Even amidst those memories, the one that she recalled vividly due to how dramatic it was, was……that reunion, that undesired result, and then the kiss that saved her life.

(Uu……)

There was also when she was imprisoned by god's apostle Nointo. For her to be captured at the top of a tall tower, it was as though she was a princess in a tale. And then, he came for her who was in depression from anxiety and impatience, and that battle at the altitude of 8 kilometer.

She exposed her unsightly appearance after the result that she caused, and not only that shameful figure of her was seen, she was even looked after by him.

(Hau……)

After that, the words that he conferred at her beside the cenotaph was something that Aiko surely wouldn't forget for her whole life. If the rescue drama before that was a salvation for her physical body, then the event in front of the cenotaph at that evening was unmistakably the salvation for her heart. Thinking back, she was captured by an ardor that she couldn't deceive herself from anymore since that time.

(Au……)

And then, with the battle at devil king castle, and going through the legendary decisive battle……the gifted object. As the result of her attack after she let loose all restraint, he let out a smile that looked as though he gave up, or possibly it was a troubled smile, and then to prove that Aiko was his——that she belonged to the demon king, he gifted her with a ring.

Aiko crawled her fingers at the thing behind her yukata, at the ring that was connected with a chain dangling behind the chest part of the yukata.

And then what she remembered was, the this and that of the night, that she thought might be staying unrelated with herself for her whole life, with how herself was a shorty. Just by remembering it she was still getting bright red. That was, that was……done too much.

「Awawawa-」

On the night path, Aiko fidgeted around while getting red faced by herself. Seen from the side, she looked just like a suspicious person.

Even though she was being like this so much, with her head suddenly getting full with Hajime even without anything particular happening, but the person herself was still harboring conflict (lol) inside her heart, worrying whether it was okay to continue this relationship, that was why if the wives group heard this they would undoubtedly get exasperated.

At the other world, she who was titled as goddess and splendidly incited the people, this female teacher who stood up against even the kingdom and the

pope of the biggest religion for the sake of her students, was in fact a troublesome person that was super awkward at love.

「Ai? What are you doing?」

「Ohee!?」

Suddenly a voice called at her which caused Aiko to hop up *pyon* for real. Complete with strange voice. Her face turned bright red in different meaning this time while she turned her gaze at the direction of the voice. There, she found a tall and sturdy young man, wearing a T-shirt with short sleeves where the sleeves were further rolled up until his shoulder.

「Ta, Taichi-kun……don't shock me like that.」

「No, Ai who was making hundred comical faces alone in the road at night was the one who shocked me there……」

This young man who was scratching on his cheek while calling Aiko with pet name "Ai" was just as Aiko called him, the person named Furukawa Taichi.

「Forget that……rather than that, Taichi-kun yourself, what are you doing in this kind of place? Aren't you helping with the festival?」

「Aa~, no, I was but……because Ai said that you are coming. See, stupid bunches are also coming out in this kind of day yeah.」

「By any chance, you are intentionally coming her to pick me up?」

「We, well yeah.」

「Is that so, fufu, thank you.」

Aiko felt somewhat warm with Taichi's nonchalant "good person act" that she knew from the past, and she smiled while expressing her thanks. Seeing that, for some reason the young man Taichi quickly turned aside his face while his hand covered his mouth. When Aiko got curious「Oh? What's the matter?」and circled around to look at his face, Taichi turned around hastily and he walked toward the festival while urging Aiko ahead.

「Co, come to think of it, yukata. You are wearing it huh.」

It was a somewhat sudden change of topic, but Aiko responded to the talk

without particularly bothered by it.

「Yep. Atmosphere is important in this kind of event. This is also a festival after so long that I rarely attended.」

「I see, you are right. ……That, what to say, it suit you.」

「Is that so? Thank you.」

Aiko responded to Taichi's praise frankly, a little bit too frankly by saying normal thanks. She wasn't at the age where she would be greatly concerned with words like that. ……Although that also depended on who was the one saying it.

Taichi felt a bit down, even so he continued making trifling talk with his trusted friend including reminiscent talk. Those two finally entered into the busy festival and crown of people.

There, the neighborhood uncle and aunt that knew the two of them since the past bantered with them. Aiko clearly declared that the two of them were not in that kind of relationship even while responding calmly. Seeing such Aiko caused Taichi's cheeks to cramp. Seeing that situation, his comrades from the young persons' association sent him a gaze that was mixed with sympathy……

Old man Yamashiro displayed his artistic skill that was pointlessly polished by making a Michaelangelo statue using cotton candy, then the two of them encountered female classmate of Aiko, that former classmate was bringing a child, seeing that cause Aiko to hold a really complicated feeling, when that classmate told Aiko that if she also married then~ half teasingly, the matter of Hajime floated inside her head which caused Aiko to turn a bit red though she didn't speak any denial, which in turn caused Taichi to get pointlessly fired up……

And, with various things like that Aiko enjoyed a lot the festival that she hadn't attended for a while.

With the festival that was still lively on the background, Aiko sat down on the porch of shrine ground to rest while she was at it. Beside her there was Taichi who even though he was supposed to be a member of young persons' association, but he had been following Aiko all the time while she was walking around the festival, even now he showed no sign of going to help at the festival.

In the silent atmosphere, Aiko was dangling her legs back and forth while listening to the bustling of the festival and looking up to the night sky. It was in the height of summer, but the shrine ground had nice open space for wind, that the night breeze felt pleasant on her skin which was damp from sweat.

Taichi was looking at Aiko who narrowed her eyes feeling good from the nature, with a dazed gaze……a beat later, he returned to his senses suddenly and he slapped his own cheek. *pan*- That nice dry sound made Aiko startled and she turned her gaze there.

Taichi opened his mouth, looking somewhat nervous toward such Aiko.

「Hey, Ai. Recently, are you okay? See, just a bit before there were various things happened right?」

「Yep, I'm fine. It's over already. Right now I'm being a teacher normally.」

「I see. But, the class that Ai is in charge of, it's that class isn't it? Then, won't there still be time when Ai would have to take the full brunt of the trouble?」

「……What do you want to say?」

Taichi's gaze wandered from the dubious Aiko, however, right after that, he looked at Aiko with firm eyes and spoke.

「Isn't it, enough already? You have, already, worked hard enough for your students' sake don't you think so?」

「……」

「That's why, just like Obaa-san and others were saying before……come back home here already.」

「……」

Aiko didn't answer, as though she didn't want to respond to that topic, Aiko stood up and started to walk toward the festival. Toward such Aiko, Taichi added on his words looking impatient.

「It's not like, you need to be at that place if you want to be a teacher right? You can also try to find for a job here.」

「That's not why. I also have responsibility, and above all, I myself, want to be

at the side of those children.」

「Then, when those children graduate what then?」

「That's……but, even though that kind of incident happened, the school still trusted me to take charge of the class, I'm indebted to them.」

「That only because they want to gather the returnees in one place right? Rather, if the current children graduate, you won't know whether you can continue to stay there aren't you? If it's Ai, your face is widely known here, it's convenient if you live here and you also have connection to a certain degree that can help you.」

「Perhaps that is so but……that's, still in the future.」

Aiko's complicated attitude finally made Taichi got irritated that he stood up vigorously.

「……What Ai is concerned, is actually not something like your duty to the school, or your responsibility to your students, am I right?」

「Eh?」

「What Ai is concerned about……is actually the matter of your lover isn't it?」

「Wai-, what are you saying……I, something like a lover is……」

「The one who think that it's a secret is just Ai. Obaa-san and others, me, we all know. That in the middle of your disappearance Ai made a lover. And also, how that lover is……your student.」

「!!!!?」

Aiko went「How do you!?」, an action that was really easy to understand. Seeing that act of Aiko which was too honest in a sense, Taichi continued his words while his expression turned complicated.

「There is no way we won't know. Since the past Ai is just too poor at hiding a secret. It immediately come out in your behavior. Besides, even after you returned back you frequently contacted someone, you made a lover while you disappeared, yet it wasn't a relationship that you can introduce to your parent, it must be a relationship that stimulate your guilt or morality by continuing it…… when you searched for the answer that satisfy all those requirements, then it

can be nothing but a student.」

「……Taichi-kun. Since where you became a detective?」

Taichi said「I told you, it's not just me, Obaa-san and others also know that」 toward Aiko who was stunned. When Aiko realized that the secret was actually exposed to her mother too, she was finally at her wits end with her hands holding her head.

Seeing such Aiko, Taichi resolved himself and spoke.

「A relationship of student and teacher……you understand aren't you, Ai.」

「tsu」

「Ai yourself, you are feeling tortured like that. I don't know what happened in the middle of your disappearance, but surely that was just how much of an abnormal situation it was, right? Then, that was just your momentary loss of judgment. I don't care of that.」

「Taichi-kun?」

Taichi approached Aiko and he stared at her fixedly with a serious gaze. Aiko took a step back from being overwhelmed, but when Aiko drew away, then Taichi would also close the distance accordingly.

「Ai, let's stop that kind of impure relationship already. And then, come back here and start from zero. At first it might feel lonely but……I will be at your side from here on.」

「Taichi-kun, what are you saying……」

「I told you that I returned here because of my father's sickness, but actually that wasn't it. My father's sickness was healed in one week……the truth is, when Ai disappeared, I felt uneasy, I couldn't even focus on my work, and so, I resigned from my work to search for you full time.」

「Was, was that why?」

Aiko's eyes turned round from this truth she didn't know. And then, now that Taichi had spoken that far, then even the dull Aiko could guess just with what kind of feeling Taichi had been speaking until now. That fact made Aiko got astonished precisely because she had never thought of that possibility for even a

bit until now.

「When I heard that Ai was gone, I thought that my heart got crushed. At that time, I noticed it. For me, Ai is, an existence that is that important to me.」

「Ta, Taichi-kun, fo, for now, let's calm down a bit?」

「I am calm. Ai, come home. And then, marry me. I will treasure you, so be together with me forever!」

「No no, wait a bit! That's too sudden! I, am not thinking of Taichi-kun like——」

「You relationship with your lover, it's not going well right?」

「Uguh」

「There is no way it's going well. The other party is just a student. There is no way he can make Ai happy. If it's me, I have succeeded my house and also have resourcefulness, even my age match you. It will absolutely go well between us.」

Aiko's back was already glued closely to a pillar of the shrine ground. And then, the approaching Taichi grasped tightly the shoulders of Aiko. Taichi's eyes had seriousness that Aiko had never seen until now, they were overflowing with sincerity, including passion so hot it was scalding.

If Aiko didn't have a lover, yes, if this was before she was summoned to other world, depending on the situation her heart might be stolen even if she thought nothing of him until now except of someone like brother. That was just how much a "man" her childhood friend who she thought she knew him well. As for his speech, she couldn't help but felt that it was somewhat hurting but……or rather, now that she thought calmly, it was a bit but it felt like a somewhat dangerous pick-up line……

But, even now when that much feeling was expressed to her, what floated at the back of Aiko's mind was, the matter of him……

「Hajime-kun……」

「Ai-」

The name that unintentionally leaked out in a small murmur, it caused Taichi to frown, but at the next moment he tried to close his distance with Aiko in one

go. Perhaps he intended to return her beloved woman to her sanity from the impure relationship she was imprisoned in, even if he had to take a little forceful method……or perhaps, it might be a simple jealousy……

The shocking situations that happened in succession, and her mind that was split with her feeling toward him caused Aiko to react late, she immediately tried to twist her body but…..behind her was a pillar, both her shoulders were pinned down, it wasn't that she couldn't shook herself free but, it was unclear whether she would be able to avoid from injuring Taichi!

Therefore, even while she was putting on strength in the level that was a bit dangerous for normal people, spontaneously, inside her heart she yelled asking for help.

(Hajime-kun!)

「What is it Aiko?」

「Eh?」

「Eh?」

Taichi and Aiko leaked out similar voice. And then, before Taichi's approach could reach Aiko, or rather before he could get blown away by Aiko, he stopped. No, he was stopped. His neck was grabbed tightly from behind.

meri- Unpleasant sound could be heard.

「-, who, who are you-. What are you doing-」

「Oi oi, that's my line you know? Just what are you doing to my woman?」

Right after that, Taichi's figure vanished. No, he was sent flying backward with a force to the degree that it looked like he vanished. It seemed that his neck didn't bend to strange direction or anything due to superb moderation of power. But, he was fiercely sent flying on the ground where he rolled many times there, the impact made him cough fiercely.

With a sidelong glance at such Taichi, Aiko was flustered while she stared at the person before her eyes feeling dumbfounded.

「Ha, Hajime-kun?」

「Yeah, it's me.」

「Wh, why, are you here?」

「Because, Aiko is here?」

「No, even if you are saying something like a mountain climber somewhere with question mark like that……」

Hajime smiled wryly seeing Aiko at a loss.

「Recently, you looked like you are thinking too much about various things. We also didn't really have time to talk, on top of that you came home here. I thought it will be troublesome if you are persuaded by your parents and then make annoying decision because of that so I planned to visit here. And, when I used the compass to move here, you are in the middle of some kind of festival right? I thought that by any chance, you are going around the festival feeling lonely by yourself that I flew here but……the result turned out all right in the end.」

Hajime's eyes narrowed dangerously toward Taichi who was standing up and glaring at Hajime even while coughing. Seeing that, even while feeling happiness welling up inside from understanding that Hajime was worried for her and he rushed here to spend festival time with her, she also felt intense shame and fretfulness because her figure that was approached by someone else just now was seen by Hajime.

「U, um, that's not what you think! There is, nothing like that going on between me and Taichi-kun! I don't, have any intention like that at all!」

「Aa~, yeah, I see……」

Taichi who was walking toward them went「Gahah」with his hand pressing on his chest, seeing that figure caused Hajime to make an expression where he was unsure of what to say. The woman he liked denied him with all her strength——indeed, hearing that would make anyone pressed on their chest spontaneously.

「But, recently you are worried a lot about your relationship with me right? Perhaps you are worrying endlessly when we became student and teacher once more……it's already really too late thinking that.」

「Hau!?」

This time Aiko was the one who pressed her chest. Her gesture really resembled her childhood friend. That fact made Hajime's wry smile deepened while he suddenly circled behind Aiko and embraced her. 「Ha, Hajime-kun!?」 or「You-」could be heard, but Hajime ignored it.

Hajime kept embracing Aiko while he talked with a voice that was oozing a bit of exasperation into her ear.

「Even this relationship that Aiko is worried about will resolve itself not even two years later. Even so, if you are bothered with that two years, then both of us just need to hold back until that time arrive isn't it? If Aiko wish for it, then I won't mind something that small.」

「A, u, that's……bu, but, I, am far older than you……」

「……Aiko, I'm telling you this for your own good. Just absolutely don't say those words in front of Yue. You don't want to have air travel ten kilometer high with your flesh body do you?」

「Aa……」

Thinking really really carefully, something like difference of age……above the sky there was still sky. It was something that she must not speak no matter what.

「Good grief. Human is a living thing that will think of various stupid things the moment they calmed down, and Aiko is the very model of that kind of human huh. On top of it's already too late for that, it's a problem that can be resolved easily, for you to become irresolute due to that……if you are that much fixated to "being teacher", then you at least has to be like how you once before, where you remonstrate even me.」

「Uu, I have nothing I can say……」

「Or rather……just who do you think I am huh? When I accepted Aiko, I should have declared it already.」

Aiko recalled. One month after the legendary decisive battle, when she wished that she also wanted to be loved by Hajime. There, she was accepted, on top of that it was presented——the term of demon king-sama.

——When I decide to accept you, there won't be getting away.

There was no concept of "parting" for the woman of the demon king. Even if Aiko herself hated it, but Hajime wouldn't let her get away, no matter what kind of situation there was. It was impossible for him to accept any woman other than his beloved while there was any possibility of parting. That was the minimum distinction of Hajime who was someone preposterous and the worst from keeping relationship with multiple women.

The only one he could accept was only partner who could offer her whole life to him and vice versa.

Therefore, it was meaningless for Aiko to worry about ethic, common sense, or whatever. Because Aiko had already offered that body and heart of hers to the demon king.

And the consequence was, that she couldn't get away from demon king-sama.

「You understand?」

「……yes.」

Just with a sentence, when Hajime questioned her, Aiko easily surrendered. She nodded up and down repeatedly with her face bright red.

There, Taichi directed a severe gaze at Hajime who was still embracing Aiko from behind and opened his mouth.

「……You. Get away from Ai. You are, if I'm right you are Ai's student aren't you? I guess you don't understand because you are still a student, but your existence is hurting Ai. This world is not so sweet that you can make it somehow with just feeling——」

「Thanks for the warning. But, You mistaken the process too much to put on air as an adult with good sense. Your persuasiveness is nonexistent at the point of time you are reaching out your hand toward someone else's woman. If you aren't Aiko's childhood friend then I'll do Inugami family to you but……well, this time I'll magnanimously overlook it. Give up on Aiko and search for other suitable wife.」(TN: About Inugami family. I tried to google it but the only thing I can find is a mystery novel about serial killing.)

Having a man that was younger, furthermore someone that was still a student talking back at him so frankly caused Taichi's mouth to open and close wordlessly. And then, with a complexion that was busily turning blue and red intermittently, he was about to yell angrily at Hajime,

「Yaahn」

「tsu!?」

Yet he turned speechless due to the coquettish voice that Aiko raised and the spectacle happening in front of his eyes. Of all thing, Hajime was thrusting his hand behind the chest part of Aiko's yukata before his hand starting to grope around! What an act! It was truly like a demon!

Then Hajime casually took out a ring that had been turned into a necklace from Aiko's chest. Aiko who had something embarrassing done to her in front of her childhood friend that was already like family to her, glared at Hajime with teary eyes + upward glance, but Hajime warded off something like that like a willow swaying in the wind.

「Understand that we are already at a stage where words won't do anything. Just as you see, rather than my lover, Aiko is already my wife. Her body, her heart, I had received them all.」

「Yo, you-」

Hajime's speech was completely like the villain. No matter how anyone looked, this was a composition of a gentle and sincere young man having his childhood friend snatched away by a bad man. The speech that Aiko could say in this kind of time should be「Stop-, don't fight each other because of meee!」as expected. Although, the moment Aiko said such thing, she would surely receive Hajime's iron claw of love.

Taichi was about to condemn Hajime along with his emotion that felt like erupting, but before that could happen Hajime threw his words to him with a cold expression.

「You reap what you sow.」

「What-」

「You should have a powerful weapon that I don't have. You have time and the same living environment that you spent together with Aiko since childhood, and even after you two became adult you must have met her many times too since then, isn't that right? You should have so many chances to exchange your feeling with Aiko. But, you passed up all those chances. Don't make any excuse now. You couldn't even become a "reason to go home" for Aiko to give no place in her heart to go toward me. You didn't try. The result of that is this. That's all there is to it.」

That was a sound argument. Snatched away——such thing was a serious case of barking up the wrong tree. While Taichi was in a position that was closer to Aiko than anyone, he didn't fight so that he could walk together with her. That was why, before he realized it, Aiko had been at a place so far that his hand couldn't reach. That was all there was to it.

Talking like this was strangely remonstrating considering it was Hajime. He crushed his enemy mercilessly, and it was someone who he couldn't stomach then he would ignore that person without speaking too much, and when that person couldn't be ignored then as expected he would crush them. That was Hajime. It was unusual for him to speak like this to someone who had tried to reach their hand on Aiko.

Looking carefully, even though Taichi got thrown away that showily just now, but there was no wound on him which looked that serious.

(Because he is my childhood friend……)

That must be the reason.

Aiko changed her embarrassed expression and raised a tightly stiffened face. And then, she softly untangled from Hajime's hand that was hugging her tightly. Hajime didn't oppose her.

Aiko took a step forward and calmly opened her mouth.

「Taichi-kun, thank you for worrying about me a lot. Thank you, that you think of me so strongly.」

「Ai……」

「But, I cannot answer Taichi-kun's feeling. I, cannot look at Taichi-kun like

that.」

「……Because of that, you are with that guy——」

「Yes. Because, the one I have feeling for is Hajime-kun. I was worried about a lot of things but……yes, it's really too late already for that. I even think to myself just what in the world I am doing worrying like that.」

「……Society won't tolerate it. That's something that must not be done.」

「Yes, I know. But, I cannot help it. Because the person I fell in love with, is hopelessly like a demon, let alone the society, even the world or the god are no match of him. I too am a wicked woman huh.」

「……Wicked woman. Those words doesn't suit Ai the most.」

「But, I think that's not bad.」

「Haa, is that so. So it's just like that guy said, from the beginning, it's "too late" already for me.」

Aiko smiled wryly. As though to say her agreement.

Taichi glared fiercely at Hajime. Hajime accepted it with an unruffled face. Understanding that something like his glare wouldn't shake this guy even for a little, and then, having the painful sound argument thrown at him just now, and on top of that with how his body was thrown before this showed him that he couldn't even possibly match this guy in physical strength, strength abruptly left his shoulders after he was glaring at Hajime for a while.

And then, he wordlessly turned around and left the shrine ground.

「My bad. Perhaps your relationship with your childhood friend will be bad after this……」

「No, it's fine. Perhaps, it will take a bit of time, but we will be able to return back to our brother-sister relationship again.」

「Then that's fine……but as expected, if he reach his hand at Aiko one more time, then I won't have the confidence to not do Inugami family to him.」

「……Why, are you that obsessed with Inugami family?」

Aiko smiled wryly at Hajime's manner of speaking, then a beat later, she faced

straight at Hajime once again. And then, she bowed down her head.

「I'm sorry that I made you worry because of me worrying irresolutely about strange things. Thank you that you come today to meet me.」

「Yeah, I definitely had received both your gratitude and apology. But, don't mind it too much. I said it before too but, I really like that part of Aiko.」

「Hee? Tha, that part?」

The unexpected word of "like" made Aiko became red once more. Toward such Aiko, Hajime said that, before in front of the cenotaph of Hairihi Kingdom, he thought that Aiko who was worrying there looked dazzling to him, and then he asked her whether she remembered what they talked about there. That was what Aiko was remembering just not long ago. It was clearly etched in her memory, surely it was an important memory when her feeling toward Hajime became definite.

「You who was running forward swiftly with all your might, and then you who was holding your head when you failed or when you noticed your contradiction, but even so you endured it and found a conclusion in your own way which you tried to carry through, I found those parts of Aiko are dazzling, those parts looks really lovely to me. That's why Aiko, you can stay just as you are.」

「……I think it's foul play for you to say something like that.」

Aiko turned around with her back toward him, her face looking down so Hajime couldn't see it. But even without seeing that face, it was easily imaginable that her face was becoming complicated with shame and delight.

Perhaps because he understood that, Hajime made an expression that was delicately holding back his laugh. Really what a bad guy.

「Now then, let's go to Aiko's house. I have to give my greeting to your parents.」

「Eh?」

Those sudden words that were said out so suddenly with light tone as though asking her to go to some convenience store for a bit, it caused Aiko to go 'hah' and she turned around toward Hajime.

「It looks like your worry is resolved already, so there is no more reason that you cannot introduce me right? If I have to greet them sooner or later, then I'll just at least show my face to them while also sending you home. Today is late already, so I'll do the formal greeting once more tomorrow.」

「A, as always, what proactiveness……n, no, you know, greeting can be done next time……I too need to prepare my heart……」

「Hmm, Aiko's house is over there……oh? So your father and others are going out to the festival. They are right nearby. Yosh, let's spend money while greeting them at the same time.」

「Ah, wait, don't use something like the compass for this! Wait, please don't ignore me and go off like that! Just what in the world are you planning to say to Otou-san and others!?」

「Of course, I'll say "Otou-san, I accept your daughter. I won't accept any objection or refusal". That's the standard speech right?」

「The standard where-!?」

「Or rather, Aiko. I'm bothered, just why are you speaking using polite language to me while you spoke casually to that bastard? Isn't that cruel?」(TN: Aiko has been using polite language all this time with Hajime while using peer language with when she talked to Taichi)

「Eh? That's, it's about the atmosphere or something……wait, don't change the subject! There is a lot of my acquaintances here from the paaast! If you are saying something like that to Otou-san in this kind of place……tomorrow all the neighbors will know it!」

「If you properly talk casually with me too then I'll think about it. ……Well, the time extension won't even be one minute for you to decide though. Oh, that's your father isn't it. The first impression is important. First of all, let's binge shopping the stall's goods.」

「Please wait! Wait, wait……I get it! I get it already! I'll properly talk to you without polite language so don't keep walking rapidlyyy!」(TN: Here finally Aiko didn't use polite language.)

Aiko who was making racket 'gyaa gyaa', and Hajime who was handling her

unseriously while charging toward the direction of her family with a fearless smile on his face. Naturally Aiko was clinging on Hajime's arm, Hajime was advancing while carrying such Aiko in his arm, coupled with their noisiness the degree of attention to them was at MAX!

The madams of the neighborhood, and the old people who were affectionate to Aiko, they all went「Oh my!」seeing the two's situation.

And then, finally, the father of Aiko who noticed Hajime walking toward him with his daughter in Hajime's arm opened his eyes widely, expressing his shock, then he smiled wryly as though he had comprehended something.

After that, Hajime who loudly proclaimed that he was Aiko's boyfriend right in the middle of the festival that was overflowing with Aiko's acquaintance, was awarded clapping and cheering of hooray. Hajime who kept restraining Aiko who was trying to run away from shame with princess carry was causing cheers to be raised as expected.

Furthermore, it was supposed to be only Hajime showing his face, but with Aiko's father and grandfather invitation for him to come to their house no matter what, like that Hajime who visited Hatayama house also met with Akiko and the grandmother. Then he talked to them about his wives other than Aiko and his intention.

With everything that happened at Shirasaki family and Yaegashi family, Hajime had resolved himself to be slapped with rejection and rage for sure, but unexpectedly both Aiko's parents and even her grandparents, all the people of Hatayama family accepted Hajime. Of course, it wasn't like they weren't frowning, but with the feeling of wanting to respect the will of their daughter who was already an adult, and above all their debt of gratitude to Hajime because he had saved their daughter from danger many times, it seemed that it led to their trust for Hajime.

In the end, due to the kindness of Hatayama family, it became a course of event where Hajime stayed for the night, the next day using gate, the people of Nagumo family also visited Hatayama family, where the words of Yue and others which said "together with Aiko" promoted the trust to grow even deeper.

After that, it was as though Hatayama family and Nagumo family became like a

family group but……

As the result, Aiko's home town became well-known as "Land of Miracle" where every kind of crops could bear fruit regardless of the soil quality or the season. Surely that was due to the mixing of the family of "Goddess of Harvest" and the family of "Demon King of Another World"……

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Actually, I also planned to write the reason why Aiko is fixated with being teacher, yet there wasn't any time and I couldn't think of any idea, despite so when I began to write thinking [Anyway if I just write then perhaps I'll think of something…], this kind of Aiko was created……

Well, continuing from before, Shirakome's condition is a bit bad, so I'm thinking of getting a change of pace.

Even though I said that, I'm just writing a bit longer extra story though.

I'm thinking of 'Should I promote him to a main character I wondeeer~'.

Remember, it's him you know, him. Come on, his name is……eh?

The next update is planned at 6 P.M Saturday too.

Arifureta Chapter 197

Arifureta Extra Compilation – From Abyssgate Lord of The World

Prologue

AN: This is extra story where that guy is the leading actor.

It’s totally undecided just how far this will be!

Anyway, the prologue

Caution

- This work is a fiction. The appearing character, organization, and everything else are different from in reality!

(Shirakome’s excuse=>When making earth in reality as the stage, various names and setting cannot be tampered around as I pleased. What if it’s actually different from the actual condition because of my lack in knowledge……then, it’s similar but actually it’s different from the actual earth! That’s why, things like organization name or country name or weapon name, it will be okay even if they are subtly different!)

And so because of that, please take care of me.

Part 1

It shouldn’t be like this.

Everyone without exception surely must have said that in their life. Or even if not then surely they must have thought those words in their mind.

Looking at an ideal, setting a target, making a resolve, with seriousness, one pushed forwards toward the future that they wished to be.

But, what was called as life, and what was called as world, were extremely malicious. As though it was the norm, matter went left when one wanted right, and then it went right when one thought it would be left, and in the critical time it would went “right outside the expectation”. That’s impossible, absurd, it’s unreasonable, etc., even if one was thinking those they would still be toyed around by the raging stream of absurdity as though they were swallowed and washed away by flash flood, and then thrown out into a beach(reality) somewhere like a driftwood.

People with their dream destroyed, their heart broken, just like a scrap wood, they would stood up and start walking once more, or else they would keep being buried under the sand(reality) and vanished……it depended on each person. Although, in most cases there would be salvation from somewhere else for them. Someone might come to clear away the sand, there was also a possibility of someone pulling at their hand to drag their buried body. Perhaps there would also be someone who would stay close at their side for them until their wound was healed.

But……

(Surely, there will be no salvation for me. It’s beyond hope for me to meet something like that. Aa, I, just what have I done……)

It was inside an equipment storeroom that was overflowing with iron shelves and crammed with cardboard box and fixtures. The place wasn’t that spacious, it

was a place to temporarily deposit fixtures that were taken out from large storehouse for the time being, there a girl was sitting down while hugging her knees.

That girl's body twitched from the sudden large impact sound and she froze from fear. *gan-gan-gan* The impact sound reverberated consecutively. Someone was hitting at the storeroom door from outside. The girl lifted her face fearfully.

She was a cute——or more accurately, a beautiful girl. Her age looked around 16, 17 years old. She had blonde hair that was tied into a side tail using scrunchie. Her almond shaped eyes that resembled a mischievous cat was colored with jade pupils and long eyelashes. On the whole she had slender body type, her legs that were stretching out from her skirt were long and slender, wrapped in black stocking. She was a girl that could even pass as a model.

But, this girl was not a model by any means, and that was shown by her clothes that a normal girl wouldn't wear in the first place. Yes, the girl was putting on "lab coat" on her blouse.

She wasn't wearing a lab coat because she was forced to wear it due to some kind of event or because of some particular hobby, which could be obviously seen from the lab coat's worn out state and her appearance that looked familiar wearing the coat which for some reason could be thought as "fitting".

That girl dressed in a bit particular look screamed「hii-」when a strong impact sound *gan-* reverberated once more and she held her head with both her hands. She shrunk her body really small, from her look she was in a state of fear, however, it seemed that fear wasn't because the ringing impact sound outside the storeroom was unknown for her, rather she was scared because she knew the true form of that impact sound.

Because, while the girls expression was scared, at the same time colors of pity, sadness, and guilt were coloring her face.

「I'm sorry, I'm sorry, I'm sorry……」

The girl in lab coat were repeating words of repentance with a voice so small as though it would melt into the air and became nothing. Just what was that apology referring to……

Butm at that time, the resounding impact sound stopped completely. The lab coat girl thought of a question「What is going on?」with tears gathering in the corner of her eyes. The behavioral principle of “them” that the lab coat girl created was extremely instinctual. Therefore they shouldn’t be leaving away that easily from the storeroom where the “prey” that was the girl was inside. Then, perhaps something different that attracted the interest of “them” had appeared.

The girl wiped her eyes roughly with the sleeve of her lab coat and she advanced through the space between the shelves slowly and quietly on all fours. And then, the girl who finally arrived like a scared cat until beside a shelve at the inner part where it became a blind spot from the door of the storeroom, quietly peeked out her face from the cover of the shelve, her gaze moving toward the door that stopped making sound.

「Hiu」

She raised a strange scream that normally she wouldn’t let out. The inside of her throat reflexively tightened from looking at the state of the door. Ahead of the girl’s gaze, the door of the storeroom was——dented all over where it was in the verge of breaking down.

It was a storeroom to deposit items temporarily, so the door was made from iron and fitted with lock. Regardless large number of dent was created on the door as though it had received abnormal and concentrated impact which distorted it terribly. The outside corridor could be peeked out from the edge of the door. If the door received one more impact, then it would collapse inside the room.

「……」

Killing her breathing, the girl stared fixedly at the door for a while, before long strength suddenly left her shoulders. It seemed “they” had went away somewhere just before the door broke……

But, it seemed it was a bit too fast to think that.

GOGAANNN The door was blown away inside the room at the same time with that terrific impact sound.「Hih」The girl screamed and her body froze. The next moment, the door that flew inside with fierce momentum cut a swath through

the shelves near the girl.

The girl fell on her butt and then perhaps because it was her habit when she was surprised, she hugged her head with both her hands once more, tears were gathering in the corner of her eyes while she fearfully opened her shut eyes.

「Fuuh——, fuuh——」

「a, ua」

Ahead of the girl's gaze was a man. It was a young man in the middle of his twenty wearing a lab coat similarly like the girl.

「Se, senpai……」

A whisper leaked out from the girl. The young man seemed to be a "senpai" that the girl knew. But, if a person that didn't know the situation was in this place, surely they would be unable to comprehend the girl's words at all.

Because, no matter how anyone saw it, for someone who was called as "senpai" by this girl whose intellectual eyes weren't clouded even with her scared expression, he didn't look like that type of person, no, in the first place he didn't even look like human.

The man's eyes didn't have fixed focus, those were abnormal eyes that sometimes fully bared the white of the eyes, his face and arms had blood vessels rising to the surface, despite how his body should have slim figure originally, his flesh was swelling bizarrely like bodybuilder, his breathing was rough and saliva was dripping down from his mouth, and he was raising low growl like a beast. There was no reasoning that could be seen from him. While he was wearing similar lab coat with the girl, but that appearance was truly out of place.

And then what was the most strange, was his fists that were tightly clenched. Those fists that likely were continuously hitting the iron door until it was broken just now, their skin was peeled, the flesh gouged, bones were jutting out, and they were soaked in blood, but those fists were rapidly returning back to normal in a speed that was obvious in a glance. No, perhaps to say more accurately, the flesh was swelling up, the bones that were cracked were connected back, and the fist was repaired to the shape of a fist that was still warped.

「uUUa-」

「A, a……」

The girl backed down while still on her butt slowly. The abnormal young man kept growling while heavily pursuing after her. The storeroom wasn't that big. Therefore, the back of the girl was immediately blocked by a wall.

The man was standing like a mindless beast in front of the cornered girl. Something warm was flowing out from between the legs of the girl who was holding her head. It was something that she did because of the extreme fear, but the girl herself had no composure to be care about that.

Toward such a girl, the fist of the young man that destroyed even a door made from iron was raised without even a shred of hesitation.

(I'm, sorry……. If only I didn't do that kind of research……. I'm sorry, senpai…… everyone……)

While trembling toward her death that would surely arrive a few beats later, the girl repeated her repentance inside her heart.

Like that, the fist that could easily crush the face of the girl was swung do——

「Doctor Grant!」

An angry voice of a young woman and dry bursting sound reverberated. The fist of the "senpai" stopped. And then, slowly he turned around while growling. The lab coat girl also directed her gaze toward the door from the shadow of the "senpai".

There, was the figure of a tall woman wearing black suits with both her hands readying a handgun.

「Doctor Grant, please get down!」

「tsu」

Hearing the sharp instruction that shook the air like an electric shock, Doctor Grant——Emily Grant reflexively flopped her body low on the floor.

Right after that was the sound of gun discharging resounding consecutively. And then, a beast's roar. Footsteps that were like earthquake was going away from Emily. When Emily moved her gaze while lying low on the ground, she could see the figures of the black suits woman firing toward the "senpai" and "senpai"

who charged ahead without caring of that.

At first it seemed the woman was aiming at the shoulders and legs of “senpai”, but then she clicked her tongue looking that he didn’t even seem to itch when the bullets hit. The next moment, with an astounding speed that it wouldn’t be an exaggeration even if it was said that it was nearly instantly, the “senpai” closed the distance and he pushed out his fist toward the woman while screaming.

In no time, it seemed that the woman would become a mere lump of meat just like that, but at the next instant, it was proven that the woman wasn’t an ordinary person.

「Haa-」

Along with a short breathing, the woman *stepped forward.* Like that, she weaved through the approaching fist and stepped inside the bosom of the “senpai” and grasped at his collar, and turned around. Without stopping she performed a splendid shoulder throw.

The “senpai” whose charging momentum was used for a throwing technique had his posture turned upside down and thrown onto the wall at the opposite side. Even so, as expected it was like he didn’t feel any pain but……

「……Forgive me.」

That sentence was audible. At the same time, a dry bursting sound rang. The fired 9mm bullet penetrated from an eye of the “senpai” and mercilessly pulverized the brain. The body of the “senpai” twitched, and before long he stopped moving as though all strength had left him.

The woman held her handgun with both hands while observing the body with fixed stare for a while. Then with a sigh strength left her shoulders, it seemed she had judged that the “senpai” wouldn’t move anymore. And then, she exchanged the gun’s magazine with trained motion while taking a contact using her communication device to somewhere, with her quite expressionless face moving toward Emily that was sitting dumbfounded inside the storeroom.

「Doctor Grant, it’s great that you are safe. I am Vanessa Paradis of state security. I come to pick you up. I will guard you until a safe place from here on.」

The woman who introduced herself as Vanessa quickly approached Emily's side and calmly held out her hand. The girl who saw from nearby comprehended it, indeed this woman had an appearance and air where it could be glimpsed that she was used to rough scene. Long slit and sharp eyes, with very short hair that was colored between grey and beige. Her height seemed to surpass 179 centimeter easily. Her whole body was emitting cold presence that was sharp like a knife.

Surely it was because of that, Emily wrinkled her eyebrows in vigilance.

「……I have grasped the gist of your circumstance. It's natural for you to be cautious. However, we don't have any leeway time wise. This facility is filled with the infected personnel. My colleagues are attracting their attention, but even so they cannot hold for long. That's why, please believe me for now and come with me.」

「……senpai is……」

「……Forgive me. My priority protection target is you. I have no leeway to leave him as it was. Also, it was already too late when he became like that, that matter——」

「Yes. I am the one who know that the best.」

Emily stared for a while at the mere shadow of "senpai's" former self sinking in the sea of blood behind Vanessa, after that she moved her gaze to Vanessa. She was still having cold atmosphere and looked expressionless, but in her eyes that were so close Emily's figure was reflected on them, sympathy and apology toward could be seen somehow.

Emily stared fixedly at those eyes, then she took the hand of Vanessa that was still held out toward her.

「This doesn't mean I trust you but……I still, cannot die.」

「Yes, I don't mind that. Don't be separated from me no matter what, please follow me.」

Emily roughly wiped the tears gathering at the corner of her almond-shaped eyes that looked like cat with her lab coat, and then she sternly raised the corner of her eyes. Vanessa who saw that nodded briskly. And then she exited the room

while leading Emily.

「……Senpai, I'm sorry. I swear, that I'll surely stop this.」

「……」

Emily left behind her words for the "senpai" at the end.

Emily who was still young and unfamiliar with the world even though she was called as genius was always alone in the university that she was enrolled into by skipping grade. Her personality that hated losing by nature caused her to use speech and conduct that seemed to say 'I'm totally okay!' even in such an environment, but as expected for Emily who was still very young it was something tough……

What let such Emily who was pretending to be tough to be a researcher in the true meaning, was the professor and the students of the laboratory where she was currently attached to. If the professor who she was indebted to for anything and everything was like her father, then the seniors were like her big brother and sister. They were affectionate to her like she was their little sister, and yet they treated her more than an equal as a researcher.

Even amidst those people, the completely changed "senpai" whose breathing stopped atrociously in front of her eyes was a benefactor who especially helped Emily warmly.

The silent prayer of Emily that went for less than a beat, was filled with really, really strong feeling that couldn't be expressed with words.

Even while staying vigil at the surrounding, Vanessa sent a glance without emotion at such Emily. No, there was a slight tremor in that gaze. It was something like a sympathy, or possibly worry……

However, the moment Emily finished her short silent prayer, Vanessa's gaze returned to its former expressionless look where her emotion couldn't be discerned.

「Let's go.」

「Yes.」

Inside the facility where faint gunshot could be heard, while staying vigil

toward the mindless superhumans infesting it, or possibly, fearing the worst reunion with the completely changed substitute father, big brothers, and big sisters, the two vanished inside the gloomy corridor.

Part 2

「Oo, so that's the famous clock tower. Yep, as expected something like this is best seen with your own eyes.」

There was a Japanese young man making click-clack sounds with his smartphone while making satisfied voice. Shouldering a largish rucksack, this young man wearing plain clothes with black tone didn't have any particular trait in his appearance.

That blackish young man took photo for a while, and then while confirming the result picture he lifted his face suddenly in realization.

「Crap, this is not the time to keep sightseeing. I've got to accomplish the instruction from my demon king-sama.」

The clock taken inside the photo was already showing the closing of the day. The surrounding scenery was already becoming quite dark with the cloudy weather although it wasn't as far as snowing.

The young man put away his smartphone and shouldered back his rucksack before he turned around while breathing out 'haa' white breath.

「Even though this doubled with my private business, but this is still a rough way of using someone. Well, I too am his relative more or less……there is no way I can refuse. Let's do my best.」

The young man vanished between the people hurrying to return home while talking to himself like that. Before long, his figure was completely buried into the surrounding scenery and he couldn't be seen anymore.

Although, before that young man slipped into the crowd, there was not even a person who sent their gaze toward him. He was too much normal, and too much without presence.

Someone who was able to notice that abnormality, was of course didn't exist there.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

This might make me sound obstinate, but one more time,

This is different from real earth! That's why, if you want to retort 'What the hell is state security bureau, somehow various things are seriously wrong here!', I beg you to do it only inside your heart.

……Really, sorry.

Ah, also, I uploaded my activity report. I also placed cover image and special illustration there.

If you don't mind please look over there too.

The next update will be at 6 P.M Saturday too.

Arifureta Chapter 198

Arifureta Extra Compilation – From Abyssgate Lord of The World

Fuh, who am I you ask? I am——

London outskirts that was wrapped in thin mist. In a corner of a retro street where it felt like old fairy-tale or folklore might be hiding, there was a splendid residence where history could be felt from it conspicuously.

It appeared to be prudently maintained that it didn't look worn out. The garden that was spreading out at the front, the small path made from spread out white gravel and the flower bed where seasonal flowers were blooming, a small fountain where a beautiful goddess was sitting, all of those were first class work that gave elegant impression, from them it could be understood that really, really much labor, expense, and time were spent.

And that was how it should be, the master of this residence——Jefferson Allgrey was a famous wealthy person even at Britain. He was from a family lineage that was titled as the so-called "Real Estate King" that for generations possessed countless plot of land and building, buying and selling them.

Jefferson who was the current master of this generation Allgrey family also properly inherited the business talent from his ancestors, not only that he also seemed to possess political talent, he was a capable human that raised definite result while engaged in two trades of political world and real estate magnate at the same time.

The residence of such Jefferson was normally visited by many people. The type of people visiting was varied. If there were people from the same political world visiting, then there were also people from real estate companies who visited, there were also a lot of people visiting who were his personal friends.

Anyway, it was a house where the flow of people visiting it never ceased, and it was also a well-known fact for the people at the surrounding area.

Today too, a few hours already passed since the sun set, there was also the shrouding mist that it was a time where darkness had completely descended.

The principal residence of Allgrey was lighted with brilliant illumination. Several high class cars were being parked nearby the main gate, showing how there were many guests visiting.

Although, each of the visitors today were definitely well-known characters, but it seemed they weren't friends that were invited for simple dinner, they also didn't appear to be guests who came for work-related matter to speak about politics or business.

「Now then, chief. Don't you think that we should get down to business soon? For you to assemble more than half of the society's upper echelons……it must be something really considerable isn't it? My guess that it must be a matter about them.」

A middle-aged man whose body was wrapped in a suit that was obviously high quality in a glance, with splendid moustache and belly meat, he addressed Jefferson as "chief".

Even though Jefferson was called with that designation that wasn't used that often in general, but he still behaved naturally. Looking from that attitude of him, it could be understood that it was only the matter of course for him to be called like that by the people who were called to this place today.

Jefferson slowly ran his gaze at the surrounding. It seemed that he had finished his meal, there was only wine put in front of him. Other than them, there were several servants of Allgrey family and the respective bodyguards that were brought by each guest.

Tonight there were nine guests gathered. Everyone of them were prominent figure that owned phenomenal result in their respective field, but the fields they participated in were completely scattered. Seen from the side this was a gathering that really couldn't be understood, the biggest possibility was that these people were the personal friend of Jefferson. Even if there was an outsider who knew of this meeting, then surely they would only be able to think of this as a meeting of fellow friends all the same.

But, from how Jefferson was sitting at the seat of honor while the others were sitting around a long table, it seemed that there was a clear pecking order here. And that became even clearer from the atmosphere they were clad in.

「……They are the real thing.」

A short sentence. For people who didn't know the circumstance, they would tilt their head wondering what he was speaking about. But, all the people at the dining table were instantly going astir from that sentence that was said by Jefferson with oppressive tone.

「Is that……is that, really true?」

「Wasn't that just a mere group kidnapping……」

「Certainly it was a inexplicable case, but……」

「A case of that degree is not that rare. Chief, do you have any basis saying that?」

While their mouths were speaking words where confusion and expectation were mixing together, their gazes were concentrating at Jefferson.

「There is still only circumstantial evidence. But, I have no doubt of it. ……I have confirmed that all the people who were sent to investigate were returning to their daily life without getting any information. Far from investigating, they forget even the society.」

「No way……」

「However, just with that……. It's not as though method to induce such situation doesn't exist you know?」

「Yeah, I know. Of course, I didn't make my conclusion just with that. ……This is the situation that can be currently confirmed. I judged that it is already at the level where there would be no problem calling it as *supernatural*.」

Saying that, Jefferson urged a servant with his gaze to distribute written report, the upper echelons sent their eyes to it. After they did that, they went astir once more.

The content that was written in that written report was,

It wrote, the house of the target group that had been confirmed once for some reason couldn't be approached for the second time. Even when they walked following map, when they noticed they were walking in circle at a completely different place.

It wrote, the observer was observing from a distance of 800 meter, regardless of that their gaze would meet without fail.

It wrote, the family register of the target that shouldn't exist until a few days ago was registered before they knew it.

It wrote, that abnormality wasn't noticed by anyone in the administration side. They didn't even feel that anything was out of place.

It wrote, everyday, their partners were disappearing one by one.

And then,

——It wrote, the people who were tasked to investigate, without exception all of them would have blank in their memory after a while. Even the matter that was being reporter right now, whether it was really true or not……was unknown.

Surely everyone was scanning the report until the very last sentence. Silence descended on the dining table. Everyone was fixated on the content of the report.

But, after a while……

「Fu, fuha, fuhahahahahaha-」

One person raised a laughing voice looking like he couldn't hold it down. It was a hideously distorted laughing voice that was composed from joy and madness. However, such laughing voice that would grant discomfort to anyone hearing it whether one wanted it or not, was gradually spreading to the other upper echelons too.

「Finally, we found the *real thing*! Magnificent! I wonder just what kind of supernatural they are knowing!」

「At the very least, it seemed they have the skill to interfere with human's brain. That's something beyond the position of mere students.」

「It cannot stay like this. Chief! We have to immediately send assault force and secure one or two sample!」

Excitement was ruling over the place. It was a mad excitement, just like how someone who lost in a desert finally found an oasis, that feeling of insane arousal before their craving could be fulfilled.

Perhaps this was only natural for them. Because these people had been secretly maneuvering, searching for “that” through so many years and months that they couldn’t count anymore.

「Calm down……telling all of you that is impossible I guess. I understand well everyone’s feeling. Then, everyone agree of the plan to move with the purpose of obtaining sample? There will be many troublesome things if we completely kidnapped all of them……」

「What, they are people who had gone through group disappearance once you know, chief. Even if it happened for the second time, surely there will be no one who thinks it strange. Not to mention there are also those among them who didn’t return before this.」

「The ability possessed by the samples are concerning matter but……they are just children after all. It shows from how they are content with being student while possessing such power. We can do whatever we like if we involve their family into it. I will immediately begin to prepare the experiment site.」

「The returnee, they obtained supernatural while they disappeared……I’m bothered with the whereabouts of those that doesn’t return. Perhaps, they are in the place that have to do with supernatural? If we grasped that, even us……」

The upper echelons let out their opinion after Jefferson’s words. The meeting tonight was obviously filled with passion that was never seen before.

Like that, when they had decided the most of their plan from here on, Jefferson opened his mouth.

「Then, all of you, proceed with the matter paying meticulous attention for the sake of the accomplishment of our dearest wish. The priority target for securing sample will be the girl who is called as “Yue” as the first in the list——」

「About that, I think it’s better if you stop with that though.」

And also the girls who aren’t Japanese that are around the returnees——Jefferson was about to say that, but his words were suddenly cut off.

For a moment Jefferson thought that it was someone among the upper echelon who cut him off, but he immediately discard that idea as impossible. The

returnees from the group disappearance in the middle of day that agitated the society——if it was asked what was the aspect that was clearly different in them compared to before, then the first thing that would attract the attention was the existence of the not Japanese girls who suddenly appeared.

Thinking from how their family register was created before anyone noticed too, then it would be valid to think of them as “visitor from the supernatural side”. Then it was natural to prioritize securing them as sample.

That was the common understanding between Jefferson and other upper echelons that they obtained from continuously investigating the series of turmoil of the returnees that started from the group disappearance. For that reason, it was impossible for anyone to object here. And above all, the *voice of young man* which cut him off was a voice he wasn’t familiar with!

Jefferson felt something cold running through his spine while raising an angry voice that questioned the identity of the person.

「Who! Where are you!?」

「No, I am right in front of you from some time ago. I was normally eating meal here.」

A voice that contained resignation resounded. At that moment, not only Jefferson, the upper echelons, the servants, and then the bodyguards too, they all finally aware.

「Yo」

With a really light mood, at the chair that was positioned at the opposite side of Jefferson, with his mouth stuffed with the same cooking that Jefferson and others were eating just now, was a Japanese young man greeting with his hand lightly raised!

「You bastard……where did you enter from? What is the guard at the entrance doing?」

The upper echelons and the servants were greatly shaken, the bodyguards were in the middle of taking out their handgun in order to recover from their disgrace, while Jefferson was restraining them from firing before he opened his mouth calmly. It seemed that he was also shaken, but the speed of him rallying

back his mind ought to be said just as expected from an authority of politic-real estate world that managed this meeting.

Right after he took back his calm, dominating aura overflowed from Jefferson. That aura was something intense, if an ordinary person felt it then not only they would wither down without being able to say anything, they would undoubtedly trickle cold sweats while getting all flustered.

But, that young man warded off such dominating aura like a swaying willow…… or rather, in the first place the young man didn't even pay attention to that aura, he kept eating the cooking of Allgrey residence with gusto while talking.

「Nguh. You asked me from where, I entered normally from the door you know. Mugu mugu, I even said excuse me. ……Though I was normally ignored.」

「……That, seems to be the cooking of my residence though?」

「It's awfully delicious. As expected from the place of a big shot politician and the real estate king. There was leftover in the kitchen, so I loaded it onto a plate by myself. ……I, I pretty much asked okay? I took silence to mean OK, but I properly asked okay? I'm not stealing you know?」

For some reason the young man kept reminding something like「It's true you know?」. Jefferson knitted his eyebrows at such young man. The more he looked, the more this young man looked like a normal youth. No, in a sense, he was too normal in presence and appearance that if he didn't concentrate it felt like he would naturally forget him, perhaps he should say that this young man wasn't normal in that sense……

「Who are you……or perhaps it's too unsophisticated for me to ask that? That remark of yours just now in this situation. And then that ability that managed to infiltrate here without anyone able to notice. You are……a returnee huh?」

Jefferson spoke his conjecture with conviction, but for some reason the young man who heard his words frowned and his face looked a little sad. While Jefferson was perplexed from that inexplicable reaction, the young man asked with a voice that also sounded sad.

「A returnee huh? you asked, if you investigated about us, then shouldn't you know about me too? I expected a reaction like『You bastard-, you are a returnee

huh!?』, but……」

「What? A report of you is not……」

Jefferson was perplexed. He had looked over all the report of the returnee, he had driven into his head all the information of the returnees' profile from their family until their relative. If the young man before his eyes was a returnee that had been reported, then there was no way he couldn't recall him.

But, when one of his servants excitedly showed to him the returnees written report that had been converted into digital data in tablet……

「……Returnee list No. 28——Endo Kousuke? ……ah」

「Yep, you forgot aren't you? Isn't that right? That's fine, I understand. Hehe, I'm used to it. Although my shadow is thin even in digital data, I'm not co, concerned at all you know? I am a riajuu you know? That's why, I'm really, really not concerned at all okay?」

Strange silence descended on that place. The young man——Kousuke who seemed to be thin in shadow even inside digital data was making *kacha kacha* sound with the spoon and fork, only that sound was resounding with clarity inside that room. Word of「Delish-」that he was whispering until just now was changing into「It's salty huh」.

「S, so this is the supernatural that you possess.」

「……I got this since birth. Even my mum, she often forget to do things like picking me up at kindergarten……」

「……I, I see. That, you know, must be hard for you huh.」

For some reason Kousuke received gentle words and sympathy from the man who was aiming at him and his friends. The salt content of the high class cooking was increasing! A female servant was wiping her eyes with a handkerchief. The eyes of the bodyguards who were readying their gun until just now were turning lukewarm!

While spouting complaint「If you sympathize than give me presence」inside his heart, Kousuke cleared his throat *cough*, he stopped eating and opened his mouth.

「So, about the reason I came here.」

「Mu, that's right. Certainly I've never thought that a returnee will directly march into here. It appeared that your side has also investigated us to a certain degree. ……You, don't tell me, you came alone here?」

「Well, yeah. Actually I was in the middle of personal travel though. But suddenly you guys are making conspiracy, so I was told to go here for a bit to crush all of you.」

Kousuke was looking at his smartphone while saying「In front of Rana, I cannot refuse that guy's request」with his shoulders dropping down. Seeing that Jefferson exchanged look with the upper echelons and the bodyguards while his expression turned ridiculing.

「Crushing us, is it. Looks like you are growing impudent after obtaining supernatural huh. It is overwhelmingly faster to shot your four limbs with lead bullet in this range. It seems that you have the technique to interfere with your opponent's awareness, but in this limited space, can you crush us faster than bullet?」

gacha Hard ominous sounds resounded countless time. The bodyguards were focusing their gun muzzle toward Kousuke. Their number was a little less than twenty people. The place was a large dining room where sixty people could enter with room to spare, but certainly in this limited space it was equivalent with not having any way to escape from twenty gun muzzles.

Jefferson who thought that this young man was showing composure because he was a child who was drunk in his own power reversely showed a composed attitude. He crossed his arms above the table, and then while hiding his mouth behind his joined hand, his sharp gaze was striking toward Kousuke.

「Young man. Won't you come to our side? According to the report, it seems that the livelihood of all of you doesn't change much before and after obtaining supernatural. It's worthy of praise that not one of you is running wild, but surely that's only because you all don't understand the way to use the power you obtained. Then, we will teach you what is the right way to use that power. This Jefferson Allgrey can promise you, a life that is filled with riches and fame that is beyond your imagination.」

「……You really can say that with straight face after calling human as sample huh. They said that the skin of a politician's face is thick but, that's really true. Scaryyy」

Kousuke didn't look like he was particularly moved by Jefferson's persuading words, rather he showed a creeped out look. While raising one of his eyebrows that money and fame didn't resound in Kousuke's heart, Jefferson continued his words.

「Then what about woman? You are ——」

「I have girlfriend, I'm fine in that. Rather, my girlfriend is a super beauty already. She is already the best-, yep.」

Having his words cut off and hearing Kousuke suddenly speaking fondly of his girlfriend in front of him caused Jefferson's gaze to become something severe.

「……It's natural for you to feel almighty if you have a special power. But, what is called reality is something that is more heartless then what all of you is thinking. Perhaps if it's just you, or possibly it's just all of you returnees then you all might make it work out somehow. But, what about the people around you? Your family, your friends who are not returnee, relatives. Can you protect all of them? Our society is not just about violence you know?」

Saying that, Jefferson looked at his surrounding. Ahead of his gaze were the upper echelons of their society ——every one of them were successful people who possessed *social* power. And then, the gaze of Jefferson spoke more eloquently than anything.

That this wasn't everything their society possessed.

In other words, even in the one in a million chance all the people here died, their society itself wouldn't be finished. There were still other people with power gathering in their society.

「I'll recognize your ability to gather information until this far and your guts to infiltrate into here alone. But, for you to be under the impression that the situation before your eyes is everything there is, you are still just a child. We have seek for supernatural from long ago, the society that have laid stretch our root to everywhere in the world, we are——」

「Hydra, right?」

Jefferson who implicitly pressed for obedience under the name of cooperation to Kousuke with condescending attitude was about to disclose the name of their society with plenty of emotion, but right before he could, Kousuke easily revealed that name.

Jefferson who twitched in reaction was about to open his mouth further, but ignoring him Kousuke ate the last of his food and operated his smartphone with one hand, then he spoke out the content that was displayed there.

「Abduction, murder, robbery, human experiment, on top of that even inducing war, a fanatic group of supernatural that will do anything——Hydra. Certainly it looks like you guys have long history. The origin of the name is because no matter how many upper echelons and parts of the organization are crushed, the survivor of the organization that is hiding somewhere will restore the organization back. The organization had existed since before the colonial period, historically the organization has been crushed several times, but before one knows it the organization is revived. The current chief is you……」

After that Kousuke read out loud the internal conditions of secret society Hydra. And then the information of upper echelon bunches who were here like their name, surface information, family, friends, work relatives, on top of that even the name of their illegitimate child or relationship with other organization that they kept secret even inside the organization. He didn't stop with just that, the concealed upper echelons who weren't here and the location of bases, and even further and further, things like the innermost thought of the upper echelons toward each other and so on, Kousuke disclosed everything.

It was clear that what was disclosed wasn't nonsense from the upper echelons who opened their mouth so wide it looked like their jaw might come off and their expression whose face turned completely pale.

Everything that they had done was impossible to be known by the information network of children or even by ordinary adult. Jefferson who had that fact thrust right back at his face not just by two fold but by ten thousand fold, the color of his face clearly shown how the capacity of his trained mind had completely went over capacity.

「When you peer into the abyss, the abyss will also peer back at you——su~ch famous expression, if it's you guys who loves supernatural then surely you have heard it before. We are standing in the superior position. Just how do you guys able to blindly believe such thing without any basis at all?」

「You, you bastard……」

「Well, you guys, you all are veteran through many adversity in *the surface world* huh. You guys must have never even dreamed that children who is going through school life without a care after getting their hand on magic will be able to overwhelm you even in information volume……」

「Why……just how, you know that much……」

「That's, if we know that there are some guys aiming for us, to say nothing of us, there is no way our demon king-sama will stay silent. Because that guy, he look like a cruel and heartless savage bastard, but actually he is totally spoiling the important people around him.」

「Demon king, you say?」

「Yeah. A godslaying demon king. That guy killed even god for the sake of a woman, and now you guys try to lay your hand on exactly that woman.」

Kousuke's gaze was growing to be filled with limitless sympathy. Jefferson's expression was grandly convulsing. There was already no dominating aura of a big-shot that could overpower ordinary person coming from him. Because he was a veteran manager and a politician who had piled up many experiences of going through adversity that he was able to understand Kousuke's experience and felt a sense of danger welling up inside him.

That was——they had touched something that should not be touched.

But, however, the people who were still relatively young among the upper echelons didn't have enough of that intuition.

「What is, what is, what demon king-. Just, what godslaying! Even nonsense has limit!」

「Tha, that's right! As expected you are just a kid. It seems that you don't even know how to bluff. Something like godslaying, as expected you have exaggerate

too much.」

「Chief, no more word is necessary! Let's make this brat pay the compensation for looking down on the society! You guys, just keep him alive! Do it!」

Saying that, they started a reckless action without waiting for the order of the chief which was normally impossible. Jefferson immediately tried to raise his voice to stop them, but faster than he could, several of the black-suited bodyguards, because of the strange atmosphere and the mysterious uneasy feeling they had, as though aroused by their impulse they were aiming their gun toward Kousuke's limbs while jumping forward.

「……Haa. I had more or less tried it, even though I thought of doing this by getting spared from releasing the shackle.」

Inside the situation that was moving all at once, there was *only* that whisper resounding.

「Wha-. Where is-」

「Shit-, what is going on!? Where did that guy go!?」

「No way, he vanished!?」

The jumping forward black-suited bodyguards were surrounding a chair that had no one on it in feeling dumbfounded. The chair should have Kousuke sitting on it until just a moment ago. From the beginning until the end they didn't take off their gaze even for an instant from that chair.

He was certainly there. Right in front of their eyes. They would grip him up, pulled him down from the chair, and held him down. They reached out their hands without leaving any place to escape while even imaging how he would counterattack, they were certainly aware of him until the moment they could touch him. Yet despite so their hands moved through empty air and "when they noticed" the target had vanished. It was as though he wasn't there right from the start.

「-, our mind has been interfered already!? Be careful, our awareness is being manipulated!」

Jefferson, thinking that it couldn't be helped now it had come to this, he

pushed at the emergency button at the other side of the table to summon the bodyguards standing by everywhere inside the residence while giving a warning. And then, he himself also took out a handgun from his breast pocket, at that time Kousuke's voice resounded once more. However, it was a voice with slightly different air than until just now.

「Interference to awareness? Fuh, what exaggeration……. My Ground Shrinker was beyond the pale of your perception ability, isn't that's all there is to it?」

「Wha-, impossible, standing on the ceiling!?」

Jefferson and others who were staying on guard against the most likely possibility of Kousuke sliding under the table was thinking in the corner of their mind 'doesn't it feel like his tone is a little strange?' while they looked up in surprise, and then they exposed a really stupid expression from shock.

Although, surely such reaction was something that couldn't be helped if they saw a human standing really naturally on the ceiling as though to say 'Gravity? What's that?'.

Furthermore,

(Why, why, is he making a strange pose!?)

Yes, Kousuke was standing upside down on the ceiling while covering his face with one hand with his eyes glaring down at Jefferson and others from between his fingers' gap! On top of that, before they knew it his body was already in an appearance of total black clothes, his eyes were wearing a sunglass on one-lens type, and his other hand was holding a black knife in a position that was crossed with the hand that was covering his face! Surely if the rabbit eared assassination group of another world saw this, they would undoubtedly clap and cheer while giving high praise of「What cool pose!!」!

「Fools who fell into the abyss of selfish desires and fanaticism. I'll teach into your body, that in this world, there are things that you ought not to know.」

For some reason, while rotating once before displaying a chuuni pose (version 24) again, Kousuke, no, the assassin of the strongest class who was awakened in various meaning at the other world, thrown a declaration of war toward the fanatic occult group. Together with that chuuni self-introduction!!

「The shadow of demon king, the vanguard of the dark rabbit ear family——Rapid Fang Shadow Claw, Kousuke E Abyssgate. Has arrived!!」

What does rabbit ear mean…….. Abyssgate, gate to where……. Those retort of Jefferson and others didn't form into loud words.

Because right after that, the peerless one even against the god's apostles in another world, the one with the thinnest shadow in the world, the best assassin in the world bared his fang.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Everyone's review that is like it has been planned beforehand blew away Shirakome.

Like, Endo-kun, you are loved huuh. ……He is loved, right?

I properly got his name out this time, so please remember it properly.

He is Endo Abyssgate-kun, okay.

PS

I placed the information about the special SS for each bookstore-sama in my activity report.

Please confirm it if you please.

The next update is planned at 6 P.M Saturday too.

Arifureta Chapter 199

Arifureta Extra Compilation – From Abyssgate Lord of The World

Foreign Country is Scaryyyy

「*Haaaa*~~~~~」

It was past noon where warm sunlight was showering down. In a corner of a certain city, at a lovely café with wooden entrance and terrace, a groan of a zombie was resounding. Although, people who got startled from that groan that sounded like it was reverberating from the realm of the dead was nonexistent.

Whether it was the couple that was feeding each other with cute cake at the terrace, or the male customer with businessman appearance operating his tablet alone, or the old man walking his dog who just passed through in front of the terrace, none of them showed any sign of being bothered by that groan. Or rather, they didn't even look like they noticed the groan.

「*aaa*~~~~~」

The groan resounded once more. As expected no one noticed, but the owner of the groan who wasn't paid attention to, he also seemed to get used of not being paid attention to, so he groaned without any reservation regardless of him being in public space.

To say more while in this topic, that zombie imitation had his face pressed down on the café's table, with both his hands holding his head. He looked like, someone who had made a mistake that couldn't be taken back and lamented his very life.

Just to make sure, this wasn't a zombie that escaped a research place somewhere and slipped into the street, as made evident by the glass with the logo of the café filled with beverage put in front of him, and the sandwich that still wasn't touched but had already been properly ordered.

But, at that time, the smartphone that was placed on top of the table of the zombie imitation was starting to play the BGM of a certain epic RPG's demon

king battle. That ringtone caused the zombie imitation to twitch in reaction, his hand crawled with his face still pressed on the table and picked up the smartphone.

And then, he put the phone on his ear and took the call still with his face pressed on the table.

「……*bai*」

『What's with that voice? That voice sounds like you are going to drop dead anytime.』

「Yeah, I feel dying. I caused my shame to overflow……」

『……I guessed it already. So you done it again huh, Endo.』

「I done it……I really done it, Nagumo. Perhaps, I'm no good already.」

『Endo……』

From the other side of the phone receiver, the conversation partner——the one who requested for the annihilation of the occult fanatic group Hydra, Nagumo Hajime guessed the mental damage of Kousuke and seemed to be exasperated, or perhaps it was sympathy in his voice that called Kousuke's name.

And then,

『Well, that doesn't matter——』

「It matter! Don't put it aside that simply! Give me more sympathy here! Have some more care! You are my kindred-spirit who know the same pain like me right!?」

Having his problem simply put aside like that, the excessive sadness caused Kousuke to succeed in coming back from zombie back to human. *Gabacho!* His face that was pressed on the table flew up and he raised the scream of his soul as though willing it to reach the other side of the sea.

『Even if you say that. In my case, I have a strong position as the victim of Hauria, but in your case, recently it came from yourself right? Not long ago you was still okay if it was just a little scuffle. Or else, was the case this time that difficult?』

「Uguu. Stabbing me right where it hurt……. That's, it wasn't really that bad yeah but……when I entered battle, unconsciously……. Maybe this is because before I asked you to open the gate and I spent a while with Hauria. Somehow, it feels like the more time I spend with them the more easily I "become" that……」

『Becoming Lord Abyssgate, huh.』

「Don't say that nameee!」

gon- Kousuke's face pressed down on the table once more along with that painful sounding sound.

——Endo Kousuke

The one with the scout role at the former hero party, at the legendary decisive battle which was carved at the history of the other world Tortus, he was the strongest assassin that boasted peerless performance against the apostles of god. ……Though such thing couldn't be imagined at all from the figure writhing in shame while groaning with his face pressed on a café's table.

The reason for such him who casually had a status of strongest to be turning into a hopeless person like this at a café in the middle of day, was needless to say because of the battle last night. Yes, that thing which was manifested at the battle, that chuuni conduct which was just too painful to look and listen to.

Just why he was performing that kind of chuuni in full drive even understanding that later on he would receive mental damage like this where it felt like he wanted to bash his head at the corner of a block of tofu and die? There were unavoidable reasons there.

One of the reasons was this.

==========

Endo Kousuke 17 Years Old Male Level:92

Vocation: Assassin

Physical Strength: 800

Stamina: 940

Endurance: 450

Agility: 1700

Magic Power: 560

Magic Resistance: 560

Skill: Assassination Technique [+Dagger Art] [+Concealment] [+Tracking] [+Throwing Art] [+Hidden Weapon Art] [+Transmission Wave] [+Escape Art] [+Abyss Lord] – Presence Manipulation [+Presence Isolation] [+Phantom Step] [+Dream Illusion III] [+Clarity Phantom] [+Minimum Mind] – Shadow Dance [+Water Dance] [+Leave Dance] – Gravity Magic – Language Comprehension

==========

As for the detail of those skills, [+Dagger Art] until [+Hidden Weapon Art] had the meaning exactly as the name implied, [+Transmission Wave] was an ability to strain one's ear to pick the vibration in the air or in the wall to listen at the conversation from some place in a distance, [+Escape Art] was a skill that gave aptitude correction to magic if it was used for escape.

[+Phantom Step] was a skill that left behind presence with afterimage piled up on oneself to blur one's own figure, [+Dream Illusion III] was a skill that produce illusion clone of oneself with the limit of three illusion, and then [+Clarity Phantom] was a skill that gave substance to the clone. [+Minimum Mind] was an invisibility assistance skill, when the user was being invisible, this skill would make the user's breathing, heartbeat, presence, and so on, and even the fluctuation of the mind to be in a flat state.

"Shadow Dance" was a skill to run on the wall that Kousuke often used. It couldn't let him stand still on wall, but as long as he had momentum he could continue to run of wall. Its derivation [+Water Dance] was the water version, [+Leaf Dance] was a skill that let him to use things like leaf dancing in the air as instant footstep for jumping.

Now then, have you all noticed? Nonchalantly there was a skill of a different disposition that could be seen just from its name mixing in among all those skills. Probably, that skill was exactly the one that awakened at that legendary decisive battle as the end derivation of assassination skill, the cause that made Kousuke's shame went into Mach speed.

——Abyss Lord (Abyssgate Lord)

The explanation from the status plate was like this.

Effect: In the middle of bloody battle, Abyssgate Lord arrived from dark bottom that is even darker than darkness. Now, o veil of darkness, o the dead of darkness, offer thy strength to the abyss! That is, the infinite power at dream……

The moment Kousuke saw this explanation, needless to say he threw his status plate on the ground with all his strength. It was also needless to say that he also grinded the plate with his foot while he was at it.

First the effect explanation was something cryptic that didn't become explanation, in the first place a nickname (?) that was given to him by chance at a battlefield becoming skill name just like that was also cryptic. Or rather the explanation text was just too painful. He didn't want to believe that this was really the final secret skill of his vocation.

However, just because of that didn't mean that he could neglect a power that he finally obtained without knowing its effect, and above all, there was a reason why Kousuke had to know it no matter what, and so he ascertained the effect while his SAN (TN: sanity) value was being shaved off grindingly. And the result that he understood, it appeared that this skill had the effect of a gradual Limit Break. It didn't raise his strength explosively like Limit Break, but a skill that strengthened all his specs little by little while that skill was in activation.

Furthermore, different from Limit Break, this skill didn't have the side effect of strong lethargy after use. It could really be said as an extraordinary ability.

Although, if it was asked whether it really had no demerit at all……the world wasn't that sweet.

The demerit of [+Abyss Lord]. That was……

While it was activated, the user's speech and conduct would be forcefully made to be a flawless chuuni(Abyssgate Lord)!

Furthermore what was troubling, the activation of the skill was basically possible to be done by the user's discretionary, but there was time when this skill activated before one knew it even when the user had no intention of activating it. Perhaps the cause of that was merely because of Kousuke's inexperience in

handling this skill, or possibly there was other factor……

Just like Kousuke said himself, it seemed that the ratio of the forced activation was increasing in proportion with the time he spent with the members of Hauria clan, so most likely the cause was due to the latter……perhaps.

『I had recommended this to you before but, skill sealing artifact. Do you really not need it?』

「Uu. Tha, that's……I want it, but」

Hearing Hajime's words, Kousuke's expression turned bitter while his speech sounded hesitant.

Previously, when Hajime saw Kousuke who because of his speech and conduct that was too much looked like he was really going to sink into abyss, he said「I cannot watch this anymore……」and offered to Kousuke that he would manufacture a skill sealing artifact for him. Just seeing him made even Hajime felt like his chest was struck with pile bunker.

Kousuke's eyes turned bright right after he heard that offer, but his expression immediately changed as though he had recalled something, and then he refused the offer with an expression that was oozing out bitterness. The reason of that was,

「……Rana, she will be dejected then.」

『Really someone like you is……』

That.

Rana——Rapid Shadow, Ranainferna Hauria (Real name: Rana, just Rana. This is important so I'll say it for the third time, it's just Rana).

At the legendary decisive battle, Kousuke used his ability——including his skill and also his nonexistent presence that he had by nature——with all his power, and with all his seriousness to stay invisible, yet regardless of that this rabbit ear lady of Hauria clan found him normally. She was the woman who stole Kousuke's heart. And then, she was also the perpetrator who brought forth Abyssgate Lord to this world.

Above all else, Kousuke feared that if he sealed Abyssgate Lord, then she would

fall out of love with him.

『Well, you went many hardships to go out with her . No, that's already crossed over the level of hardship. I think that you are the most amazing guy among our classmates you know, in various meanings. Or rather, I can even say that I'm holding respect for you.』

「I, is that so? It's not really something that much……」

『Don't be ridiculous. Just what is this guy who conquer【Raisen Great Labyrinth】by himself only for the sake of getting recognized by the woman he fell in love with is saying huh.』

「A, hahaha……yeah. I thought I was going to die that time. No, if I didn't use Abyssgate Lord state 24 hour that time, enduring that black history that made me dying in shame, I'd die normally there.」

Yes, just as shown by that skill which was casually written on the status plate, actually Kousuke had conquered【Raisen Great Labyrinth】. Furthermore he did it alone. At the battle against occult group Hydra, he was standing normally on ceiling wasn't because of his skill to wall run or because of Hajime's artifact, but by using his own gravity magic.

Even though the master of【Raisen Great Labyrinth】, Miledy Raisen was already gone, even though there was nothing but the half-automatic type interceptor golem that she left behind, but the labyrinth's trap and the situation where magic was unusable there were still going strong. Also, even though the golem was half-automatic type, they only lost the tactical capability like when Miledy controlled them, but their battle ability didn't decline even for a bit.

And Kousuke conquered such labyrinth by himself in a week and he returned alive. Because he was always in a state of Abyssgate Lord, his physical ability and will power, and then his chuuni speech and conduct, in various meanings they all broke the limit even more than Limit Break, and because he challenged his limit like that, his body and his heart, especially his heart! were all tattered, but even so he returned alive with all his limbs intact. It was only natural that Hajime and others were shocked by that.

『Really, you did well to survive. That was a savage condition that made even princess Kaguya look cute. You, just how much you loved that woman huh?』

「That's, so much that I'd challenge even Nagumo?」

『That's so huh……』

Yes, Kousuke was challenging the great labyrinth with even more preparedness for death than at the decisive battle when it was already completely the epilogue scene if it was a story where the final battle had ended, that was because the lovely rabbit ear onee-san Ranainfe……Rana gave a condition to Kousuke.

Since that day of the decisive battle, during the one month before they returned to earth, Kousuke was making his approach to Rana with great vigor.

However, Ranai……Rana was a Hauria clan, and all members of Hauria clan worshipped Hajime without a single exception. It was to the degree that if Hajime wished it, then any female of Hauria would instantly offer their body to him.

Of course, Hajime had the strongest hitting type bug character Shia Hauria who was the same Hauria clan like them, so there was no hero among them who would proactively try from themselves to obtain Hajime's affection. But, even so they made their "Boss" Hajime, the "demon king-sama that slaughter even god" as their standard for men so……to speak the unvarnished truth, their ideal was absurdly high.

And so, naturally, Kousuke's approach also didn't sway Rana.

「Fuh, I am a shadow that is serving "that person". A shadow doesn't need love……」

Like that,

「You too have strange taste aren't you. Know that you won't get away with just scald if you touch me, for you to pursue a dangerous woman like me……」

Or like that,

「Stop it already. A resolve to continue to walk together with me, in the bottom of darkness that is even deeper than abyss, there is none of that inside you am I right?」

Or like that, those sentences were told to Kousuke with fearless, or possibly bewitching smile on her face.

No matter how many times he confessed, Kousuke was shot down with speech that was undeniably excessive. Such Kousuke was seen by Hajime with a gaze as though he was witnessing a hero, while Shia was staring with intensely reproachful eyes (at Rana).

Even so Kousuke didn't get discouraged, he kept approaching her repeatedly, seeing that as expected even Rana seemed to be moved just a little by his persistence, that in the end it became like this.

「……Uu, do, do you want me that much? Not that, cough-. If you wish for this cursed body to that degree……. But, I belong to boss……not that, cough-. It's unfortunate, however my body already belong to "that person". That's why, okay? Give up……not that, cough-. Shadow live in shadow, and light in light, that is the law. Bu, but, well, if you conquer a great labyrinth or something like boss……or maybe, if you can make even a scratch on boss……it's not like I won't think about it, maybe? Not that-, cough-. Fuh, if you still wish for this body even then, then try to challenge the king of abyss and splendidly exert yourself and win.」

The beautiful rabbit ear onee-san said such thing while fidgeting and looking restless. It went without saying that seeing that caused the inside of Kousuke's chest to contain explosive heat that was equivalent with the eruption of【Guryuen Grand Volcano】before.

Yes, the condition that Rana gave him was to conquer a great labyrinth as well as landing an attack at the demon king Hajime…….

Just as Hajime said, it was a savage condition that might made even princess Kaguya to go「Wai-, you-」.

However, Kousuke who was blazing with the pathos of feverish love that could burn him to ash didn't even listen to the voices of the surrounding that tried to stop him, his figure vanished while no one noticed, he picked【Raisen Great Labyrinth】because it had the highest possibility for him to conquer and also because the age of god magic that he could obtain from there suited him the most, and then he jumped right into it.

After that, a week later. As expected Nagayama Juugo and Nomura Kentarou were anxious because Kousuke didn't go back. They discussed it with Hajime and

others, the person concerned Rana was also acting ‘perhaps I have said a little bit too much……’ with her gaze swimming around, so Shia who was already familiar with conquering that dungeon was about to go out for searching (by no means that they finally noticed that Kousuke wasn’t there only after a week passed), it was at that time,

Kousuke returned.

He was tattered all over, but he properly obtained age of god magic——the gravity magic. And then, while making the surrounding dumbfounded with his incomprehensible behavior of obtaining new power after the final battle for some reason, Kousuke made a declaration. He pointed his finger with a snap, and then boldly, with a fearless smile on his face,

「Demon king Nagumo Hajime-. Fight me!」

He said.

Naturally, Juugo yelled「Kousukeee, come back to your sanityyy! Stop doing something like suicideee!」, Kentarou begged「Shirasaki-san-, Ayakoo, anyone is fine! Quickly a recovery magic-. I beg you treat his head carefully!」, Aiko-sensei clung at Hajime while pleading「Hajime-kun, don’t be hasty-. Endo-kun is, that, he is just a little tired! His head is-」, and then Kouki, Ryutaro, and Suzu stood in the way between Endo and Hajime, they were trying to buy time for Kousuke to escape while getting drenched in cold sweat with the preparedness of death.

All those caused Hajime to say「You guys, just what do you think I am……」with his cheeks cramping, but he was reaping what he sow, so no one consoled him.

In that place that was filled with chaos, Kousuke completely ignored his friends who were stopping him, his gaze turned toward Rana and then he proclaimed with a loud voice, willing it to reach into her heart.

「Rana-san-. I love you! The condition that you gave me——if you can put even a wound at boss, then it’s not like I won’t think about it, those words, I believe in them! In front of Rana-san’s eyes, I’ll put a wound at Nagumo, clearly and distinctly-!!!」

Hearing that proclamation, the classmates who didn’t know that Rana’s condition was just her hiding her embarrassment finally guessed the reason of

Kousuke conquering a great labyrinth and his war declaration to Hajime which could only be thought as suicide wish, and they thought.

——So it's Hauria again-!!!!!

Everyone simultaneously directed criticizing gaze of「What the hell you have said to him!」to Rana. Rana who received those gazes were drenched in cold sweat while her gaze was swimming around as expected. Her cheeks reddened a bit from Kousuke's declaration while the Hauria females at the surrounding were giving her broad grin and teasing.

Now then, Hajime who received the challenge because of all those felt somewhat of a sympathy at the scenario of a boy challenging a powerful enemy for the sake of the woman he loved and he accepted that challenge.

Of course, he had no plan to get done in that easily. Even he had women that he loved, doing something like an unsightly fight in front of those women, was something that wouldn't do no matter what kind of circumstances it was, and above all, Kousuke himself would ask to be excused from "being gifted a mercy win".

And so, Hajime and Kousuke carried out a duel, and the result was——

The fact that currently Rana was accepting Kousuke's feeling was the clearest proof there was. The strongest assassin character, + full power Abyssgate Lord state, the combination of those weren't just for show.

It was a grand battle in various meanings but……that would be told in another chance.

Kousuke who accomplished the great feat of conquering【Raisen Great Labyrinth】solo, as well as dealing a blow at the godslaying demon king, he splendidly shot down Rana's heart with that challenge that put his life at stake.

But, naturally, although Rana had entrusted her to Kousuke, the fact that Rana was a Hauria didn't change, the time that he spent together with her, and also the time when he was welcomed by Kam and others as family, all of those times were basically spent as chuni. Naturally, because of that his Abyssgate Lord time was also increasing……

「Nagumoo, perhaps, I cannot go back anymore……. Perhaps, I should just go

until the very end just like this instead.」

『You are really driven to the wall huuh. But, even if you stop being Abys——chuuni, I don't think that girl Rana will fall out of love from you though? The fact is that you broke through that girl's savage condition right from the front. That is something that nobody else will be able to do. No matter even if you are chuuni or not, but there is no way she will abandon you who have gone that far for her sake after this late.』

「Perhaps, that's so. But try to think from the opposite. From here on too I'll spend time together with Hauria clan as relative. If I act normally among them by myself……won't the away game feeling get bad like that? See, it will be like a guy that cannot read the mood who will make a realistic retort like『This kind of thing is impossible in real world』when you are playing fantasy game.」

『Wha, what a difficult guy……. Well, that's an example that is easy to understand though. Indeed, doing that will dampen the mood.』

「Right? This guy, he can't read the mood huh, or what a boring guy, or he is not fun huh……if Rana think of me like that, I don't have the confidence that I can keep living even then.」

『Don't assert so surely like that geez. Rather, you cannot be helped anymore, in the end Endo, you have already found the answer inside yourself right? That's why, I too just tried to casually put it aside……』

「Listen to me here! I too know that I'm just complaining! But I want someone to listen to me still! Recently when I talked this to Juugo or Kentarou, both of them would just act 'saying this again huh~' and won't listen to me at all! You are my kindred-spirit that know the same pain aren't you!?」

『Aa, got it, got it. That's why don't scream like that to the phone.』

In the end, it seemed that Kousuke had the resolve to shoulder by himself (?) his shame or his metal damage, the point was that he just wanted Hajime to listen to him grumbling. Because Hajime understood that, that at first he tried to put it aside, but it seemed that Kousuke wanted him to keep him company in him letting out his stress.

Hajime who was faithfully keeping company with such Kousuke was also

completely different from the time when he was at Tortus, perhaps it should be said that he had mellowed. Though perhaps there was also the feeling of sympathy in him as a comrade who knew the same pain of heart just like Kousuke said.

After that, for a while Kousuke spoke his grumbling at length, between times he also asked for love consultation (?) like a way to progress his relationship with Rana, before finally Kousuke's mind was recovered, it was at that time that Hajime finally spoke the main topic of why he called——the detailed story of the occult group Hydra.

『So? I don't think that you will make any miss but, was the treatment to those guys went well?』

「Yeah, no problem with that. Hydra has become a charity group inside those guys. I think they will direct the funds of their society to unfortunate children from here on. I don't do anything to the bunches that weren't at that place though.」

『I don't mind that. After all they are a big organization. It seems that they have members everywhere, I'll deal with those. Well, perhaps I'll ask you to do something like this again if you happen to be nearby the target location while you are in your private business like this time.』

「No, I wasn't really close with this place. I was at North America you know? You, aren't your sense of distance getting weird because you can use gate?」

Kousuke glared with reproachful eyes while understanding that Hajime couldn't see him. Which wasn't surprising. In the first place Kousuke left Japan wasn't to purposefully respond to Hajime's request. If that was the case then no matter how extremely busy Hajime was, it would be faster if he opened a gate and directly marched into the enemy base.

This time Hajime requested Kousuke to deal with antagonistic organization was because the timing was just right when Kousuke was overseas in a private business using his winter vacation. And then, the private business of Kousuke was to boldly observe battlefield medical treatment in practice. Therefore, the destination of Kousuke was a country with inadequate medical system, there he learned directly in the spot, and by the time he thought 'well, perhaps I should

go back soon?', an imperial command came down from the demon king-sama to him.

By the way, for the moment Kousuke was a student preparing for examinations to enter the medical university he wished for, but perhaps it was a present for doing his best at another world, his skill "Language Comprehension" also could be used for all languages on earth, he was already like a native speaker right from the start at the foreign language subject, the other students preparing for examination were in the state of teary eyes in that subject, so Kousuke had relatively more leeway there.

Also, Kousuke wanted to enter medical university not because he wanted doctor license or that he wanted to become an elite doctor, but only because he wanted knowledge and technique that could be put to use at Tortus someday, so there was no need for him to enter into a university with that high of a standard, like that sometimes he was going around like this relaxing while also observing real practice of medical treatment.

The base of occult group Hydra that was Allgrey residence was located at Britain, so thinking with common sense, it couldn't be said that it was a place that was close with the place that Kousuke visited this time. It wasn't like Kousuke had a gate so he normally made use of commercial airplane (he had quite a lot of request fee transferred to his account from Hajime though) to travel until here which made it even farther.

『I told you before that if it's you I'll at least make a degraded crystal key for you didn't I?』

「……I'll refrain from that. Nagumo's artifact is too convenient. If I grow to rely it like it's only natural, then it feels like I'll think of normal life as inconvenient, that's scary. If I'm traveling then I'll limit myself to my own feet and public transportation.」

『You, even though you have thin shadow but something you say something with depth huh.』

「You don't need to add about the thin shadow-. Just the request fee you transferred is enough. About this much is just right for a timid person like me.」

Kousuke could feel Hajime smiling wryly at the other side of the phone from his

words. Kousuke who didn't receive really high assessment from the surrounding because of the thinness of his shadow fundamentally had low self-esteem. Even though he always produced an outrageous result "when he noticed", he wasn't evaluated by other, that was why it didn't become an awareness of him that what he had done was amazing.

『Well, anyway, you saved me the trouble there. I planned to crush them sooner or later, but recently I'm seriously busy. If those guys start to move all out it will be really troublesome, but now their heads are crushed before that happen, so I guess they won't move for a while. Now I can devote myself to what I want to do with this spare time.』

「That's great. If I remember right, you are doing various things like making it easier to open the gate to Tortus right? If that works then I'll be able to meet with Rana more casually.」

Leaving aside Kousuke's low self-esteem, their talk came to a finish after Hajime heard about what he wanted to ask. Kousuke earnestly reminded Hajime that he would cooperate with this kind of odd jobs, so he should hurry with establishing a way to make it easier to come and go to Tortus, after that he was about to hang up the phone.

「Then, later. Nagu——」

It was at that time.

Suddenly, *gyagyagyagya-!!* such sound of something slipping fiercely resounded.

「Wha, what is!?」

『Oi, Endo, what——』

The shocked Endo turned his gaze toward the street where the sound of slipping and scream of people were reverberating from, right after that a thunderous sound that drowned the words of Hajime came, a car was drifting through the street corner rushing out toward here.

The thunderous roar was the sound of that car running wild coming into contact with the car parked on the street. The parked car that was hit had its mirror blown away and its tail lamp popping off. However, while it clearly caused

such incident, the car that made its entrance with a drift didn't show any sign of stopping at all, far from that it accelerated further.

Toward the café where Kousuke was.

「Wha-, wa-——!?」

The couple, businessman, and then the beautiful waitress who were also at the terrace screamed while tumbling over trying to escape inside the café. The next moment, the black car that looked tough pulled its emergency brake just before it charged into the terrace and its rear part mowed the terrace heartily.

Wreckage of terrace danced midair, and then tableware and cooking……

「Uoh. That's a waste!」

Kousuke was evading the wreckages of the terrace before jumping to the air and with *hyupapapa*- caught the sandwich that he still hadn't touched! In his hand was a plate that he secured unnoticed while the sandwich was put on it before it was blown away still beautifully untouched due to Kousuke's exquisite skill. While he was at it, he had put away his smartphone into his pocket unnoticed and in exchange used his hand to use the glass that he had secured to skillfully secure the blown away beverage to a certain degree.

And then, he caught midair the last piece of sandwich with his mouth and lightly landed on top of the café's signboard that was placed on the walkway.

「Mugumuguh, puhah. Good grief, a car suddenly came charging, just what in the world——」

Kousuke swallowed the sandwich that he caught in his mouth and he spoke his complain with his two hands holding plate and glass, there his gaze suddenly met someone.

The black car that was temporarily stopping after crashing into the terrace. From the window of that car's passenger seat, there was a blond haired girl with his mouth opened wide looking as though 'I had seen something unbelievable!', her gaze staring fixedly at Kyousuke.

Beside the girl who had pretty blonde hair that was tied into side tail and almond-shaped eyes with unyielding spirit that reminded one of cat, there was

also a beauty with crisp appearance and very short hair style who was the perpetrator of this reckless driving. That very short hair lady was also staring fixedly at Kousuke.

「A, aa~, he, hello? Are you two, injured?」

Kousuke was making a bit awkward expression from the stares of the two that was too straightforward while he tried to say such thing for the moment. Perhaps reacting to that, the cat eye side-tail girl was opening her mouth to say something but,

「Eh, wai-, again!?」

A fierce slipping sound that suddenly could be heard made Kousuke's cheeks convulsed and he turned his gaze there. Ahead of his gaze, there were the scene of similar black cars, two, three of them drifting while rushing out from the street corner.

The woman with very short hair also seemed to notice that, she recovered her time that stopped from witnessing Kousuke's absurd movement. She immediately moved the steering wheel, stepped on the accelerator and rapidly took off right away. The cat eye side-tail girl passionately kissed「Mugyuu-!?」the side glass due to the centrifugal force.

The black car boarded by two females seemed to, no, they were really running away from the black cars that came from behind, their car was driving dangerously once more while vanishing at the other side of the road. After that, the three black cars passed through in pursuit.

It was a scene that happened out of nowhere. In a hair's breadth, the couple and businessman that had escaped from the terrace into the café fearfully peaked outside, while Kousuke was drinking up his beverage with *zugo*-——sound.

『Oo~i, Endo. What happened?』

Actually the call was still connected all this time, the voice of Hajime resounded from the smartphone.

Kousuke jumped down from the signboard and gently put down the glass that he had just drained on that signboard. His gaze was moving to the other side of

the road where the cars were disappearing while he took out his smartphone, and then he responded to Hajime seriously.

「Nagumo, as expected, foreign country is scaryyy.」

『……You, what are you saying?』

Hajime's retort drifted lightly into the blowing wind and vanished completely.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Now then, about the custom (?) heroine attribute,

Blonde side-tail + Lab coat girl + unyielding cat-eyes + ○○ + ○○

Something will surely be entered into those ○○. Please use your imagination if you like.

By the way, the model for her is Akita Neru. Tda-style is goddess. (TN: Tda-style is character model that is used at Miku Miku Dance, Vocaloid)

The next update is planned at 6 P.M Saturday too.

Arifureta Chapter 200

Arifureta Extra Compilation – From Abyssgate Lord of The World

Wai-, It's Misunderstanding!
Misunderstanding I Told You-

Inside the room that was merely old rather than retro, was illuminated by orange light of fluorescent lamp. The wall was wooden and looked thin, only the synthetic leather sofa with fading coloration and the bed looked excessively big, but the sheets and curtain with the same color gave worn out impression vaguely.

「As expected from a cheap hotel. It really gives the atmosphere like hotel in movie where fugitive will take refuge in.」

The floor was creaking. Kousuke who threw his body on the bed was smiling wryly while speaking to himself a sentence that sounded like a flag. The spring of the ancient bed was making creaking sounds as though to protest to the one treating it roughly.

Because Kousuke had a need to stay for one night due to his plane's schedule, he rented a hotel room like this. And why was he intentionally choosing this kind of dilapidated hotel when he had just received a considerable amount of request fee from Hajime that someone with social status of a student wouldn't be able to normally obtain? That was merely because of Kousuke's poor person's mentality.

Even if he stayed in a high class hotel without any particular necessity just because he had much money, Kousuke would definitely be unable to calm down coupled with the gaudiness of the room. Staying in a capsule hotel……isn't it strangely calming? Those were the words that Kousuke once said to his parents when they were going in a family trip.

The parents of Kyousuke at that time was as expected a little bit solemn at their son's sense that was somewhat too small as a person, at the very least he

should be demanding for business hotel or pension.

「But well, I at least splurged a little and rented the upper floor. This is nice scenery.」

The reason Kousuke picked this hotel was because this hotel had fifteen floors relatively to its oldness. The higher the floor, the more expensive the cost for just a smidgen, but after thoroughly worrying, Kousuke finally decided「A, around floor ten, this is a rare chance so it should be fine……」so that he could enjoy the scenery. If his classmates or his family knew that, surely they would be looking at him with a lukewarm gaze.

When he opened the worn-out curtain, there the lighting of the city was like stars that were spread on the ground, they were sparkling with glitters. It was quite a night scenery that he could be satisfied with, just like what he expected and hoped for.

「……Next time let's look at this with Rana for sure, yup.」

Kousuke spoke to himself once more. Inside his mind, the imagination of him doing romantic this and that with his older rabbit ear lover were rushing about. ……If Juugo and Kentarou were at his side, they would surely give a retort that before things like night scenery and so on, he should at least raise the hotel's grade a little bit higher.

He was enjoying the night scenery for a while having a wild delusion inside his brain about rendezvousing with Rana, during that time he took out his smartphone and smiled cheerfully while looking at his photo with Rana that they took the last time the gate was opened to Tortus, he repeated those kind of things for several hours.

Kousuke headed toward the bathroom, thinking that he should take a shower soon and retire to bed.

The bathroom also had antique structure, There was a shower nozzle that could be directly taken on the wall and several handles below it. For the time being he would first ascertain the knack of the old shower, when he rotated the handle which played *kiko-kiko* sound, water gushed out rapidly. While saying「Naïve-, you think I'll get my head drenched just like the cliché huh!」by himself futilely, he adjusted the handle *kiko-kiko* so that the warmth would be

the optimum temperature.

He ascertained the warmth with his hand while whispering ‘This temperature is enough I guess’, it was at that time——

Noisy hustle and bustle and fierce shaking came from upper floor. The troubling thing was that dust fluttered down in sprinkles from the ceiling.

「Kehoh. What’s this, don’t make a racket in this kind of worn-out hotel you there. ……The ceiling won’t be thin like the wall right?」

He had finished confirming the thinness of the wall. He wanted to believe that this building wouldn’t go as far as having even its ceiling selling a fight right from the front toward the law regarding construction standard. Kousuke’s expression was turning slightly anxious while he was looking up at the ceiling that was energetically spraying down dust.

There was no way, that the people at upper floor was intensely making love, where the excessive intensity would cause the ceiling to came off and fell down, where Kousuke would face the couple——ain’t no way such thing would……while Kousuke was having wild delusion that would make him red faced if his acquaintance asked him about it, for some reason a bad premonition was welling up inside his chest, then he shook his head like dog in order to shake off the dust raining down on his head.

Instantly, *pan-pan-pan* bursting sound that he was familiar with struck Kousuke’s eardrum.

「E, ee? Wai-, just now was that gunshot? Isn’t that too intense for love making!?」

Kousuke looked up at the ceiling again from being startled. Even during that time the gunshot continued to sound without pause. No matter how he thought about it, the guest at the upper floor was doing a fierce gunfight with someone else. Moreover, *papapapapa* from how even consecutive bursting sound like that could be heard, one of the sides, or possibly both sides were even coming there equipped with machine gun type.

「I, I just witnessed a car chase at the afternoon you know? Just how dangerous foreign country can be huh. Or else, is it Japan that is too peaceful!?」

Thinking that it would be unbearable if bullets pierced the ceiling and rained down at him, Kousuke made his body smaller while exiting the bathroom. And then, just to be sure he should look at the situation of his own room's floor whether it was safe or not, so he quietly opened the room toward the corridor. His face peeked out a bit and he ran his gaze to the left and right of the corridor, but for now it seemed there was no one at the corridor.

Kousuke went「Who can stay longer than this in a hotel that have guys having gunfight like that!」, he was raising a weird flag while deciding to start to run away.

But, before he could do that, from the direction of the window there was a flash that was too intense bursting out. It appeared that the guest upstair was even using flashbang. Right after that,

「Doctor Grant-, hold on! We are jumping!」

「We, we'll really do it!? Ya, wait, wait I told youuuuuuu~~~」

Just when he heard such loud voice and scream coming from the window, right after that, *pan-pan-pan* the window of Kousuke's room had several holes opened on it and it cracked in spider web shape, right at the next instant, *gashaaan*- the window glass was blown away inside along with that pulverization sound.

——Along with a woman in black suits, and a blonde haired side tail girl that was being held by that woman.

「Are you injured, Doctor Grant?」

「Uu, I'm fine here Vanessa. But, my life span is shrinking.」

The tall woman wearing black suits——an agent of state security bureau Vanessa Paradis helped the blonde haired side tail girl wearing lab coat——Emily Grant to stand up.

Emily was making a pale face while shaking her head around, Vanessa was giving that a glance while quickly replacing the magazine of the automatic gun she was holding with her gaze moving at the entrance.

「Let's hurry Doctor Grant. We will be surrounded soon.」

「Yes, I understand. Even so, I'm glad that *there is no one* in the room below.」

「Yes. Thinking of their method, they will be willing to involve even civilian after all……」

Both of them was jumping down with comparatively reckless method of using bed sheet as extempore rope to leap down from upper floor to lower floor, but they stroke down their chest in relieved sigh that *there was no one* in that lower floor room.

Whether it was with the car chase at the afternoon and also the attack before that, the pursuer of Emily and Vanessa was gradually growing to not choose their method. If there was civilian not at a public place but in a inconspicuous place like this room of a dilapidated hotel, those guys would undoubtedly remove that person without any second thought.

(……No, well, this happen every time, so it's not like I'm bothered. But I entered your field of vision right in front of you here, and it's not like I'm putting on invisibility or anything you know?)

The sudden situation caused a certain someone with thin shadow somewhere who stiffened while half opening the door's room to slip out grumble while his cheeks were convulsing. And then, he thought that instead it was better like this that he wasn't noticed by this two females who were intensely smelling of troublesome thing, perhaps he ought to plan to flee right away without delay.

However, Kousuke's luggage——although there was nothing really valuable in it, but he couldn't leave behind his passport and wallet that were in there.

Besides,

(……These two, aren't they the two at the car chase this afternoon?)

Yes, Kousuke remembered. These two were the females who witnessed his beautiful midair sandwich catch and ginger ale catch, and then they exposed silliness of getting dazed with mouth wide open regardless that they were in the middle of a car chase.

They gave intense smell of troublesome thing, one of them was obviously not a person with a respectable position, while the other one, even though she was around the same age with Kousuke yet she was wearing a worn-out lab coat. But

even so, for some reason Kousuke was paying attention to these two who were in a desperate situation.

That was perhaps because he had seen the figure of these two feeling relieved that no unrelated person was getting dragged into their situation even while they were confronting an outrageous situation like gunfight in an intense action movie.

(But, I won't be moved. Even though this is a coincident that looks like there is even some kind of compelling force working in it, but a coincidence is a coincidence. These two look like they are good people, and they are beauty, they are beauty! But me who am a riajuu and have Rana as lover won't be swayed! I will also have summer cram school short course the day after tomorrow. And so, I'm going home!)

Kousuke proclaimed such thing inside his heart while using stealthy footsteps, stealthy footsteps, sloo~wly and quii~etly he returned inside the room. It wasn't like he had a callous sense of value who would cast away everything unrelated to him like Hajime when he was at Tortus.

However, Kousuke who was at earth was a man of valor at supernatural level who could annihilate the main base of a secret society that possessed history of several hundred years by his lonesome. Someone who possessed such power could do almost anything. And then, in this world, everywhere there were troubled people asking for help, and someone like Kousuke who was traveling around here and there would witness that to a "frequent" degree whether he wanted it or not.

If he moved just because of his emotion to all of those with only the reason of "because they are in trouble", then there wouldn't be an end to it. Something like pursuing his own dream would become secondary or tertiary.

And above all, Kousuke also wasn't someone like Hajime who possessed strength to a degree that was almost almighty. In addition, he didn't happen to have a sense of value of relying upon others just for his own objective that would let him say「Something that can make me almighty」and request artifact to Hajime.

There were several times until now where he had bad aftertaste from turning a

blind eye or feeling ashamed due to his action, but, even so, what was the thing that ought to be prioritized, and where he should draw the line……the importance of those had been carved into his heart by his days at the other world, the way of the demon king that guided them, and the time that he spent with Rana and family of Hauria.

Like that, Kousuke decided to not get involved with Emily and Vanessa. Right at that time the two females were being on guard while moving toward the entrance——in other words, toward Kousuke's direction, the two sides passed each other, and it was at that time, a situation arose as though to ridicule that decision of Kousuke.

「VANESSAAAAA-!!!」

「-!?」

An angry voice was thrown toward Vanessa. The origin of that voice was the window with nice ventilation that Vanessa and Emily had just jumped through. Seeing at that direction, there was a man who was wrapping his hand with bed sheet as rope replacement similarly like Vanessa, using centrifugal force to leap into the room.

Vanessa reflexively aimed her gun to shot the man. But, the gun muzzle of the handgun that the man's other hand was holding was aimed not at herself but toward Emily, seeing that Vanessa immediately jumped and pushed Emily down.

The man grinned widely at that reaction of Vanessa, in the end he didn't pull the trigger and like that he rushed into the room agilely, with a forward roll he killed his momentum while his gun was thrust out with a flowing motion right toward Vanessa who had just lifted her face.

「……Tsk. So you are faster even in this situation. As always, it's *only* your technique that is first class.」

The man dropped his gaze toward his own chest along with a click of his tongue. There he found Vanessa's gun silently propped.

「That word "only" is saying too much, Kimberly. I'm also planning to have the sincerity to not betray my comrade unlike you.」

「Hah. That is not called "sincerity". That's called "naivety". Just like how you

covered that missy just now even while you understood that I wouldn't shot.」

The man called Kimberly lambasted like that at Vanessa with a tone that sounded as though spit would spittle out. Brown short hair and toned body that was obvious even behind the suits he wore. Eyes that looked like bird of prey and lips with their corner raised cynically. Seeing objectively, he had a well-ordered feature of wild type that could even pass off as actor.

Judging from their way of speaking, it was obvious that Vanessa and Kimberly knew each other, no, that they were coworker. At the same time, Kimberly who seemed to be the pursuer of Emily and Vanessa could also be seen to have a turbulent background of having betrayed Vanessa.

(Waiiit! What the hell keep happening one after another here! Is this a movie-, am I in the middle of action movie that excited the whole America huh-! Are you two aiming for this scene where you point gun at each other while cracking jokes huh! Aren't you two cool huh!)

Vanessa and Kimberly both slowly stood up while aiming their gun at each other. Right around the middle of them was a man with thin shadow who were furiously making retort even though he didn't say it out loud. He should be inside their field of vision normally but……

「Give up already Vanessa. Hand over the doctor. You too, come with me. You can get lot of money that will still have change left even if you used them for playing your whole life you know? That's far better than eating lead bullet in this kind of place right?」

「Did you kill everyone in the team for that kind of reason? Just because of money? There is no way I'll be swayed by that kind of vulgar reason. I'll accomplish my duty. I won't let you lay your hand on the doctor.」

Kimberly clicked his tongue once again in irritation. Behind Vanessa, Emily whose face was stiffened in nervousness was directing her gaze at Vanessa with face that looked like wanting to cry.

「Uhah, this woman is so cool……. If this is a movie filming then you must be the protagonist for sure, yep.」

Someone somewhere spontaneously let out his impression.

Kimberly glanced at Emily while continuing his words with mocking tone.

「Duty is it. Hah, do you seriously think that something like that is still valid?」

「……What do you mean?」

「Who knows? Just what does that mean I wonder? Won't you get it if you return to the headquarter?」

「Don't tell me……」

Vanessa whose expression was scarce in variation even through all these chain of events opened her eyes slightly wider at this point. The words of Kimberly gave light to the possibility that perhaps they were already falling into a hopeless and isolated situation. Even though it was already hopeless to break through the current situation, to lose even her backing would be the same as being placed in a check for real.

Were Kimberly's words the truth? Who was her ally and who was her enemy? Who could she believe?

In contrast with Vanessa's scarce expression, inside she was wracking her brain. It was at that time sounds of footsteps running from corridor reverberated like time limit ticking down. While Kimberly was obstructing them here, the other pursuers were using the stair to come here.

「tsu」

「This is the end Vanessa. I understand you know? Normally, you wouldn't follow along with this kind of pointless task and would try to suppress me swiftly. You didn't do that because you are injured somewhere aren't you? My surprise attack at the research lab——seems like you didn't manage to deal with that completely huh. Your driving at the afternoon too, you were continuously making mistakes that is unlike you.」

Kimberly quickly ran his gaze all over Vanessa's body, then he said「Is it your side?」while laughing. Vanessa didn't show any reaction, but in exchange Emily's sorrowful expression completely exposed the truth in Kimberly's words.

「Aa, then that accident at the afternoon, so that wasn't simply because she is unskillful in driving huh.」

Inside that strained situation, a certain someone with thin shadow who was sneakily and quietly collecting his luggage was whispering such thing with small voice. As expected, surely someone would noti……

「Even so you aren't pulling the trigger, is that because you don't think that you will for sure even against the wounded me?」

「……I wish you'd say that I'm careful instead. There is no need for me to intentionally brave more danger even though it will be checkmate already soon.」

「No, that attitude of yours isn't what is called "careful", but "cowardice".」

Perhaps that was her payback for before. Kimberly who ate a splendid word counter narrowed his eyes looking daunted.「That's really an excellent payback. You're doing great, do it more! Get humiliated, you handsome!」Such small voice that cheered Vanessa and cursed Kimberly resounded, but the voice was normally passing into right ear and came out from the left ear unnoticed.

Right after that, six armed men rushed into the room with noisy footsteps. Vanessa frowned and Emily turned pale while huddling close to Vanessa, Kimberly's expression became completely filled with joy, and the young man with thin shadow had shouldered his baggage unnoticed while looking back from nearby the door with an awkward expression.

「Now then, this is the end of the road of your meaningless escape drama. Sorry, but I won't ask you already whether you will join me or not. I'll kill you here and take away the missy. You had spat at your last chance just now. You stupid woman.」

「Vanessaa!」

「tsu, Doctor-」

When Kimberly signaled with his eyes, a man with solid built wearing leather jacket caught Emily's arm and tore her away from Vanessa. Vanessa gritted her teeth and then she took a deep breath as though resolving herself before,

「Doctor Grant, my apologize. It seems that I cannot protect you until the end. But, that doesn't mean I have run out card. Please don't give up.」

Saying that, she smiled faintly while taking off her gaze completely from

Kimberly, she defenselessly turned around toward Emily. She casually slid out something from her pocket while——

「Do you think, how many times I have teamed up with you?」

「tsk, guh」

Instantly a gunshot echoed, at the same time Kimberly's kick stabbed onto Vanessa's flank. The gunshot came from Vanessa. She pretended to avert her attention toward Emily while firing at Kimberly, then she tried to use her last flashbang.

But, Kimberly appeared to have predicted that, he brushed off Vanessa's gun with his gun that he pointed at her and simultaneously he launched a fierce kick at her flank.

Vanessa fell on her knee due to the intense pain and red stain seeped out on her flank. At her side *clonk* a small flashbang with its pin still attached rolled. Vanessa was drenched in sweat, even so she tried to aim her gun muzzle toward Kimberly but her arm was kicked once again and her arm let go of the gun.

And then, Kimberly's gun muzzle pushed grindingly at Vanessa's forehead, as though to show that it was checkmate for sure this time.

「I got no carelessness and opening. That's my respect to you.」

「……」

Kimberly looked down at Vanessa with a gaze that contained no more emotion. Emily was being pinioned from behind while desperately raising her voice to stop him, but Kimberly didn't even spare a glance at her. His unwavering gaze that informed the checkmate glared at Vanessa's long slit eyes that reflected no despair which also glared back at him.

Like that, in a moment Kimberly narrowed his eyes in displeasure and his finger on the trigger tightened. There was no more margin between on and off of the trigger. With a click, the internal mechanism's operating sound rang.

「Stooop! Vanessa! Run away-!」

Emily's scream reverberated. 'No matter what happened', the woman who had said that to her and protected her just as those words meant, was going to

have her head blown up in front of her eyes. Even though she had already had a lot of her important people died, yet fate was still going to expose another tragedy in front of her eyes again. Emily's heart creaked.

「See ya, Vanessa.」

「Fall to hell, ugly man.」

A betrayer, and a knight of a girl, they exchanged the last words.

Someone, anyone is fine. Anyone is fine so. She is expressionless, blunt, but this really good natured and sincere woman, please save her. Just like how this person saved me, please save her-!

Emily screamed. She wished for salvation. That her wish would reach a miracle, that surely should exist somewhere in this world.

「Someone-, save————!!」

「Aaa, geez-. Come one, don't say something like that!」

Instantly, a single gunshot echoed. It was small embodiment of death that scattered human's life easily, however, the room wasn't dyed red.

Sprinkle of woodchips fell from the ceiling.

「He?」

「Ha?」

「Wha, what is……」

Vanessa leaked out a stupid voice that was unlike the clever beauty that she was, Kimberly raised an astonished voice that was unable to understand the situation, while Emily unconsciously slipped out a question. The man who was restraining Emily, and the other men too, they were dumbfounded still, with their eyes turned into dot at the strangeness that suddenly happened inside this room.

「Haah, I did it. But, a man, or rather a human that doesn't react in this situation, they are just no good huh.」

「tsu, yo, you-. Just where in the world, did you come from——」

Kimberly stepped back. But he couldn't step back further than that. The

reason was, because while everyone in that room was focusing their attention, he——Kousuke who suddenly appeared and grasped his arm that was holding the gun and moved it to aim at the ceiling.

Just where in the world did you come from, those words that expressed the agitation of Kimberly caused Kousuke to smile wryly.

「From where you ask? This place is my room. I am here right from the start. Can you spare me from using other person's room for a Hollywood scene as you please?」

「Chih, so you hid somewhere-」

Kimberly tried to shake off Kousuke's hand, but even though he had the appearance like a Japanese boy who wasn't even a young man yet, the trained arm of Kimberly felt like it was being constricted tightly by a vise that he couldn't move even for a bit.

The other men who returned to their senses with 'hah' aimed their gun at Kousuke in panic, but at that time Kousuke smoothly moved behind Kimberly and turned him into a shield. With that the men hesitated to pull their trigger.

Using that opening, Kousuke twisted Kimberly's wrist and restrained his hand to the back. Kimberly grimaced from the pain at his wrist while raising his voice to ask the identity of this intruder.

「You-, who are you! Your movement just now……you aren't a civilian huh!?」

「No no, I am a normal student that you can found anywhere——」

Kousuke took Kimberly hostage for the time being while his gaze urged Vanessa to take Emily and escape quickly.

However, the Vanessa in question, right after she received Kousuke's gaze, her expressionless face crumbled for some reason to be replaced with relieve. And then, she cut off Kousuke's words and said something like this.

「Fuh. So it seems you made it in time aren't you, Mr. K.」

Her way of speaking was as though she knew from the start that support would arrive. Now that she mentioned it, just now she said something like she still hadn't run out of card yet, however, there was no way she was referring to

Kousuke. Kousuke being her was a coincidence, there should be no way for her to recognize Kousuke's existence, in various meanings.

For some reason there was this unpleasant coincidence where she called him with just his initial even though it was the correct one……

「Eh? No no, you are absolutely mistaking——」

「What-!? Mr. K, you said!? You are that person!?」

Kousuke's words were cut off once more, by Kimberly who was shocked and got taken aback for some reason.

「Wait a second! You guys are absolutely misunderstanding here! Indeed, my initial is K but——」

「Just as I thought, you are really Mr. K!? It's no wonder that I got taken by surprise……. This way of killing your presence, I have never seen something like this before. Shit-, Vanessa. I detected you making contact somewhere while you were fleeing this afternoon but, who'd ever think that you are bringing in a support like this man-」

Unstoppable misunderstanding. Kousuke's words was easily treated like passing wind similar with how thin his presence was. Inside his heart he went「Or rather, just who is this Mr. K!?」, screaming at the situation that was showing him with this unexpected development.

「The freelance hit man that won't show his figure no matter what……. He will accept a hit for anyone depending on the reward. Honestly, I hesitated until the end whether to request assistance or not from someone that has been blacklisted by the security bureau. But, to protect Doctor Grant, this is unavoidable. ……Although, I never thought that Mr. K is a Japanese and he is someone this young, it shocked me.」

Kousuke thought. Thank you for the explanation, like that.

It appeared this Mr. K was a hit man that was put in the blacklist of government.

For Vanessa who wouldn't desert Emily no matter what, this was a really difficult situation that she would even rely on this option although it pained her.

Most likely she was thinking that this person who would kill anyone depending on the reward, someone who absolutely wouldn't betray his client, and would accomplish the request without fail, would be someone that was relatively easier to request from compared to other characters that were put in the blacklist.

「Oi, notice already the inconsistency inside your own words. You said that this Mr. K won't show his figure, but here he is showing himself normally see. A Japanese this young, this kind of Japanese youngster, I don't know from which organization he came from but there is no way he is a hit man that is put inside black――」

「I, I remember! He, at the café that Vanessa crashed into this afternoon, he is the person who caught sandwiches and drink from midair!」

「From the afternoon, you say? Shit, so even the escaping route was predicted and you were observing us! We were planning to pursue, but actually we are the one that is being pursued here huh.」

The misunderstanding was accelerating. Emily-chan, what an exquisite interruption in unbelievable timing. Kimberly gritted his teeth and Kousuke's cheeks were grandly convulsing.

「Excuse me, I beg you please listen to my sto――」

「Kimberly. I requested Mr. K to murder the attackers who come in the middle of Doctor Grant's protection. You understand what is the meaning of that aren't you? Although he is a young hit man that rose to prominence in this two, three years, it's already proven that his skill is the real deal. In front of this cruel and heartless person, I cannot recommend you to do anything rash.」

Kousuke, was a cruel and heartless young hit man……. Something shiny was starting to gather faintly at the corner of Kousuke's eyes. The hand that was restraining Kimberly was shaking as though expressing the inside of his heart.

Seeing that, the armed men went「Kuh, this is bad. That guy, he is desperately holding back his urge to kill」etc., they were making expression that shuddered with fear and whispered to each other. Kimberly too, the shaking that he felt was starting to make him flustered while saying「Kuh, what a crazy guy-」.

「Vanessa. Just what is different between you and me? You are insane, using

this kind of fiend for the sake of your objective. In the end, you are going to do anything if it's for your objective aren't you?」

「Wai-, calling me fiend is rud——」

「Indeed, perhaps that is so. But, I plan to at least discern the line that shouldn't be crossed. If, he is really a fiend in the true meaning, and he directed that killing intent to Doctor Grant or people who are not related at all, at that time I'll stake my life to stop him.」

「Listen here, can you stop so naturally calling me fiend, fiend like——」

「Don't lump Vanessa together with someone like you! Someone like you after all is just a wretched petty scoundrel whose eyes are blinded by money! That devilish homicide, -san over there is still better than you!」

「Oy you, I'm going to cry here. Do you think that if you add "-san" it's okay to call other people devilish homici——」

「Hmph, those are words of a kid who doesn't know the value of money. But, do you forget? The one who create that devil medicine is no other than you missy. If you are talking about fiend, then it's you yourself who——」

Beautifully ignoring a certain someone somewhere. Kimberly's words became an unseen blade that hurt Emily. Emily's expression distorted in pain and guilt and her hand unconsciously gripped on her chest……but, at that time, suddenly Kimberly's words stopped and in exchange a scream of「Ouchh-」was raised.

Finally everyone noticed with that scream, the figure of Kousuke behind Kimberly with his eyes getting teary, while his hand was carrying a glittery object that he was holding before anyone noticed.

「I don't know the circumstances of you all? I am an outsider? That's why, I was thinking to let these two escape without harming both sides with my all, yet? For some reason I am got normally leave behind? No, it's not like I'm bothered though. I am used to it. I am not bothered at all. I'm totally fine. But, because I think that communication is important, I say that ignoring someone is no good, yep.」

「Mr, Mr. K?」

「tsu, calm down Mr. K. We doesn't mean to make light of——」

Somehow feeling the atmosphere that seemed to be dangerous, Vanessa spoke with halted words while Kimberly was spinning his words with cold sweat trickling from his body. The gaze of these two was looking at the same direction with Emily and the armed me, all their attentions were poured at the thing that was being carried by Kousuke while he was trembling all over as though to display the emotion inside his heart.

Amidst the running nervousness, the lips of Kousuke who finally obtained everyone's attention burst out in a smile looking just a smidgen happy. Seeing that, Kimberly and others showed a faint relieved express——

「And so, eat this-! The insane lethal weapon that produced fire ash——Ashtray Assault!」

「What do you mean 'and so', wai-, wait a-——goheeh!?」

The sparkling object——the excessively heavy glass ashtray that for some reason was put inside the room even though this was a worn out hotel, it was swung down by Kousuke whose expression was still smiling broadly toward Kimberly's head.

gochin- Such painful sound echoed, at the same time stars floated in front of Kimberly's eyes. Like that Kimberly powerlessly slumped down hard to the floor powerlessly. Seeing how the white of his eyes were fully exposed, it seemed that everyone's beloved lethal weapon of Tuesday had properly accomplished its role. (TN: The Tuesday is some kind of word play I think. Tuesday in Japan is written with the kanji of fire, maybe that's why it was related with ashtray here.)

The gazes of the armed men were lured toward Kimberly, right after that, they re-aimed their gun nuzzle with the intention of turning the intruder who had lost his shield into swiss cheese for sure this time.

But, a small object lightly danced at the height of their gaze.

「You two-, we are running away now!」

The moment Kousuke yelled that, the object midair exploded with a flash. Intense flash that burned the retina trampled the inside of the room. Yes, that was the brightness of flash hand grenade. That thing which Kousuke

nonchalantly picked up was tossed at the same time when he gave a blow to Kimberly.

The armed men screamed「Not again-」while covering their eyes, during that time *goin-* a painful sounding sound and「buberah」a short scream became audible once more. Kousuke's Tuesday lethal weapon sent the men who were nearby Emily flying.

「Mr. K! Take Doctor Grant-」

「Yes yes, I know. Also, don't call me Mr. K.」

「Fuwah, wh, who!? Mr. K!?」

「……」

While light was trampling the room's inside, it seemed Emily was flinching from having her eyesight stolen because her eyes got done in by the flashbang that was thrown without any advance arrangement at this second time, so she made her body as small as possible by squatting with both her hands holding her head. Somehow it was a defensive posture that made anyone looking at her felt a charisma without reason.

Kousuke cursed while carrying her on his shoulder. The truth was he yelled at them with a plan of having the two protect their eyes from the flash just like they had done the first time, using that opening he would quickly mask their whereabouts, but it seemed that his plan couldn't proceed that well.

Vanessa also had her eyesight robbed, but it appeared that she had memorized the position of all the people inside the room and their distances from her accurately using the measurement of the number of her steps, that she was able to quickly move even while having her eyesight crushed, it was just as to be expected from her.

The armed men, even while being unable to see they immediately aimed their gun toward the direction of the voice, but there would be no meaning if they didn't capture Emily alive. Therefore they could only move about in confusion without pulling their trigger. Seeing how they were unable to immediately chase these two to this room from upper floor like Kimberly, and how their eyesight was easily crushed for the second time like this, it appeared that they weren't at

the level where they could introduce themselves as agent.

「To outside. There is a car at the street one block from here.」

「Roger. Or rather, you can run really well huh. Aren't you still unable to see?」

「E, excuse me, M, Mr. K-. Can you, stop your shoulder-, from bumping my stomaaach!? M, mhy schomach is-, heguh」

「I can see a little, and I have grasped the approximate number of step. Please guide me in the case I make a mistake.」

「Got it.」

「Tha, that, that's why-, my schomach is-, heguu. Before, I missed, going to toileeet-. I'm in a bad situation hereee」

It seemed that Emily's stomach was in a pinch, but in the case they encountered enemy, Vanessa who wasn't carrying gun couldn't really be counted as battle strength nor did Kousuke wanted to, so there was a need for him to keep one of his hands empty. And so, he couldn't carry Emily on his back when she could slip off anytime or carrying her in his arms which would make both his hands full.

That was why, even though Emily who were attacked just on the verge of her going to toilet now had her bladder screaming, there was no way he could listen to her request. In no way at all that because his words were ignored or Emily brought up the subject of him at the café this afternoon with miraculous timing that he was doing this for a meager revenge. If he said it was not then it was not.

「Muh, just as I thought there are some more. Eat this-, sure kill, Tuesday's unpredictable attaaack!」

While Emily-chan was in the middle of a desperate battle which concerned the protection of her dignity, Kousuke threw the lethal weapon of Tuesday toward the armed man that appeared from the door that connected to the stair. The Tues——ashtray that soared while displaying splendid rotation like a boomerang splendidly made a clean hit at the nose of the man who had just peeked out his face.

docha- The ashtray fell beside the man who was collapsing in a heat with blood

spurting out grandly from his nose. The ashtray was already dyed red from absorbing the blood of several people. It was worrying whether that would cause it to become like a cursed katana or rather a cursed ashtray.

Vanessa casually stepped on the crotch of the collapsed man and approached the stair. For an instant Kousuke thought of giving a warning toward the woman whose eyesight was declining, but Vanessa was descending down the stair with lightness that made him doubted whether she was really being unable to see.

「M, Mr. K? I vaguely gussed it. I'm begging you here please let me do——」

「I'm not Mr. K.」

「Do, don't! The stair is no good I told youuu! I beg younyaaAAAAAAAAA-」

Kousuke ran down the stairs by skipping steps. That movement was truly nimble, chasing Vanessa from behind gallantly as though he was performing dance steps. It must be remembered that he was rushing like this only to match Vanessa's pace, he had no ulterior motive, not in the least.

Even though hearing Emily-chan's sorrowful voice like「Stoooop-~」, or「Fo, forgive me alreadyyyy~」, or「My schomach, stop tapping thereeee~」, or「It's comiiiing, it's coming alreadyyyyy-」, or「Mr. Kee, I'll kill you after thiiiiiis」, or「Ah, that's a lie, I'm not seriouuuss! I'm sorryyyyy-」caused his heart to flutter for a bit, but he had no ulterior motive at all and that was that!

「Doctor Grant, please lower your voice a little. Perhaps there is still enemy around.」

「Tha, that's what you are saying, in this kind of situation!?」

「It's okay. The situation is like this so……there is nothing to be ashamed of at all.」

「Right now, I understand! I have, no ally at all hereeee~~~」

Emily-chan's sorrowful voice knew no end. This was concerning the dignity of a girl. Although right now was an emergency situation, but in a sense this was a critical moment for the inexperienced Emily.

As expected, even for Kousuke it would be unbearable if Emily really did that while she was still on his shoulder, so he was thinking of changing the posture

into carrying her under his arm soon. Kousuke was very much a normal person. Although Emily was a beautiful girl, he didn't happen to have a fetish of feeling happy if she was *peep*-ing on him at all.

However, regardless of Kousuke having ulterior motive or not, that decision of his seemed to be just a bit late.

「Hm? Wait a second lab coat miss? Can you release me? I'll carry you under my arm now okay.」

「I, impossible……if I move……it will come out.」

「Wait wait wait, there is no shaking anymore right? I'm properly descending the stair softly here.」

「Impossible……I, I'm sorry, father, mother……Emily is……a bad daughter.」

Emily was clinging on Kousuke tiiiiiightly while staying unmoving without even a twitch. Seeing from Kousuke's view point, her eyes were empty, while her lips were making a dry smile.

Emily who was suddenly whispering repentance to her parents caused Kousuke to make a flustered expression that said「Shit, I overdid it!?」. He had even used his skill so that no vibration was transmitted to Emily in the middle, but it seemed that Emily had been comparatively in her limit from the beginning.

「Do, do your best lab coat miss! Don't give up-, if you give up, that will be the end of your dignity!」

「……(shiver shiver)」

「You cannot even speak anymore!? Wait the person in suits over there! This child is seriously at her limit here! Stop for a bit! Let's stop at the corner over——」

「There is no time for that. Mr. K. If you are a man, then please shut up and accept it like one.」

「You, what are you saying!? Eei, lab coat miss! I'll put you down right now so——」

「——a」

「Wai——」

Escape drama that happened late at night in a worn-out hotel.

Kousuke and others who splendidly escaped was pursued by Kimberly and others who regained their consciousness.

……while following the water trail that stood out with its pungent smell.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Now then, this is quiz about heroine attribute from previously, you already understood the correct answer right?

The correct answer is,

Blonde side-tail + Lab coat girl + unyielding cat eyes + peeing + charisma guard (however defense power is zero) (TN: Search カリスマガード at google to look at the image. The term came from a fighting game of Touhou where the guard pose of Remilia is called as charisma guard.)

Like that. How was it? Was it just as you imagined?

I'll be happy if you readers have fun.

Now then, a bit of report, the third volume was released.

This too is thanks to the people who kindly picked up the book (probably it's especially with the power of the reader from Narou-san).

'The extra story is terrible (lol)', that is something that I and others are recognizing, but if you readers can have fun with it then it will make me happy.

Please take care of me from here on too.

The next update is planned at 6 P.M Saturday too.

Arifureta Chapter 201

Arifureta Extra Compilation – From Abyssgate Lord of The World

You, Well Then Ota—

Part 1

「I'll kill you, Mr. K, kill. What virtuoso hit man. Don't make light of researcher. I'll absolutely, kill you dead.」

With only the occasional lamp in the street and the light of the car coming from opposite lane as the source of light, from the back seat of the quiet car interior, words that sounded like curse were spun in whispers.

Vanessa who was driving was sending her glances at the back mirror repeatedly, looking alternately at the figure of Emily who made herself tiny at the back seat by holding her knees together, her eyes looking like dead fish with her mouth continuously spouting out resentment and bitterness, and the figure of Kousuke beside Emily, drenched in cold sweat while taking as much distance as possible from her.

Seeing at Kousuke's coat that was being placed at his feet, and the window that was opened regardless of the cold air flowing into the car, as though to disperse some smell from inside the car, it could be understood that the reason of this situation should be rather left unsaid.

The gaze of Kousuke and Vanessa met through the back mirror. Kousuke was shaking his head while trembling with teary eyes, his gaze was directed toward Vanessa as though seeking help.

Vanessa quietly averted her gaze. *gon-* From behind there was a sound echoing that sounded like head knocked into the glass window.

(……Nevertheless, Mr. K. He is, really……a mysterious person isn't he.)

While feeling the gaze from the back seat that was sending SOS signal stabbing on her cheek, Vanessa talked to herself like that inside her heart.

——Mr. K

He was a hit man with unknown history and appearance that appeared since around two years ago, assassinating big shots with strict security one after another. It seemed that he wasn't attached to any organization, if someone made a request to him using the specified method, then he would carried out any kind of murder no matter how difficult it was depending on the amount of the reward.

Even the security bureau that Vanessa belonged to put him in a blacklist as a dangerous person since around one year ago. His skill in killing was without question, but in addition even when intelligence agency of state investigated him the information grasped was always dummy information, full-scale investigation had been started since half a year ago and it was still continuing until now, but his true identity still hadn't come to light. It was enough to comprehend how dangerous this person was just from that fact.

However, while Mr. K was in possession of that much skill, even when his description was analyzed and compared to all the people registered in the existing blacklist, but there was not even a single person who could be thought of as him there, the intelligence department was now putting their attention to Mr. K, considering him to be a wholly big rookie.

By the way, the national security bureau possessed the right to investigate and the right to arrest in wide area regarding serious crime that concerned with the state's security, furthermore the national intelligence department which was an agency that carried out things like the protection of important person was literally a secret service. Each department was further divided into subdivision, but let's omit it for now.

For a time, Vanessa entered an investigation team that investigated a assassination case that was caused by this Mr. K. The modus operandi of the murder was exceedingly simple and trace of him playing around in his work was nonexistent, two bullets to vitals, killing the target with accurate shot. He left no message that seemed like a killer who take delight in murder or made any

declaration of his crime. And then, after he accepted a request and agreed to it, no matter how difficult it was, or even when the contract detail was mistaken and the difficulty level jumped up, he would never stop until he succeeded, his professional policy could be seen from there.

Mr. K was undoubtedly an atrocious killer. However, no matter how much of a coldhearted and inhuman person he was, he was a professional who would comply only to his contract no matter what happened.

She was betrayed by Kimberly, her comrades were annihilated, before she was able to link up with the reinforcement from headquarter, the continuous attacks without pause from enemy found her and she was forced to flee, unable to break out from the isolated and helpless situation. In order to protect Emily in such situation, there was a need to spent trump card even just by one more.

Permitting murder in the process of guarding——it was a choice that Vanessa made with bitterness. When this case was over, a disciplinary measure would surely wait for her.

In the first place she didn't understand whether her request would reach Mr. K, or even if it reached him would he accept it and was he within the range where he would be able to link up with them immediately, and would he who was hiding his true identity respond to the contract, by that point of time this choice of hers was already a gambling.

After all, the content of her request was a guard mission. Naturally in such mission the protector had to be nearby the protection target, and that mean that Mr. K would inevitably need to expose his true identity. Mr. K was also analyzed to be an expert in disguise, but it was still a risk nevertheless for him to expose himself in the open.

To say nothing of how if Mr. K investigated for a little, then for him who was strong in information war he would surely notice that the client was a person related with government right away.

Therefore, Vanessa made contact under the faint hope of luring Mr. K somehow with reward amount, but unexpectedly the reply from Mr. K was "I accept". Vanessa was suspicious, but Mr. K demanded large amount of money and explained that his protection would be done fundamentally while hiding, so

Vanessa accepted it for the time being and tied a contract with him.

(Yet despite so, he exposed his figure in that place. I never even imagined that he is Japanese in the age that can still be called as teenager though……. Is he in disguise? Still, I cannot spot any disguise even from this range, that face only look like natural face……. If that is his natural face, then, just what in the world is he thinking about?)

It was difficult to guard someone indoor from distance. There was no way someone could protect someone indoor from outdoor using sniping method and the like. Mr. K should have understood that from the start. That was why, Vanessa thought that maybe she was just deceived by Mr. K and made the preparation and advance arrangement with Emily about using flashbang and jumped to the room downstair.

Inside her heart she was thinking that her profiling of Mr. K was mistaken, it was possible that he was a devilish homicide who was just greedy for money. Vanessa didn't discard the possibility that Mr. K might bare his fang to them.

(Even now, looking from his personality there is the possibility that he is in disguise……)

When Vanessa glanced once more at the back mirror, Kousuke's expression was visibly getting brighter in a flash, as though it was saying「Finally you look here!」. And then, he was sending eye contact at Vanessa while sending brief glances at Emily.

……A virtuoso hit man who was greatly perplexed against a single girl and looking for help desperately.

(I don't understand……)

From the back seat a small voice of「Oy you, just now, your eyes met me right? Why are you averting your eyes!」was calling at her. The Mr. K that she had imagined before, and the figure of teenager Japanese who was whispering「Heey, wait-. Don't ignore me. ……Don't tell me, even though we are riding the same car but I'm already out of your awareness……?」with teary eyes, those two images couldn't be connected inside Vanessa no matter who she pondered about it.

「Excuse me, Mr. K.」

「! I'm not Mr. K but, what?」

Seeing Kousuke who leaned his body forward looking a bit happy when he was addressed, Vanessa once again made the request that she had already made and rejected just now.

「My apologize but, can I ask you to replace me driving the car? As expected, it has become a bit hard for me.」

「Eh? No, I told you already just now, but I cannot drive, I have never even drive until now. I haven't taken my driving license yet. Or rather, even if I have taken license at Japan, is it okay for me to drive car at foreign country?」

「……You really, have never drive a car before?」

「Never. I have never even drive a scooter. That's why it's impossible. Sorry to make you drive while injured but……」

「No, it's not like there is any problem with my consciousness, and I also able to stop the bleeding.」

After they escaped from the worn-out hotel, Vanessa and others arrived until their car. At that time, Vanessa was injured, although it wasn't a big problem but in preparation of pursuer she asked Kousuke to drive, but at that time he refused with the same reason like now.

At first Vanessa thought that he was joking or he was keeping himself free in case of battle, but when she saw Kousuke who was frowning even now looking apologetic, she came to think that it was the truth that he really couldn't drive.

Mr. K who carried out assassination of important people not just at Britain, but at all over the world, there was no way he was unable to drive car but……

(Or rather, why is he still obstinately denying that he is Mr. K even in this situation……. By some chance, is he thinking that he can hide his true identity like that? No no, no way that's true……)

Inside Vanessa, Mr. K was increasingly turning into a stupid person.

For just a little, a thinking that said「Perhaps, he is really not Mr. K?」just like Kousuke told her floated inside her mind, but that terrific concealment to the degree that no one noticed him, his experienced aura that didn't flinch even

when gun was pointed at him, and then his skill that enable them to escape without firing a single shot but instead using only the hotel's ashtray……no matter how she looked, it was unthinkable that this person could possibly be "ordinary person".

Therefore, inside Vanessa, her impressions of Kousuke couldn't mesh at all into a complete picture and her evaluation of him was going toward the direction of "mysterious" or "bizarre".

There was no way for Vanessa to think even in her wildest imagination that the concealment ability was his sorrowful ability that he possessed from birth or that there was person close to him that fired railgun so he was used to gun. Also, it wasn't that Kousuke didn't fire gun, but her simply didn't have gun and he couldn't fire gun or anything, as expected Vanessa wouldn't even think of such possibility……

Mr. K was a hit man. Kousuke was certainly a virtuoso hit man, but he wasn't Mr. K. He was unable to do feat that could be done ordinarily by *earth's* hit man. But, he had plenty of experience if it was killing and carnage.

Like this, Vanessa's impression toward Kousuke's character spurred her confusion.

「He, hey, this topic has been left alone until now but, this girl, what to do with her? It looks like, her grudge to me has already reached a level that can only be considered as curse here. Even though her eyes are dead, it looks like she is starting to make a faint smile here. Ah, just now, she is chuckling『kekeke』you hear that!? That is absolutely a bad news somehow!」

Kousuke glanced at Emily with convulsing expression and shivering body. Vanessa looked at the figure of Emily who even now looked like she could fall into the dark side anytime, so she put aside her discomfort that she felt toward Kousuke for the time being and she finally talked to Emily.

「Doctor Grant. Please cheer up. I told you already at that time, the situation was as it was. It's not something to be ashamed for.」

「……Vanessa.」

Inside Emily's empty eyes, a smidgen of light was lit and she lifted her face.

Vanessa whose gaze met Emily through the back mirror, her expressionless face crumbled a little and her eyes loosened up, she then further formed words of consolation to her.

「Besides, didn't you also pee when you met me? At this late hour——」

「Uwaaaaaaaan-, I'm just a peeing girl after allllllll」

Correction, she formed words of finishing blow. Kousuke put a retort「What are you doing adding blow like that!?」. Emily buried her face into her knees once more and this time she was holding her head with both her hands while turning even smaller than before.

The chaos at the back seat was making Vanessa's expression to become somewhat flustered and she did her best to recover the situation somehow.

「It, it's fine you know, Doctor Grant. If I and Mr. K stay silent, then nobody will know. Something not known is the same like it doesn't exist.」

It was a really forceful line of argument. It gently reached Emily's stormy heart like a refreshing breeze. Although, maybe that reasoning would work if it was just Vanessa, but as expected, if it was known by someone of different gender, and in addition it was a different gender whose age was close with her, the damage to her mind was just that great. She couldn't be convinced that simply.

「Bu, but……」

Emily's gaze glanced repeatedly at Kousuke. But, as though to say that she had already calculated that factor too, this Vanessa spoke comforting words to Emily with an expression that could be seen as self-satisfied look this time.

「Doctor Grant. Please rest assured. Mr. K is Japanese.」

「A, and?」

「At Japan, there is this kind of phrase. ——"Rather that is a reward".」

「Wha. what is the meaning of that?」

Kousuke's pleading words of「I told you already, I'm not Mr. K. I'm Kousuke」were beautifully ignored like a passing air, Emily was tilting her head at Vanessa's continuing words. And then, Kousuke who guessed the meaning of Vanessa's words tried to held her back with「Wait a secoooond!」but……

「It means, if it is done by beautiful girl, then whatever it is will bring joy, a side benefit. Yes, if the other party is a beautiful girl, then even if they get their crotch stepped on, even if they get punched in the face, even if they are abused with harsh words, and then, even if they are peed on! Rather that will mean as reward for them!」

「Wha wha wha wha wha, what did you saaaay!?」

The world that was unknown from the genius girl Emily Grant. Just how deep the karma of Japanese. Shudder ran through Emily's expression. Kousuke yelled「Stoooop! Don't lump together all Japanese into one category!」, but such thing was beautifully ignored and Vanessa's words continued.

「Doctor Grant. You are a beautiful girl. And then, Mr. K is Japanese. In other words, Mr. K who was peed on by Doctor Grant is dancing madly with joy inside his heart!」

Truly, a perfect logic. There was no chink on it! Vanessa unusually snorted *mofufun-* proudly and concluded her consolation words.

「Therefore, Doctor Grant. Even though you had grandly peed while being carried by Mr. K, even though because of that he became completely drenched, for him that was an unanticipated reward. He owe you one. If you use that as pretext and tell him to keep his silence, he will surely agree to it happily. No, rather he will even be happy with that comma——」

「You shut up alreadyyy! Or rather, why do you know about that kind of subcultre——」

「Thi thi thi thi this, pervert-. How can you be happy having m, my, pe, pee——something like that getting on you! Just what kind of nerve you have there!」

Kousuke cut off Vanessa's words, but immediately after, Emily whose face was bright red grasped Kousuke's collar and she began shook him back and forth, causing Kousuke to groan「gueh」and his words got caught up in his throat. Emily was yelling「Forget it! Forgeeet it! Just forget it alreadyy!!」while rocking Kousuke desperately.

It seemed that after catching a glimpse of the abnormal world, Emily's mental

state that was already at the limit finally entered half-deranged state. The back of Kousuke's head was banged *gon-gon-* on the door, but Emily didn't show any sign of noticing that.

Furthermore,

「……Doctor Grant.」

「What!」

「It's not like I don't understand of your attempt to send Mr. K's memory flying but……」

「That's why what!」

「No, if you take mounting position like htat……Doctor Grant, you haven't even taken off your stocking right now, so Mr. K's clothes, it's now soaked even further by Doctor Grant's "that", I think.」

「!?」

「Mr. K, won't he become even happier?」

「You, it seems you want to frame me as pervert to the end huh-. Bring it on then, if you are picking a fight then I'll take you on! Come outside! I'll beat you up black and blue!」

Emily who jumped in panic got the back of her head hitting the door due to her overenthusiasm, she was holding her head while writhing. By doing that her skirt got flipped up, the black stocking enveloping her slender legs was exposed, its color was strangely changed, but it was fortunate that Kousuke's mind was now like a warrior who just had met his bitter enemy and was directed to Vanessa so he didn't notice.

Although, just as Vanessa warned, "that" was firmly soaked into Kousuke's trousers……

The groaning voice of Emily who felt pain at the back of her head and her shame entering mach speed due to her that soaking other once more, and the angry yell of Kousuke toward Vanessa, those caused Vanessa to tilt her head wondering「Just what in the world is he getting angry about?」……

Inside the fleeing car deep at night, it was the continuation of the time at the

worn-out hotel——a chaos.

Part 2

It was a motel along the highway, with dazzling billboard lighted by showy and stale neon. Inside one of the room there, there were the figures of Vanessa whose upper body was only in underwear, and Kousuke right beside her with his face strangely blushing.

「Nn-」

「Oops, sorry. Does it hurt?」

「No, there is no problem. Rather than that……you are skilled.」

「Well, it's just this much. I have a lot of chance to practice.」

「Indeed, your movement seem experienced.」

It wasn't like the two of them were doing anything indecent. After they entered the motel and calmed down for the moment, Kousuke treated Vanessa's flank with the emergency kit that Kousuke happened to have.

In the first place, he was taught first-aid treatment to a certain degree at Tortus (they were taught that in the case that they ran out of magic power and couldn't use healing magic), and after returning to earth he also learned by self-education and going around the medical treatment spot in battlefield, so Kousuke's first-aid skill was high. His return from his personal trip of going around battlefield's medical treatment spot was also bearing fruit.

He spread haemostatic agent, pressed a clean gauze and wrapped bandage around. During that time he also stimulated her healing just a little with a method that didn't exist in this world

「Yosh, something like this I guess. It missed your vitals, and the important vein is also uninjured. The bullet, you treated that yourself huh. I guess you will be fine because your first aid in the beginning was done properly. But, there is the risk of infection, and it's not a light wound by any mean. You need to receive medical treatment soon.」

「I understand. However, right now is not the time to say that. Although you have come for us, it can be said that we are still in an isolated and helpless situation……at the very least until the reinforcement can take over the protection of Doctor Grant, there is no way I can rest.」

「That's, well, perhaps that's so.」

Vanessa wore her shirt while showing a grave expression, however, next she showed a wry smile while turning her gaze to Kousuke.

「Having said that, I don't think that I can even operate at my original 50%, so from here on, it seems that Mr. K, you will be considerably burdened.」

「……No, look here, I've said this many times but, I'm not Mr. K. I'm Kousuke. I'm a student at Japan. In this kind of situation, isn't it better to contact that real Mr. K one more time——」

Kousuke who didn't admit that he was Mr. K no matter what caused Vanessa to think of speaking the doubt that she was harboring. Her penetrating gaze was attempting to grope around for Mr. K's true intention.

But, before she could start, the *shaaaa* water sound that Kousuke tried to ignore to the best of his ability stopped at the same time with the *kyu-kyu-* sound of handle turned. Kousuke twitched in reaction and he suddenly became quiet. For some reason his expression was turning strangely nervous but……that couldn't be helped. Because, he was a boy.

Like that, a vivid rustling sound from the other side of the thin glass door slightly leaked out and became audible……

「……What's the matter you two, staying silent like that?」

From the door that was only half-opened, only half of Emily's face peeked out dubiously. Her eyes were containing a clear wariness. Especially toward Kousuke.

Kousuke settled the figure of Emily who had just finished taking a shower only for a moment in his eyesight, then he quickly averted his face to the side. The sight was relatively brutal for him.

Emily was undoubtedly a beautiful girl. Such girl was showing an appearance that was only wearing blouse and short skirt with her damp hair let down. Two

buttons around her chest were unbuttoned and her beautiful nape was exposed. Her black stocking was dirty so naturally she didn't wear it. In other words, the bare slender and supple legs of Emily were being exposed with nothing to spare.

「Doctor Grant, it's nothing. Right now I have just received treatment.」

「I see. Vanessa, are you okay? You were shot you know? Are you really okay?」

「Yes, perhaps it should be called a small mercy. I'm still not feeling at my limit currently. It's not a wound that can threaten my life.」

Emily rushed at Vanessa still barefooted, she climbed on the bed while looking worriedly at Vanessa's wound.

At that time, Kousuke's gaze that was similarly returning to Vanessa sharply noticed. The skirt of Emily who was on all fours peering at Vanessa's flank. The light bulb of the room had warm color type so the room was dim, "that part" became dark and couldn't be seen but……

(Oy wait, the dirty stocking was thrown away but, then, the dirty underwear……what happened to it?)

Electricity ran through Kousuke's muscle. No way, no way……

「You are……not wearing it?」

「!?」

Emily pressed down on her skirt with a force that seemed like it could make *hyuba-* sound while taking a girl sitting posture. Her face was dyed bright red, her almond-shaped eyes glared up with shame and rage.

「Ah, no, just now……」

「I can't help it! It's still not dry right now!」

「Ah, yes.」

「Mr. K, as expected, just now is too lacking in delicacy.」

「Yes, I'm ashamed.」

The person who she had just grandly peed on now pointed out her no-panty state, however, for the moment it was someone who had saved them so she also couldn't frankly throw her anger at him, the peeing no-panty Emily-chan crawled

into the bed and turned small while holding her head.

As expected, Kousuke was also aware that he had made a verbal slip, so he apologized at Emily who was trembling *purupuru* beneath the blanket while leaking out his impression「This girl, he is a girl that often turn small huh」. Of course that one was said inside his heart.

「I want to talk about what we will do from now on, is it fine?」

Seeing Emily who heard Kousuke's apology and peeked out her face from inside the blanket like a cat with its wariness in full alert, Vanessa opened her mouth with serious expression.

In contrast with the nodding Emily, Kousuke lifted up his hand to hold them for a bit.

「Before that, can you teach me something first? Can't you contact people who can help you two right away? Since we arrived her I saw no sign of Vanessa-san contacting anyone……I guessed it somehow but, Vanessa-san, you are a member of state organization right? Why don't you report and request reinforcement from your organization?」

That was the major premise needed to let their talk progress. Kousuke saved the two of them was because Vanessa was almost killed and also because Emily seek help. As expected, Kousuke couldn't draw a line from other people to the degree that he could pretend not to see someone else getting killed in front of his eyes.

But, at the same time he also couldn't continue helping Emily and Vanessa and judged Kimberly and his group as evil without grasping the situation. He chose to flee with these two at that scene, but if Vanessa contacted her comrade and arranged a force that could oppose Kimberly and others, Kousuke planned to vanish right away then.

For that reason, before he heard about the detail of the circumstance, he asked Vanessa to quickly contact her comrade but……

「Doctor Grant, I will talk about that matter——about【Berserk】. Is it fine?」

「……Yes. In any case, we have passed the stage where it can be hidden. I don't mind.」

「Oi you. What are you doing ignoring me so naturally like that. Just quickly contact your comrade already.」

Vanessa asked Emily(ignored Kousuke) with a serious air, Emily looked down while agreeing(ignoring Kousuke) with a voice that was vanishing down. Her expression was shaded with dark shadow that was darker than the shadow created by the room's coarse light bulb. Kousuke's shadow was getting thinner.

Kousuke who until now only saw the figure of Emily flustered, or shaking all over, or snapping in anger was feeling concerned that such girl was covered with this much deep shadow, even so he demanded explanation to Vanessa「Heey, why aren't you contacting your comrade? Heey, come on tell mee-」.

「The start of this matter, is the medicine that is the byproduct created from the course of Doctor Grant's research——【Berserk】getting out to the outside.」

「I cannot hear-. I cannot hear anything! Something like that medicine with naming that sound chuuni, I don't know any——」

「【Berserk】——it is the word root of berserker, the powerful warrior of god that rampaged in the battlefield without differentiating enemy or ally. It's unknown who named it with that word, but it's a naming that really to the point. After all,【Berserk】is the worst medicine with the effect of "Berserkerification" just like the meaning of that name, where the victim cannot return into normal human for the second time.」

「……」

Beside Emily who was holding her knees with dark expression, Kousuke was also sitting down with the same posture while blocking her ears and shaking his head in refusal. The sound of the talking Vanessa was piercing into the ears of such Kousuke, as though the sounds was forcefully being screwed in,

「Doctor Grant is being targeted by the people who is pursuing that knowledge. This is a serious incident that concerned with the country's safety, so, for her protection, we, the national security bureau moved but……Kimberly's betrayal annihilated the whole team except me.」

Perhaps thinking of her comrade, Vanessa slightly narrowed her eyes while adding more words.

「At first, I thought that it was only Kimberly's betrayal but……thinking back now, I couldn't link up with the reinforcement so unnaturally. That is also the reason that I contracted you in the preparation of the worst case……anyway, this situation is enough to make me think of "possibility" toward the headquarter. Until I can be clear about this matter, I cannot make contact with headquarter that easily.」

「Aa, yes. You more or less answer my question. But, there were a lot of unnecessary things included there……」

Kousuke who was turning over the content of what he head inside his head while hanging his head down crestfallenly, and then he slowly looked up to the ceiling.

Ahead of his gaze was the ceiling that was blotted with stain at various spots, and the electric light bulb that was earnestly driving off the night's darkness. The deep black stains that represented ill will, and the night's darkness that was trying to swallow the light of hope……it was as though those things were representing the current situation of Emily and Vanessa.

He accidentally came to this country due to demon king-sama's instruction to him, he accidentally encountered these two at the café that he stopped by at, he accidentally needed to wait for airplane schedule, and he accidentally entered the hotel where these two were at.

What a prank of fate.

Even though he was burdened with the unpleasant title of man with world's thinnest shadow, the world discovered him only at this kind of time.

Even so,

「It's already too late by the point of time I got summoned to another world huh.」

Yes, for the demon king party who survived that rigorous world, getting involved with this kind of case was certainly, something too late.

「? Mr. K?」

「What's the matter?」

Vanessa and Emily tilted their head, unable to understand the meaning of Kousuke's whisper.

Shaking his head saying「It's nothing」while smiling wryly to those two, thinking that it was hard for his conscience to just run away from this matter without hearing their story, for the time being Kousuke decided to lend his ear to these two's explanation.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Above a bookshelves fully loaded with light novel (area fill type), coffee splashed……

The light novels dyed black. Shirakome's heart is also dyed black.

The world, is always filled with things that shouldn't be like so……

The march of self-destruction, will also be at 6 z Saturday too. Perhaps, surely, if I revived.

Arifureta Chapter 202

Arifureta Extra Compilation – From Abyssgate Lord of The World

Emily Grant’s Recollection

AN: This is exposition chapter that reminisce of what happened before the prologue’s scene.

Part 1

「Why……why is that……how……」

While whispering under her breath, Emily Grant was walking on the path that was leading to the research building of the university with fast steps that raised loud clopping sound. Her blue eyes were swimming around without composure due to her mind that was thinking in hectic pace, as though to display the impatience and irritation inside her heart, her mouth was busily biting on the nail of her thumb repeatedly.

——Emily Grant

A girl with blonde hair tied into a side tail and almond shaped eyes like a cat, and then white lab coat as her trademark. A genius that in her eleven years of age managed to enroll into Percival University which have prominent research facility of medicine even in this Britain, she was a first class researcher that had already published several thesis which were highly evaluated.

When she enrolled at first, because of her age and her examination result that was standing out, she received a lot of attention, not a little jealousy, and treated like a tumor. Therefore, the girl who was still young laid out defensive wall using bluff and stubbornness and composed expression, making a habit of not letting what inside her heart came out onto her expression.

Because she was a girl like that, that her current situation where she had no leeway to hide the agitation and impatience inside her heart was something unusual, it caused several students that could be seen scattered inside the campus to blink in surprise.

The surrounding students sent Emily puzzled or curious gaze, however Emily didn’t notice at all seeing how immersed she was inside her mind. But her who was like that suddenly returned to her senses due to the melody that abruptly echoed from her small feminine pouch.

Emily who stopped still without even getting bothered to her shaking side tail searched for her pouch a little flustered and took out the smartphone that was her aim.

「Ye, yes, this is Emily. Is this, teacher?」

『Aa, it's me Emily. Where are you now? Are you still in your place? Have you seen the news this morning?』

Teacher——Professor Reginald Down who was normally giving off atmosphere of a good natured old man in contrast with his age that was at his fifty, was now asking question rapidly with voice that was a mix of impatience and bewilderment that was similar with Emily until just now.

Professor Down was a professor in this Percival University, and the person in charge of the laboratory Emily belonged to. He had a habitual "professor" appearance with short black hair that had white hair mixed among it, a body that was slightly widening to the side, thick glasses, and tobacco pipe. In fact, if someone merely spoke "professor" in this Percival University, most students would be reminded of Professor Down.

His appearance that was "really" like professor was also the cause, but more than that it was because he was someone that was very excellent as an educator. It wasn't like Professor Down himself had great achievement, but many of his pupils were first class researcher who made great contribution to society, and everyone of them spoke unanimously. That "Professor Reginald Down is exactly their teacher they were indebted with".

Even though he didn't leave behind particular result in scientific society, seeing from his professor status, the fact that he was given a laboratory, how all other professors would take off their hat to him at the university's faculty meeting, it was clear just how high his ability as an educator.

「No, I will arrive soon at the lab. What about teacher?」

『I too will be at the lab soon. From your voice, it seems you have seen the news then.』

「Yes, I saw it together with Hendricks-senpai and Lizzie-senpai. Both of them are contacting all the other senpai. I left the home ahead of them.」

『I see……. Then, everyone will come to the lab won't they?』

「Yes, after meeting Rod-senpai and others, Hendricks-senpai and the rest will also head toward the lab right away.」

『Got it. Then, let's talk in detail at the lab. ……Emily, sorry. Surely you are really anxious right now. Although I had conference, but I'm sorry that I didn't return home yesterday.』

Professor Down's caring words that seemed like it came right from his heart almost caused Emily's gaze to burst into tear for a moment.

Emily's home was really far from this university. In order to make her dream came true, she departed away from her parents, alone in the age of eleven years old, and then she entered dormitory at the same time with her enrollment to the university.

At first, Emily who received inquisitive gaze, thoughtless whisper, jealousy, and treated like a tumor, she put up bluff and obstinacy「I came here to study! I'm-, totally fine-」, but such bluff of a little girl who felt loneliness from being distanced from family, and her heart exhausted from solitude every day of just coming and going between university and dormitory, it couldn't be sustained for long.

Because she had intellect that towered above the rest, to a certain degree she was used to excessive expectation and special treatment from the surrounding. So that her heart wouldn't be warped due to such environment, both her parents education policy that endeavored so Emily could live a life that wasn't any different from normal children, and then their deep love raised Emily to have the same sensitivity with normal girl.

Because of that, Emily's heart that was only being supported by the letter from her parents that would surely reach her once a week with not only writing, but also with pocket money……was close to the limit.

Such scream of a young heart, suddenly stopped in a certain day.

——If you like, how about doing homestay in my house?

The one who called at her with that offer was Professor Down. As someone who had the reputation as Percival University's greatest educator, he had a

relatively large residence located in a quiet residential area as his house. Professor Down whose wife died early due to sickness with no child of his own often explained with a wry smile that it was lonely to live in a spacious house with himself alone, so he offered homestay to students with circumstances and really had no financial surplus.

It just happened that there was a vacant room, and at the time a young researcher in the making who attended his lecture looked like she was going to be crushed anytime, Professor Down who couldn't bear to see that spoke such offer and held out his hand toward Emily.

There were a lot of elder brother and sisters at the house. Rather than calling it a homestay, they were mostly like a family. They ate meal together, they studied together, and they made memory as university student together.

Those words of Professor Down was an irreplaceable treasure for Emily.

『Emily? What's the matter? Are you okay?』

「……I'm fine teacher. Thanks you very much.」

Four years since her homestay began. As always, even now in this situation he racked his brain for her sake as though she was his own daughter. For Emily, he was like one more father. To the degree that her real father Carl Grant was plainly feeling vexed「My father role is stolen-」.

She felt her heart that was disarrayed by the shocking news that she saw this morning with Hendricks and Lizzie, was slowly calming down.

Emily said that she was okay one more time to Professor Down who was worried for her and cut the phone, then she started walking toward the laboratory, this time with a firm steps.

Part 2

A large facility located inside Percival University——Research facility building C. Inside one of the room there, an oppressive atmosphere was hanging in the air.

The people here, was the person in charge of this laboratory, Professor Down and Emily, and then the students of Professor Down who like Emily were having homestay at Professor Down's house——Hendricks Wesk and Lizzie Ashton. In addition, there were Rod Hurst and Dennis Litton who were also Professor Down's students.

「Tha, that's just coincidence right? Right? Isn't that so?」

Rod who was handsome but had frivolous air was speaking wishful thinking with unusually stiff expression.

He who was a self-styled feminist had a personality just how his appearance suggested, someone who couldn't help to call out if he saw girl, but at the same time he was also the mood-maker of the class, in a serious mood like this he would be the first one who cracked jokes to melt the atmosphere.

But, even someone like him, when he saw the PC monitor displaying the news of this morning that was picked from internet, as expected even his usual talkativeness was lacking in luster.

「The "cause" that caused this phenomenon, do you think there are that many of them? Furthermore in this kind of timing?」

Dennis tilted up his glasses with his middle finger while rebutting without even hiding his bitter expression. His hair was cut short, his shirt was buttoned properly until his neck, and then his glasses. He who was the most serious in Down's classroom just like his appearance often quarreled tit for tat with Rod, but his rebuttal this times was obviously different with his usual war opening signal.

Because Rod understood it, he too closed his mouth with the same expression

like Dennis.

「Rapid muscle swelling, abnormal recovery power, behavior without reasoning in it……I don't know any sickness or medicine that give those kind of symptoms. Except "that"……」

Hendricks stiff words caused Emily at the side to twitch and tremble. Hendricks was a senior who had homestay at Down house since before Emily came, an existence that was already like real big brother for Emily who supported her both at home and also at university.

Hendricks himself also didn't understand at first how to approach a young genius girl and only looked at her from afar, but with the homestay as the impetus, he knew that other than her intellect Emily was a girl with really normal emotion, and since then he took care of her like she was his real little sister.

It was a common knowledge between the members of Down classroom and close friends that when Emily simply spoke "senpai" then she was referring to Hendricks.

The words that came from the senior that Emily trusted and loved dearly from her heart caused Emily, the creator of "that" to shake like a kitten. Hendricks immediately noticed that patted Emily's head with gentle motion while saying「Sorry Emily. I didn't mean to blame you.」.

「Hendricks. Pay attention to what you say. After all my little sister is delicate.」

「No, Lizzie. It's not like she is your little si——」

「Shut up! Or rather, you patted her too much already! Come on, Emily, come to big sis here?」

Emily who was obediently receiving the pat of Hendricks was stolen in a flash by Lizzie who hugged her into her breast. She then said「It will be okay you know~, big sis is with you after all~」while consoling her like a little child with 'good girl, good girl'.

As expected, that treatment was embarrassing for a girl who had turned sixteen, that Emily forgot the serious atmosphere and ran away from Lizzie's breast saying「Wait, Lizzie-nee! I told you to stop treating me like a child! It's embarrassing!」.

Lizzie who had long red hair that was tied with scrunchie, dangled from her shoulder to the front loosely, although her attitude was strict, but actually she was an extremely helpful woman with deep emotion. She was in the same year with Hendricks and homestay at Down house from the same period, the truth was she had feeling of love toward Hendricks.

At first with how Hendricks was taking care of Emily, Lizzie's relationship with Emily was strained, but Emily's figure that was chasing her dream with her all gradually moved Lizzie and now she was completely Emily's big sis.

Emily too, she knew about Lizzie's love, so sometimes she teasingly said「You should just marry him already」and so on, but each time Emily teased like that, Lizzie's face would blush bright red and she would be fidgeting, that appearance was that of a lovely woman that even Emily who was the same gender would feel something.

Currently the scrunchie that had also become Emily's trademark just like her lab coat, although she had never said it to anyone but it was something that she imitated from her prayer of wanting to become a kind and lovely woman just like Lizzie. However, it was somewhat embarrassing to imitate exactly the same appearance so Emily didn't dangle her hair to the front from her shoulder but making it into side tail instead.

Inside the room the mood softened slightly from the dialogue of the two sisters. Professor Down who smiled slightly to that made a small cough. Just with that Emily and others immediately focused their attention to him. Even though they had harmonious relationship, but they wouldn't make light of the words of Professor Down that they respected. His cough was the signal for them to switch their relaxing mind.

「Just as Hendricks said, there is only one phenomenon that can turn a human into this. I won't say that there is nothing else that can do this, but even so, this kind of radical transformation——is impossible. In all probability, this is【H3-α4】.」

Professor Down declared that while his gaze turn at the monitor once more. There, the figure of a man with big build covered in armor of muscle was projected, the man was rampaging like a beast without reasoning.

That man didn’t even show any reaction at the voice of the police telling him to stop, far from that he slammed his body toward the nearby street lamp and unbelievably broke it, then he swung around the broken street lamp with one hand and turned the two police cars surrounding him into scrap.

That violence made the polices started shooting all at once, but the man roared, and without even paying attention at the bullets gouging his body, he charge toward the police with unbelievable speed and routed them. The struck police was thrown to the air like a joke with parabolic trajectory. That sight was just like a scene in B-movie.

The person who filmed the video was a passerby who was at that place by chance, the video seemed to be taken using smartphone, because the person ran away as fast as his legs could carry him after the police was sent flying, the video was greatly blurry. Before long, the video taker who had taken enough distance was frequently saying「Oh my god-」while directing his smartphone’s camera toward the scene once more.

Scream and angry roar were raised from everywhere, the polices were desperately fighting back which was proven by the resounding sound of gunshots, and amidst all that, that time came before long.

Suddenly the rampaging man stood still, right after that it fell on his knees as though it was a machine that had ran out of electricity. And then, at that place which was in uproar, a faint sound of anguish could be hear coming from the large man, it was a sound as though his neck was being strangled.

Right after that, a transformation appeared in the large man. His muscle that could be mistaken as armor was visibly starting to shrink. No, perhaps it would be more appropriate to express the phenomenon as “withering” instead. In the middle of being observed by the dumbfounded people at the surrounding, the large man covered his face with both his hands and moaned in anguish, his body withered until the size of a normal adult male, and then his hands parted from his face while his body was convulsing in small shivers.

The face of the man that became visible from there was completely different from the brutal face without reasoning that he showed until now, it was the face of a young man that looked ordinary which could be found anywhere, no, rather

kindness could even be seen from that face. That young man made an expression that almost burst into tear for a moment——at the next moment, he raised an anguished voice once more while he collapsed down with both his hands covering his face.

The body of the collapsed young man withered in the blink of eye, it lost moisture, deep wrinkles were carved onto his skin, skin and bone that lost the flesh were starting to stand out, like that, the young man didn't move anymore.

The polices looked and nodded at each other, and then they carefully approached the young man. And then, when they didn't receive any response even when they called to him, to make sure a police used his foot to move the hand of the young man who was still stiffened, and then the polices screamed and backed away.

That couldn't be helped. The face of the young man that they caught a glimpse of just now, it was completely desiccated like a mummy, reduced into a tragic state.

The news announcer was speaking about this abnormal incident with a grave expression, speculating whether the cause was a new virus, or else a drug.

「But, but teacher. How can that went outside……. In the first place the only one who know about that's existence are only us……even though the data and the deposited part are scattered and managed strictly yet」

Emily's doubt came out with a voice that sounded strangled. Hearing that, the truth that the members of the laboratory tried to not think about reared its head.

——【H3-α4】

That was the name of the byproduct medicine that was created by accident from Emily's research.

Emily's research was to create a specific medicine for Alzheimer's disease. That disease was the cause that was changing Emily's kind and gentle, beloved grandmother little by little, she was the reason that Emily was determined to enroll into a university in the age of eleven years old, it was a problem in the territory that a lot of researchers hadn't reached yet, and it was also the life

work of Emily.

That research which obtained the cooperation of Professor Down and Hendricks and co who were research student was something that put its linchpin on the point that was the regeneration of destroyed neuron. It was also a path that a lot of researchers in the past had tried their hand on it.

What was born from that research process was【H3-α4】. If it was used, muscle would break down and regenerate repeatedly and swelled up in the blink of eye, every kind of external injury would instantly recover due to the cells' super activity.

Of course it had demerit. As the compensation for the drastic muscle strengthening, the user would lose their reasoning and life. If someone was injected with small dose, then they might hold out for around a week until ten days, but in the case someone was injected until it was just barely the limit before the cells were self-destructing from being unable to endure too drastic stimulation, they would die in less than an hour in exchange of obtaining regeneration power that couldn't be compared to the former case.

At first Emily and co thought that they might be able to possibly cut open a path of creating a wonder drug after witnessing the dramatic result of this【H3-α4】, but after seeing the lab rats transforming brutally without being able to stop the too drastic stimulation and the breaking down of the reasoning, they thoroughly hid this drug as something that was too dangerous.

They dispersed the data, disguised even the chemicals used, deposited each data at different places, and put them under strict control.

Therefore, it should be impossible for the medicine to be stolen. Because In the first place the people who knew about the existence of【H3-α4】were only the members of Down laboratory. They were all in this place right now, except several people who couldn't assemble here because they couldn't immediately come.

「……Hey, what about Jessica, Sam, and Milo? Even those guys should know about the news right? Why aren't they coming? By any chance, those guys——」

「Stop that Rod. We cannot doubt our friend in this kind of time.」

Rod was about to say “that possibility” that everyone was intentionally avoiding, but Professor Down stopped him. Everyone was looking at Professor Down with anxious expression.

「There is many other possibilities. We are “Down Laboratory” aren’t we? Emily’s genius is resounding not just in this university but even throughout the scientific society, it is a well-known fact that all of my prided students are really excellent. It’s possible that perhaps someone who came here to steal something else accidently realized the existence of【H3-α4】and stole it. A researcher cannot ignore any possibility no matter what situation they are in.」

The words of Professor Down caused Rod to scratch his face awkwardly. When Dennis spoke sarcastically to Rod, he lashed back saying「What did you say」. However their exchange was done with their usual atmosphere without any sign of paranoia against each other.

「Then……teacher. We, what should do from here on……. As expected, is it better if we go to police?」

Hendricks asked for advice from Professor Down to go back to the topic. Professor Down crossed his arms and groaned「Hmm」while pondering for a while, then before long he suddenly lifted up his face.

「This is my suggestion but, for the time being, I think we should keep this matter a secret.」

「We aren’t going to talk to police?」

「Yes. No, sooner or later we will have to talk no matter what. However, I believe that right now what we should prioritize is to make the antidote for【H3-α4】even for a second faster. Surely it would take much time if there is investigation about that kind of uncommon drug. It would be a waste of time.」

「Bu, but, teacher.【H3-α4】is……」

「I guess. Indeed, we haven’t finds the way to stop the stimulation……. However, there are still several approaches that we haven’t tested yet. We have talked about destroying the research data and also the materials, but it won’t be too late to do that even after we tested those approaches. This research has leaked outside already, there is no guarantee that the second or third victim

won't appear. At that time, the scope of the damage will change depending on whether there is antidote or not.」

Hearing Professor Down's suggestion made Emily to desperately restrain her impulse that wished to destroy the research data and product as fast as possible. Hendricks and others were also nodding「Certainly even if we do that after trying out those approaches……」

「Emily. I understand really well your feeling that want to make it gone from this world quickly. I also feel the same. But, the responsibility of creating that lie in us. Then, before we succumb to our terror and erase everything, we should do what we can. Am I wrong?」

「……Teacher. Yes, no, you aren't wrong. I think that the possibility is almost none……but, if we are just trying it……」

Seeing Emily's pained expression, Professor Down's expression also distorted slightly, then she caressed Emily's head with his usual gentleness.

In the end, they decided that their policy from now on was to try the approaches for making antidote of the leaked out【H3-α4】, keeping the whole matter secret from the outside, and also forbidding the members of Down Laboratory that weren't here from speaking. With that decided, each members of Down laboratory began to move to do what they could.

Part 3

「And? I want to ask about the detailed story soon though. Can I ask you to talk?」

Two days later after they day where the members of Down laboratory decided to keep quiet about the drug and continued their research, currently there were two suited men in front of Emily and others. Both of them were police that came here to investigate about『Berserk case』——the case that was caused by the person who consumed【H3-α4】was called like that by the news——that happened two days ago.

If it was asked how the police was able to arrive where Emily and others after only two days, then that must be because someone had squealed to the police.

For Emily and others this was a sudden visit that was completely unexpected. Just what was the meaning of that decision that even made them felt guilty feeling if it turned out like this……

Emily sent her gaze toward Professor Down looking for help. Professor Down was crossing his arms while making a complicated expression, but then,

「Well, we can also get a warrant and then search the place whether there is really such drug here or not you know? In case we find the drug, well, I think nine out of ten we'll find it though, but as it is perhaps the professor and others here will be arrested as mad scientist that dragged unrelated people into their experiment for the sake of their own research.」

「Give me a break! There is no way we will do something like that!」

Emily finally snapped hearing the words of the police officer and yelled. The eyes of the middle-aged police officer instantly shined fiercely.

「In other words, you are admitting that the drug itself exist?」

「-, tha, that's……」

Emily immediately turned flustered from that. Professor Down who was beside her shook his head seeing that, and feeling that it couldn't be helped he told the police about the existence of【H3-α4】. He also told about how it was stolen and that they didn't contact the police because they were hurrying to make its antidote.

「……Whether that story is the truth or not, well, how about we listen the detail at the police station to make the judgment?」

「We didn't report this because we thought that it would be like that. Detective, I beg you even knowing that it's unreasonable. Can you wait just a week more? At least until the approach we are trying out right now is showing preliminary result. It's possible that perhaps we will be able to make antidote.」

「Please don't say something so unreasonable professor. No matter how high your position or how prestigious of a teacher you are, you are still the most important witness of a case with a lot of casualties you know? As you can see we are not even calling you a suspect here, we are even giving you an option whether you will come with us or not, I hope you can guess just how much

consideration we have given you already.」

「That's……」

Professor Down's expression looked like he was chewing up a hundred bitter bugs all at once. Seeing Professor Down like that, for some reason the middle-aged police officer made a faint smile on his lips. And then, that gaze moved toward professor Down's side, at Emily who looked anxious with her gaze wandering around. And then he said it was fine if it was here, but he wanted to speak with just Emily alone.

When Professor Down suspiciously asked why, the middle aged police officer answered that he wanted to hear the story of the girl who was the linchpin of the drug development in a place without her guardian.

「I……what harm there will be even if she is with her guardian?」

「Let me ask you the opposite, what harm there will be even if professor is not with her?」

After getting told that, the side of Professor Down who claimed that they only got the drug stolen from them couldn't even refuse. When Emily also bravely said「It's fine teacher」, Professor Down could only acquiesce even if he was worried.

Emily and the two polices faced each other inside the room Professor Down had exited from.

「Now then, I find it a little hard to believe but, is it true that you young lady is the developer of that monster transforming drug?」

Right after the professor was gone, the attitude until now that more of less paid attention to decorum completely vanished, the middle-aged police officer suddenly took out a shabby cigarette while asking. His appearance of his swept back hair, loose necktie, and kinked suit really made other people felt unpleasant. The man that seemed to be his partner looking a bit younger sitting quietly at the side while taking memo was also sending an appraising gaze at Emily.

Emily was feeling somewhat scared at the two men who suddenly changed their atmosphere, even so she somehow feigned calmness using the bluff she

had learned whether she wanted it or not when she first enrolled into the university.

「That's, right. I, developed it. Or rather, perhaps I should say, that it was by accident, that drug got created.」

「H~mm. How shocking. See here, isn't it completely like in movie? For a drug that can make human into that kind of monster to really exist, I have been a detective for a long time, but I've never heard of anything like that.」

「……Just, what do you want to say?」

The middle-aged police officer that was making a broad grin for some reason was causing Emily's discomfort index to rapidly climb up. Perhaps it was because the police officer was having fun reading inside the heart of such Emily, that in the next moment he said something unbelievable.

「The data of that drug, how about you hand it over to us, all of it.」

「Ha?」

Emily's pupil turned into dot, wondering just what this person was saying. Seeing such Emily, the middle-aged police officer whispered「Even though you are called a genius or something but you are really slow huh」as though he found it troublesome while continuing on.

「Surely there will be a lot of people interested in that kind of abnormally lovely drug. It will be good money. That's why, I'm telling you to hand over all the data.」

「Wha-, what are you saying!? You, you are police right!? Do you know what you are saying!?」

「What a noisy missy that can only go 'gyaa gyaa' huh. When you have become a police officer as long as me, you will meet a lot of delicious story by chance. Missy, do you know how much a policeman's salary is? It's laughable y'know? That's why I'll bet my life for something that will make that much money. You've got to treasure connection with money that you meet by chance. Just this much side benefit is forgivable isn't it?」

There was no way that was forgivable. She didn't know how much the salary of

a policeman was, but even so there was no way they who were burdened with the mission to safeguard the people and apprehended the criminal would be all the same like the men before her eyes. These guys were the so called dirty cop or immoral cop! Like that, Emily realized their true nature from her knowledge of drama movie.

「There is no way that's forgivable. I, I'll tell, this matter to other police! I absolutely won't hand over the data! Just go away right now!」

Seeing Emily who stood up right away with the corner of her eyes raised like a threatening cat, the middle-aged police officer shrugged as though he was facing a child that couldn't be reasoned with.

「Then, the professor and the other research students, I wonder, perhaps all of them should take on the sin as killer.」

「Eh……」

「I said it before right? I hope you can guess just how much consideration we have given you already, remember?」

「-, yo, you coward-」

Emily yelled angrily when she heard the middle-aged police officer implicitly threatening that if she didn't want Professor Down and Hendricks and the other to be arrested with a false charge then……. There was even an emotion of hatred welling up inside her toward the scoundrels who were putting on the skin of police officer taking hostage of her important people that were like family for her.

The middle-aged police officer shrugged without even caring of Emily's reaction and stood up with the talk ended.

「Decided it quickly okay? Will it be your important family, or else the drug, yeah?」

「……」

Leaving behind Emily who couldn't say anything, the police officers exited the room. In exchange, Professor Down and Hendricks and others entered inside with worried expression.

Professor Down noticed Emily's unusual state and asked her if something happened. Like that, he showed a shocked expression at the answer that Emily gave him.

「What the hell, just what the hell with that! They are police aren't they! Why the hell they had to threaten us! I don't get it!」

「Calm down Rod.」

「You think I can calm down like this! Dennis-, aren't you irritated huh!?」

「Obviously I am you idiot Rod. But, what are we going to do if we don't calm down. Even though our important little sister was threatened, but if we are all shaken up like that then that will be just what they want.」

「-, that's, you are, right, but……」

Rod whose fist was shaking from frustration, and Dennis who was desperately suppressing the rage in his heart even while sighing.

The unbelievable situation with this threat from the police also visibly shaken up Hendricks and others. Amidst that situation, Professor Down who was wracking his brain with his eyes closed opened his mouth.

「There is also the option to report this to other police but……right now we don't know how many comrade they have, so I cannot say that it's a good option. In the worst case, there is also the possibility that they will arrest just us and take Emily away. Right now, we cannot possibly leave Emily alone.」

「That's, right. But, then, what to do……they will soon come back to hear our reply you know?」

Hendricks asked Professor down with tormented feeling. But perhaps it was as expected from an adult with wisdom of age, the professor seemed to have the answer.

「Let's contact the national security bureau. Now that the case this time has been exposed until this far, then it's not the level where we can keep hiding it or anything. Given how dangerous【H3-α4】is, there is high possibility we can make the security bureau move.」

「I see……. Their system is different with police. If we receive protection from

security bureau, then police won't be able to meddle.」

Hendricks nodded in understanding. Lizzie and Dennis and others were also nodding to each other, thinking that there was no other way than that. However, only Emily was still looking down with a complicated expression.

「Emily, it's fine. No matter what happened, I, we will absolutely do something about it.」

「Lizzie-nee……yes, thank you.」

Hearing the words of Lizzie who hugged her to give her assurance, Emily buried her face to Lizzie's chest while returning words of gratitude.

However, the anxiety whirling inside Emily's chest, rather than lessening from her trusted big sister's words, it seemed that it was getting thicker instead. She couldn't help but felt something, like a great bad premonition coiling around her heart, as though something fatal was approaching with loud footsteps.

Emily was staring at the back of Professor Down who was going to contact the security bureau without knowing yet that this creeping ominous feeling would become reality.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

About the drug's name, I wanted to check up a bit more and write it properly with a name that sounded likely, but……

It was impossible. There ain't any time. Seriously. The update for next week is also in a dangerous state.

And so, well, this is spin-off, please pardon the flighty explanation.

PS

At Overlap-sama's homepage, the first part of the comic's first chapter was updated.

Really dangerous. Kaori and Shizuku are just too cute.

For those who hasn't seen it, please take a look without fail.

PS 2

Thank you very much for a lot of ‘don’t mind’ comments.

Thanks to that, I was able to update somehow.

The mysterious sense of unity that the honored readers of Narou showed sometimes, Shirakome loves it.

The next update will be at 6 P.M Saturday if possible, desu.

Arifureta Chapter 203

Arifureta Extra Compilation – From Abyssgate Lord of The World

Beginning of Tragedy 1

Part 1

That day, an investigator of security bureau's dangerous drug countermeasure section Vanessa Paradis was in bad mood. Usually she was someone with limited expression, but right now anyone who looked at her walking in the bureau corridor would immediately understand that her expression was sullen.

「You look really in a bad mood huh, Paradis.」

When Vanessa taken off her gaze toward the voice that suddenly addressed her, she saw a man with goatee around his early forty clad in sharp atmosphere there.

「Hughes-san. No, not really, I'm not in a bad mood……」

「Don't lie. You carried secret investigation for half year, and just when it will be time soon, you got taken off the team. It can't be helped even if you get bad mood. If it's me then there is no doubt I'll be in bad mood.」

「That's……it's」

Vanessa stuttered, feeling lost of what she should say and her gaze wandered.

Davy Hughes. He was a senior investigator in the same security bureau's dangerous drug countermeasure section with Vanessa, a veteran senior who would soon reach his twentieth year in this career. He was also an eccentric that was fixated with his current post to the degree that he refused down the chair of section head regardless of his numerous achievements.

「Well, the one pulling you out was me though.」

「……」

Hearing Hughes exposing his own deed without looking the slightest bit sorry caused Vanessa to be truly wordless this time. She was also staring fixedly at him on the same time.

Hughes made a wry smile at Vanessa who was at such state. He urged Vanessa to continue her walk toward the bureau chief office that was her destination before he started his explanation while walking at her side.

「Don't glare at me like that. My team is in need of you really much right now. I got squad leader Ahmed to reassign you to me while enduring storm of sarcasm from him just so you know.」

「……If I remember correctly, Hughes-san became the leader of【Berserk Case】investigation team right? Not even two days should have passed since the team's formation……but, is there some development already?」

「Yeah. The situation is confusing in various aspects. From the beginning this case is something unrealistic, so it also can be said that it cannot be helped. There was a report right from the origin cause themselves. It's likely that they will use the protection program but……the protection target is a girl that is still 16 years old.」

「I see. So an agent of the same gender is necessary then.」

「Right. I'll let the chief tell you the detail. I'm also going there now. I'm sorry that I'm asking unreasonable things from you, but there is no female agent stronger than Paradis for protection duty, I'm relying on you.」

「If Hughes-san is evaluating me that high, then I'll also won't throw tantrum. Please take care of me.」

Hughes chuckled from Vanessa's words while replying「Take care of me too」. Regardless of how veteran he was, but he wasn't putting on air against Vanessa who still hadn't graduated from newbie territory, perhaps this too was one of the reasons he was able to leave behind his numerous accomplishments. For a senior investigator leading a team, it was important how one treated their subordinate.

Vanessa's mood that was falling to the bottom took a sudden climb with

gyuin! sound from hearing the words that were highly evaluating her said by a respected veteran investigator. Unexpectedly this Vanessa was easy to handle.

Although Vanessa's expression didn't change at all from receiving the sharp glint of the gaze of national security bureau chief, Sharon Magdanese, but inside her heart she was tasting a nervousness as though she was made to do a tightrope walking,

Chief Magdanese was a woman with age that looked like she was in her sixty, but she had been entrusted with the seat of national security bureau chief far before Vanessa even entered the bureau. Her pressure and dominating aura that pushed those who faced her into crucible of nervousness didn't seem to weaken throughout her age but even more polished instead.

「Agent Paradis, those are the current state of【Berserk Case】. You understand don't you?」

「Yes.」

It wasn't "Do you understand?" but it was as though she was saying "You understand don't you? Don't you? I won't let you say you don't", Vanessa responded back「Yes」while thinking that if she gave any other reply than that then she might get fired.

Hearing her reply, Chief Magdanese nodded with a single word「Good」really naturally, then her gaze moved to Hughes.

「Senior Agent Hughes.」

「Ma'am.」

「I will recognize the application of the protection program for Emily Grant and her relatives, as well as the people connected with the development of【H3-α4】 headed by Professor Reginald Down. However, make Emily Grant as the prioritized protection target. You get it don't you?」

「Roger. Are we going to head there right away? If possible, I want to have a briefing session beforehand with my team first.」

「……I don't mind. It will be conspicuous if several agents of security bureau

visited while the sun is still high. Do it late at night. I'll let you know later about the time. If Kimberly is among the current bodyguards then I don't think there will be any problem, but just in case, place some of our men among the university's security and janitor.」

「Understood.」

There was no worry of any complication with Hughes's responsive reply. While Vanessa was staying quiet, Chief Magdanese and Hughes did two, three more exchanges, and in the end Chief Magdanese asked「Is there any question?」.

Vanessa who noticed that the gaze was directed to her gave a nod.

「Chief, in the case that we encountered someone that took that【H3-α4】and become the alias【Berserk】, what will be the method to deal with it and the order of priority?」

「Silence the target. I won't question the method.」

It was an immediate answer. Vanessa who asked the question spontaneously lost for word. The chief telling her to silence the target without questioning her method meant that "it was okay to kill".

「……Is there any method to save the people that is affected by the drug——」

「Agent Paradis.」

「-, Yes.」

「According to Doctor Emily Grant, currently there is no medicine that can return people who turned Berserk back to normal. It's not like I don't understand your feeling that want to apprehend this drug's victim with the hope that someday a cure will be developed. However, that is the role of enforcement section, at the very least that's not your job. I won't let you say that you don't understand you know?」

「Of course, chief. My apologies.」

Vanessa lightly lowered her head while feeling Hughes smiling wryly at her side before she asked one more question.

「Just now, there was the explanation that the culprit that leaked out the drug's data is unclear, but how much the progress of the analysis about that

currently?」

「Let's see. Analyst Parker, explain.」

「Yes, chief.」

In respond to Vanessa's question, Chief Magdanese addressed the man standing by beside her who looked like was still in his twenty. The slender young man was wearing glass and looked timid, and for some reason his eyebrows were constantly forming figure 'ハ' looking troubled, which further strengthened his timid impression.

Analyst Allen Parker who became the chief's direct subordinate after his excellence was highly evaluated around three years ago, operated the note PC on his hand while starting to explain.

「To inform you first, currently we still haven't obtain information to the degree that we can analyze. After all, it is only two day since the【Berserk Case】, and the notification from the university only came several hours ago so……. Currently rather than an analysis, please think of it as conjecture instead.」

Allen confirmed that Vanessa and Hughes had nodded and projected the content of the note PC he operated into a large display. There, the profiles of Emily, Professor Down, Hendricks and others that were obtained from who know where complete with their photo were projected.

From there, there was brief explanation of the background of Emily and others, and it was reported there that【H3-α4】——nicknamed【Berserk】(it was named so from the media's naming of the previous incident as【Berserk Case】) was kept secret until the incident.

「Based on the present situation, it appeared that the highest possibility is that someone among Down laboratory leaked out the data. The motive is unknown. Grudge, craving for fame, destructive wish, stress venting, or possibly…… playfulness, perhaps?」

Allen said something like that while winking, perhaps with joking intention. Vanessa's intensely chilly gaze pierced into him. From behind the tundra gaze of Chief Magdanese stabbed him. It was only Hughes who sent Allen a praising face that said「You, are you a hero」as though he had changed his evaluation to Allen.

「Hn, hn, cough-. E, ee, next possibility, is the case where outside people, or perhaps an organization was involved with this. Those with the high possibility to be able to know about the existence of【Berserk】even if just a fragment of it, we included them and the people related to them——for example, friend, family, the staff of the laboratory, the shop they went to, scientific society, part-time workplace, et cetera~——into the list. And then we eliminated the unlikely possibility by investigation, next we added various conditions, like who wouldn't be able to bring out the data without anyone knowing and produced the rough list of the suspects like this.」

The data on the display was switched with roughly ten enterprises, people, organizations, and so on. Each suspect's display was also accompanied with their respective possible motive and also the conjecture of the method of stealing.

Vanessa came to a comprehension. Certainly this person was in the level that was worthy to be working directly at the side of Chief Magdanese. The person himself said things like「It's not in the level of analysis」or「There is too little time」, but the average analyst would surely be unable to form a logical conjecture to this degree.

「……I see. Thank you very much for the easy to understand explanation, analyst Parker.」

「Ahaha. I said it before that this isn't in the level of *analysis* or anything. Please don't have something like strange preconception okay? But, if you are giving me thanks, then please, by any means don't be so unfamiliar and call me "Allen"——」

「Hughes-san. Looking from this, even if the protection program is applied to them, there is no way we can let them stay together isn't it?」

「……Yeah, you're right. There is enough possibility of an inside job, and it's unthinkable that the culprit is sane seeing they released Berserk in the middle of city. At the very least Doctor Grant has to be placed separately from the other. But in that case, I'm worried that the girl's mental state would be increasingly burdened. Paradis, I'm really relying on you here.」

「Please leave it to me.」

Analyst Allen's face was twitching from being ignored as though nothing

happened. Hughes made a sidelong glance at him with a thought「What a guy……」, his gaze was as though he was looking at a hero as expected. Chief Magdanese was covering her eyes.

Chief Magdanese glared at Allen at the side, then she asked whether Hughes or Vanessa had other question, to which the two shook their head and she commanded them to leave. After lightly bowing their head, the two exited the office, Chief Magdanese saw them off before turning her gaze to Allen who was plainly feeling down.

「*Allen.*」

「Haa, just why I am having no luck with woman like this? Just what is not good from me? I think my face isn't that bad, and I'm always paying attention to being humorous and friendly, yet——chief, is it okay for me to focus myself in analyzing the method to be a bit popular among women?」

「……It's fine. You don't even need to come anymore tomorrow.」

「Eh!? Why is the talk suddenly about firing me!?」

As I thought, perhaps I'm mistaken with the personnel selection——Chief Magdanese was recalling the thought that she had been thinking about all this time since three years ago while restraining her feeling that was wanting to fill Allen who was vehemently objecting「No way……chief. If you take even my paying job from me, then how will I become popular!?」with lead bullet. She then gave her command.

「Stop joking around with that much. You get it don't you?」

「No, I'm not joking here……no, nothing at all. I totally understood.」

When Allen was about to object, he was pierced by the serious eye glint of Chief Magdanese which made him to tensely salute in panic. Chief Magdanese sighed seeing Allen who was like that.

Part 2

A heavy atmosphere was hanging in the air inside a room of Percival University's research building. Emily was looking down with pale face while her eyes were shaking, Professor Down was holding the girl's hand tightly in kind consideration, at their opposite side was Lizzie who was patting Emily's head.

In this place right now, other than Hendricks, Dennis, and Rod, there were also the remaining members of Down Laboratory whose name were Hessica Cubit, Sam Redman, and Milo Yenny.

Jessica was a female student with relatively light attitude who recently poured her energy into fashion rather than research, but her normally light atmosphere now quietened down and her expression looked grim.

Even Sam who was often told「You are absolutely more suited to be a martial artist rather than researcher」by Dennis and Rod with his muscular body that was taller than 190 cm, and also Milo who was a black person and came from America as transfer student, normally they were youth with bright atmosphere, but now their expression was turning grave.

Inside that heavy air that was catching them into quagmire, a light voice that couldn't read the mood or perhaps it dared to ignore it entirely instead was resounding.

「Well, that's how it is. Missy, you just focus yourself in the research for the antidote *alone* without worrying about anything. You can look forward for a flawless facility and security there.」

The owner of the voice was an investigator of national security bureau's dangerous drugs countermeasure section——Kimberly Warren.

At the afternoon, he and Hughes came here after receiving the report from Professor Down and questioned everyone about the situation. After that Kimberly remained here in order to guard Emily and others while Hughes finished his report and preparation to lead a team back here.

And then, while Kimberly made arrangements with the dispatched undercover agents and waited for the decision of the concrete planning from here on, finally a communication came from Hughes just now.

According to the communication, the adoption of the protection program was recognized and the team would wait for late night before coming to pick them up. Regarding the protection program, in consideration of the possibility that there was someone among Down classroom aiming for Emily's research, Emily would be protected at another place that had an environment that could be used for research, where she would be asked to endeavor at researching the antidote there. The communication also mentioned that until the antidote was completed, don't mention the members of Down classroom, even her parents wouldn't be able to meet her.

「Agent Warren. Is it possible for even just one person, whether it's me or someone among the students to accompany Emily?」

Professor Down argued vehemently at Kimberly who looked like he wasn't mindful at all about Emily's state. However, Kimberly was making an expression as though he was facing an unreasonable kid while saying「Haa?」and curtly rejected the request.

「I'm troubled here if you are saying stupid question like that, professor. In this situation where the culprit is unclear, even all of you are included among the suspects, you should understand that right? There is no way the missy——the doctor can be left together with you.」

「Then, at least, her parents can——」

「Please spare me from your begging. This is the decision from above, it's not something I can do anything about.」

Kimberly scowled feeling that it was really troublesome and looked away while cutting off Professor Down's words.

「Why-. Emily's parents is not related with this! Then——」

「Teacher, it's okay. I'll be okay! I'll finish right away if it's just making something like the antidote!」

Emily stopped Professor Down who stood up with a menacing face looking as

though he would grip Kimberly's collar. Emily puffed up her chest while chuckling「Fufufu」to show that she was okay just like she said, but looking from the viewpoint of Down classroom's members who had accompanied her like family until now, it was obvious that she was forcing herself.

The lonely time when Emily first enrolled into university became a little trauma for her. That little girl in an environment where not only she didn't have any acquaintance, on the contrary everyone around her were all far older than her, caused her to be cornered.

That was why, if she was told that in this kind of urgent situation she would be separated not only from her father substitute and her older siblings substitute, but she would also be unable to contact her parents, then even if she understood that it was only for a limited time until she managed to make the antidote, she couldn't help but feel the great tightening in her heart.

「Well, no matter how much you protest here, the decision stands. Just resign yourself and make the antidote right away. You are genius right? Then you will be able to meet them again before long.」

「Someone like you is……the person with you before, Hughes-san wasn't it? Don't you think you should learn a bit from your superior?」

Professor Down shook his head while sighing hearing the careless remark of Kimberly who irresponsibly made light of Emily's brave bluffing. Kimberly grinned broadly in amusement to that and only shrugged at the fierce glare of the professor.

However, as expected when he was glared not just by Professor Down but also by Hendricks and others, he seemed to feel uncomfortable and lifted both his hands as though he was surrendering before exiting the room right away.

「Perhaps the investigator's quality of the country's organization has been really falling these days.」

Professor Down whispered while sighing.

「But, teacher. Wasn't Hughes-san who came with that person looked like a sincere person? He said that he will also assign a female agent for me.」

「But still, Emily. Agent Warren said it right? It's "the decision from above". The

one that decided so that Emily is alone is that agent Hughes. Or perhaps it's a person even more above you know?」

「That's……」

The expression of Emily who bluffed by saying「It's okay!」slightly clouded from anxiety as expected from the words of Professor Down.

Even Hendricks, Lizzie, and others were also making dark expression. Amidst them, Professor Down closed his eyes in worry before he moved his gaze to Emily with a determined expression.

「Emily. I have a really bad premonition. No matter how I think about it, it's strange that they are trying to separate you from even your parents. By any chance, perhaps the security bureau has some other objective, something more than merely protecting Emily to have you create the antidote.」

「Teacher……. But, we have already reported to them……」

Finally Emily's bluffing expression fell off and she displayed a face where anxiety was mixed with bewilderment. Professor Down spoke more words to her.

「We can just deny that. Even so, if they still try to take away Emily alone even after that, then that will proof for sure that they have no good thinking in their mind.」

Professor Down then cut off his words, he crossed his arms and closed his eyes, after falling silent for while, he opened his mouth slowly.

「……Emily, I have an acquaintance that have a research facility.」

「Research facility?」

「Yes. He also has a high social position, and he is reliable too. He should be able to give us shelter while lending us research facility until we finished making the antidote. What do you think? Though as expected, it's impossible for everyone to go, but if it's there then it's possible for me and your parents to come along. Besides, you will also be able to contact Hendricks and others. That's why, before we are separated from each other, before you are isolated alone, won't you evacuate there for the present?」

Emily stared without moving at Professor Down who made an unexpected

proposal with a serious expression. Hendricks and others were also sending shocked gaze at Professor Down.

「I know it's strange coming from me who was the one that suggested to report to the security bureau. But it seems that the government cannot be trusted at all. There is no way I can entrust Emily who is already like my important daughter to that kind of place. To say nothing of how you will be alone there……」

「Teacher……」

Emily's gaze wandered around in hesitation. She could be together with everyone——that plan rang really nicely in her ears, it was a tempting proposal for her……however, it was unthinkable for her that the security bureau would overlook them in this abnormal situation where a drug could change human into a berserker and it was urgent for its antidote to be developed, furthermore it was themselves who reported about it.

Naturally, there was a possibility that she would cause much trouble for Professor Down who said he would shelter her, and also his acquaintance that would be the one actually sheltering her. Perhaps all of their social status and prestige could be destroyed because of that.

However, Professor Down who seemed to guess that thinking of Emily grasped the trembling hand of Emily tightly, and then he sent her a gentle gaze just like when he reached out to her the first time.

「Emily, you don't need to worry needlessly. You are a first class researcher, but at the same time you are also still a sixteen years old child. It's mistaken for a good child like you to shoulder everything in this kind of emergency. That's why, it's okay for you to depend on others. No, rather I beg you as someone that is like family to you. Please, I want you to depend on me.」

Emily looked down to hide her expression. It wasn't because she was hesitating, but because if she didn't look down then her welling up emotion would become flowing drops of tear.

「Emily, let's depend on teacher's kindness here. Even we are also unable to let Emily be alone in this current situation.」

「That's right……. If it's Emily, then surely you will be able to make the antidote right away. That's why, let's agree with teacher's proposal okay?」

Starting from Hendricks and Lizzie, the other members also raised voice of agreement with Professor Down's proposal.

Everyone of them was worried for Emily without exception, they were wracking their brains to look for the best possible future for Emily.

She was really blessed. Emily was thinking that from the bottom of her heart while taking a deep breath, then she nodded while firmly looking at Professor Down.

「Great, it's decided then. Everyone, please cooperate with me. Even if we talk to agent Warren about this, he would only stop us. Then, let's ask for his approval only after it's done. I and Emily will head to my acquaintance's place ahead, so can you all distract agent Warren's attention for us?」

「Got it. This is for Emily. We will do it somehow.」

After Hendricks nodded strongly, the other members also nodded with resolve in their face.

「Hahah, who'd ever thought that a time will come where we will think about outrageous thing like outwitting the security bureau agents in active duty like this. Isn't this like in a movie?」

「Rod. Don't get too optimistic. After all you are the one with the highest possibility of making mistake here.」

「What did you say-, Dennis! Ain't you the one who is always getting cold feet at critical time and caused blunder?」

「It's the cliché that normally the guy who is spouting big words is actually the one getting cold feet. Rod, that refers to you.」

「Okay, I rea~lly get it that you are picking fight with me. Let's get outside Dennis. I'll make that glasses get sticky all over with my finger's sweat.」

「Bring it on. I'll perfectly stitch your slovenly chest so that you won't be able to expose it for the second time.」

A small giggle echoed inside the room that had its atmosphere lightened up

with Dennis and Rod's usual swearing. When Dennis and Rod turned their gaze there even while their hands were still grasping each other's collar, they found the figure of Emily who leaked out that chuckle from being unable to endure the scene.

Lured by that, Hendricks, Lizzie, Jessica, Sam, Milo, and the Professor Down began to laugh.

Emily made an amazing smile while tears were gathering on the corner of her eyes. With a really lovely smile that was like blooming flower she said……

「Thank you, Dennis-*oniichan,* Rod-*oniichan.*」

「「……」」

Dennis and Rod who were given the greatest present with the designation that was seldom used for them, they silently tidied up their clothes and made a fake cough. And then they sat back quietly with their face dyed red until their ears.

「Now then, with the return of Dennis, Rod, and Emily's smiling face, let's focus on the detail of how we will outwit the security bureau.」

Professor Down's command, as usual it instantly made the students renewed their focus. For the sake of their cute little sister's future, they talked their opinion to each other with an expression that was even more serious than usual when they were at research or lecture.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

The chapter is short, on top of that it doesn't progress, I'm sorry.

The writing time is, already……

Forgive me for keeping all of you in suspense but, one thing, it will be a bit more time until that guy crawl from the abyss, so I'm wishing that if all of you reader can possibly wait for it.

The next update will be at 6 P.M Saturday too. There will be no stopping midway next time!

Arifureta Chapter 204

Arifureta Extra Compilation – From Abyssgate Lord of The World

Beginning of Tragedy 2

「Good grief, it feels like I am an actor in a B-class movie here.」

While Emily and others were in the middle of discussion, Kimberly who was leaning on the wall at the corridor while staring at his smartphone was letting out a chuckle that he couldn't keep restraining inside himself. It seemed that what he was watching in the smartphone was something that really pleased him.

Kimberly moved his fingers quickly across the display several times. Then the display displayed Kimberly's bank account. When he saw the amount of money that was displayed there, he let out his chuckle once more. Seen from the side he really looked like a dangerous character. How his expression was dyed with greed that was unthinkable coming from an agent of the security bureau also encouraged such atmosphere.

「This much just from acting a little as agent. Really, this make me feels that risking my life fighting criminals is really stupid.」

Kimberly put back his smartphone inside his pocket while saying that to himself. At the same time, he recalled his schedule from here on inside his head. ——Due to his *real* employer's request, it would be a schedule where he would risk his life kidnapping Emily Grant and then bet his life to pull the carpet from under security bureau.

Kimberly was making show of standing guard outside the room where Emily and others were inside while actually he was confirming his betrayal toward his comrades and his criminal act. It was at that time, *kii* the door's room made a sound and opened.

Dennis and Rod came out from inside.

「Hm? What's the matter? It will still be a while until the pick-up time you know?」

「We are thinking to make the final check of the things we are going to bring.」

「Sheesh, you guys already made that check a lot wasn't it?」

「That's just our nature. This kind of confirmation won't be enough no matter how many times you do it.」

Dennis shrugged while pushing up his glasses sharply. Kimberly nodded「Is that so……」to that before he turned his gaze to Rod at the side and asked「And you?」.

「It's this for me.」

「Smoking huh……. Well, fine. But, don't move away too far okay? After all you guys are also protection target here.」

「Yes sir—」

Rod jokingly returned a salute while lazily dangling the cigar he grasped in his fingertips. Like that, he and Dennis disappeared together further in the corridor while receiving Kimberly's gaze.

Of course, Dennis and Rod's words to Kimberly were lies. They were planning to raise commotion after this so that it would be easier for Emily and Professor Down to escape. The specific plan was to raise a commotion nearby the laboratory where【Berserk】was in safekeeping by taking other harmful chemicals before yelling「We made a mistake and it got scattered~」.

Of course, what they would scatter was harmless chemical, but if they made commotion saying that 'It would affect life if you don't take medicine right away!', the agents of security bureau that couldn't confirm the authenticity should be panicked. The other would use that opening to try escaping from the research facility.

Surely the bodyguards from security bureau would never think that the people who requested protection by themselves would actually escape by their own decision. On top of that, this research building was already like the back garden for the researchers who often spent the majority of their day inside. There was a high possibility they would be able to escape.

And, at that time the door of the room opened once more. Who came out were Sam and Jessica. Jessica was leaning coquettishly on Sam's arm, generously pressing her voluptuous body that peeked out from her clothes that had intense

exposure.

「So you guys too……what's your business?」

Kimberly talked to them while still leaning on the wall.

「Ee~, you understand just by looking right~? We are going to where it will be just the two of us~. It seems like it will be difficult in various things after this~, so while we still can~」

「Ye, yeah, that's right. Si, sir, it's fine, just for a bit right?」

Jessica was leaning even more on Sam while her way of talking was stretching even longer. Sam's eyes were swimming around, but he somehow responded to Kimberly.

In reality, Jessica and Sam were just friend, they weren't lover or anything, they were just getting out of the room to be distraction like Dennis and Rod. They pretended to be lovers with the motive of trying to find an agent somewhere and trick him into something like a blackmail scene using beautiful girl.

However, for Sam it was unexpected how passionate (?) the acting of Jessica was. His unrest was fierce from her way of talking that was completely different from usual and the soft sensation that his arm was feeling.

「……Yes, yes. Do whatever you like.」

「Ye~s, we will do whatever we li~ke. Rather, I'll be made to do whatever Sam li~ke」

「……」

Jessica grinned widely while waving her hand at Kimberly who gave his permission with an exasperated expression. Sam was feeling a bit of terror from Jessica's acting while nodding wordlessly.

Like that, Jessica and Sam's figure vanished at the turn of the corridor.

Kimberly kept leaning on the wall with his arm crossed while waiting silently until the time came.

Some times after that, when Kimberly was starting to want for at least a glass

of coffee, an abnormal event happened.

Bii—, bii—, bii—, bii—!!

A warning sound suddenly echoed. Kimberly made a faint smile and then he brought his mouth closer to the communication device attached on his sleeve.

「This is Warren. All members, situation report.」

Kimberly wasn't shaken. Everything was just as planned. He had already seen through the ulterior motive of the students exiting the room. Therefore, he expected for the report that reached him from each bodyguard to be「Nothing strange」or「The students are~」.

Yes, everything was just as planned——was how it should be.

「? Oi, Clayton, Muller. Respond. Oi, what's wrong?」

All bodyguards that reported to him said there was nothing strange. Kimberly thought that there would be reports coming from at least two place telling him that some kind of commotion happened, but he got doubtful when until the end all the reports that he got told him nothing strange happened.

Furthermore, there was no report at all coming from the last two people he called. There was no reaction no matter how much he called into their communication device.

「……Oi oi. Don't tell me, they got caught off guard by mere students.」

Kimberly's cheeks convulsed from imagining the unimaginable development. But, the moment he noticed that the place that the two bodyguards he lost contact with was where【Berserk】was deposited, his face complexion changed right away.

「-, Dickson! Russell! Come here right away! Take over me for guarding the missy!」

『Haa? Warren, what are you saying? Just now two of the kids came here. They are surprised by the alarm but——』

「Just leave that alone! A different lot might be coming!【Berserk】is stolen right now!」

『Wha-, wait a second! Something like that is not in the pla——』

「There ain't any time for chatter! I'm going to take a look at the place of Clayton and Muller! Just in case of the worst case, you mustn't let the missy got snatched away!」

Kimberly roared angrily. Right after that, the door of the room opened slightly and Professor Down's face appeared from there.

「Did something happen? We——」

「There might be someone infiltrating. I'm putting two guards here, so don't come out of the room.」

「No, but——」

Kimberly turned his back toward Professor Down who was going to object while saying this.

「Someone is aiming for【Berserk】!」

「!? Co, could it be, Dennis and others」

「No! Those guys are confirmed to be in another place! That's why I'm panicked here. Just listen, stay quietly inside the room!」

「Go, got it.」

Professor Down returned inside the room while feeling shaken. Right after that, two bodyguards dressed as garbage man came running.

Kimberly entrusted them to be the guard in that place before running through the corridor with fierce momentum.

「Dammit all. Please let it be just some kind of mistake. My livelihood depend in this plan here!」

Kimberly was cursing while rushing up the emergency stair.【Berserk】was four floor above——inside the chemicals vault that was strictly managed at the tenth floor, but if there was intruder, then there was high possibility they would use the emergency stair, and this stair was also simply the closest to Kimberly's position.

The vault at the tenth floor could only be opened using ID card, fingerprint

confirmation, twelve digit password, and voice recognition, those four locks. In addition there was also security camera.

Therefore, it was unthinkable that the drug could be stolen in so short time but……

Although *they weren't agent that received training*, but the men standing guard there were muscular and armed, yet they might be neutralized already without even given time for calling help.

If, this wasn't some kind of mistake, and there was really intruder, then that intruder must be a considerably skilled one.

Kimberly was feeling cold sweat while rushing through three floors in one go, and stepped on the stair landing between the ninth and tenth floor. It was at that moment,

「Oops」

「A? You……」

Ahead of the gaze of the shaken Kimberly, was a man that was just going to go down the stair from tenth floor. It was a man without any peculiar trait. He looked like he was in his twenty or even at his forty. He looked flat, medium build body, and brown hair that wasn't long or short. His suits didn't look like high-class or a cheap one. And then, a doctor robe.

The man raised a really light voice when he saw Kimberly. If they met in a normal situation, then Kimberly would surely think that this man was a researcher here, he might even say「Excuse me」while passing through the man and like that he wouldn't even recall back about the man for the second time in the future.

But,

「You, what is inside that suitcase?」

The lack of any peculiarity, the handy suitcase, and then Kimberly's instinct as an agent, made him be conscious of the man.

「It's just a research document though? Rather, I should be the one asking who are you? I have never seen your face here, and you also don't look like a

researcher……eh, don't tell me you are related with this alarm? Could it be, I'm in a pinch here?」

The man's face was convulsing while he took a step back on the stair without turning around. Looking from the man's speech and gesture, in a glance he looked like a simple researcher encountering someone suspicious.

「I am an agent from security bureau. There is a possibility that an important medicine is stolen. Sorry, but I'll confirm the content of that case.」

「No, no, it's impossible to let outside person to see research data I told you. How suspicious, are you really someone from security bureau?」

If Kimberly took a step, the man would also take a step back. Kimberly narrowed his eyes slightly at the man's attitude, then he said「I'll show you my badge then」while his hand moved to take out his proof of identification as security bureau agent from his breast pocket……

In order to took out and fired a gun.

「Ah maan, this person is sharp. You are really a dangerous man, trying to shoot someone so suddenly like that.」

「……You yourself, you bastard ain't normal. Who and where are you from?」

Kimberly's gun muzzle, was pointed at the temple of the man from *point-blank range*. At the same time, the neck of Kimberly who had the distance *closed* instantly got a knife pressed on there.

Yes, the man in doctor robe closed the distance faster than Kimberly could take out his gun and shoot on an unstable place like the stair. Furthermore, surprisingly that knife flew out from the man's sleeve, it was obviously a knife with launching mechanism.

Kimberly felt cold sweat drenching himself. He planned to be a wanted man in this case anyway, so he wouldn't shirk from cleaning up one or two researchers that might be unrelated rather than risking his important money tree got stolen. But, when the lid was opened, what he was confronting was actually someone far more skilled than him.

'This is bad, bad, bad' His instinct was ringing the alarm bell loudly like that.

In an instant,

「Warren!」

「Kimberly-」

Voices that called Kimberly's name and gunshots roared. Bodyguard agents had gathered below. The man said「Whoops」still with a light tone while instantly pulling his body back. The bullets hit the wall a slight distance away. The shooters didn't plan to hit right from the start, they fired only to separate the man away from Kimberly.

The man seemed to give up going down the stair, he tried to climb up the stair.

「I won't let you-!」

Kimberly pulled his gun trigger continuously. The fired bullets passed through beside the man who twisted his body right away and opened up holes on the wall.

「Are you sane!? You are firing at someone carrying a case filled with hazardous substance here!」

「That thing cannot infect through air! Even if anyone get hit with droplets, if it's just a little then it cannot cause secondary infection! It's better to destroy it rather than have it stolen!」

Indeed,【Berserk】wouldn't infect someone without injection or contact, regarding secondary infection from a person that had been【Berserkification】, *if the intake amount was only a little,* then even if other person came into contact with body fluids of the victim then they wouldn't get infected.

Even so, Kimberly who dared to brave the danger of scattering around the extremely dangerous chemicals caused the man's expression to cramp a bit while he finally took out a gun from his breast pocket and returned fire. While Kimberly leaped aside, two bodyguard agents that had climbed up the stair got their legs shot through and they crumbled down.

Kimberly cursed while aiming his gun muzzle at the man, but right after that, his eyes opened wide.

「Are you bastard ninja!?」

The man unexpectedly jumped off the stair, he then kicked on the handrail and leaped further and passed through above Kimberly's head. Furthermore, he then kicked on the wall to turn around and attacked Kimberly.

Kimberly changed the direction of his gun, but the man's flying kick hit Kimberly's chest faster. An impact that caused him to hallucinate his ribs breaking made the air in his lung to be forcefully ejected out. Kimberly groaned「Gahah」and got blown away.

In no time Kimberly was sent flying and he would be struck on the stair behind where he would be neutralized, that was how it appeared it would turn out…… but, Kimberly was a former military and an expert at military hand-to-hand fighting. He immediately discarded his gun and caught the kicking leg, dragging the opponent into the momentum that sent him flying.

「Guah」

「-kh!?」

The man made Kimberly as his stepping stool and somehow evaded being struck on the stair, but his balance was broken and he fell.

Even so, Kimberly still got the bigger damage, and different from the man who immediately stood up, Kimberly became unable to move from the impact.

The man shrugged as though to say 'oh dear' before trying to leave that place.

It was at that time. An incident that could only be said as a devil's work happened in succession, which would lead to tragedy.

「Agent Warren!」

「This bastard! That's Emily's! Return it!」

Dennis and Rod appeared. They heard the alarm and saw the agents going off somewhere. They became worried that【Berserk】would be stolen again and came here to look at the situation, using elevator they came to the tenth floor and there they listened at gunshots from the stair. And then, the two caught sight at the man's figure and guessed the situation. When they saw Kimberly and other agents were defeated, their sense of justice came out. It came out fiercely.

The hot-blooded Rod leaped to the man, while Dennis threw the harmless but

smelly chemical they had prepared.

Naturally, the man easily kicked away Rod, but the chemical vial accurately hit the ceiling and broke apart, throwing out its offensive smell. Naturally, the liquid fell like shower at the man below, Kimberly, and the agents.

The man immediately lifted his suitcase over his head to protect his body from the unknown chemical.

Instantly, along with a single gunshot, the suitcase was shot and sent flying from his hand. The one firing was one of the agent that was shot in the leg and fell. That agent was crawling slowly toward his gun that was sent flying, before his hand finally reached it and he aimed at the head of the man whose attention was taken by Rod and Dennis.

Therefore, it was a coincidence that it was the suitcase that was hit. Rather it was because the man was holding the suitcase with his hand lowered that the agent aimed at the man's head. But, the unexpected situation where a chemical was thrown at the ceiling caused the man to make an unforeseen move.

And then, there was one more devilish coincidence. The bullet hit the lock of the suitcase with pinpoint accuracy.

As the result, the suitcase that had its lock broken flew away from the man's hand, it crashed on the wall which caused the suitcase to be opened.

Yes, the vial of【Berserk】that was put inside the suitcase, was exposed to the open.

The people in that place sent their gaze pursuing the falling suitcase in slow motion. Obeying gravity,【Berserk】flew out from the suitcase that fell on the ground. There were two vials in the suitcase.

One vial flew out from the impact and broke at the center of the landing stair. The content scattered out.

「Don't get hit!」

「tsu」

Kimberly roared angrily. Ahead of his gaze was the figure of the other agent that was still lying on the floor.

The agent covered his face with his arms right away but……he was too late.

「a, a? Gii! aAAAAA———!!」

The splash of【Berserk】flew into the agent's eye and mouth, a beat later, the agent screamed thunderously, *beki baki goki* his body began to transform along with raw sounds.

「Now that it's like this, he is beyond help, eh.」

The man, with expression as though he was chewing something bitter aimed his gun muzzle at the head of the enlarging agent. And then, he fired without hesitation and blew away the head. If the person only came into contact with small amount of splash, then there would be no problem if he was killed before transforming.

The agent easily crumbled down.

Dennis and Rod were greatly shaken seeing a person died before their eyes, even so they felt relieve the same like Kimberly and the man that the Berserkification was stopped.

It was at that moment,

——aAAAAAAAAAH!!!!!

The first cry of birth came from downstairs. The birth cry of Berserk.

「-, the other one!?」

「Not here……shit-, it fell down! We got too distracted with this one!」

Yes, the other vial wasn't anywhere here.

The other vial had fell downstairs from the gap between the handrail's railing. And then, midway it crashed on the railing and its content was thrown out. If it was just that then there would be no problem. However, in a stroke of bad luck, no, perhaps in a sense it ought to be said as inevitability, downstairs there were a lot of people that stuck out their head from the handrail to look upstairs.

The alarm and the gunshots that came from upstairs. There was no way that those would go unnoticed by the students and professors who were staying behind in the research building, the security guards, and others.

That was why, the drug that gave birth to berserker raining down from upstairs showered them plenty. It wasn't in the level of splash anymore. It was the whole content of a bottle. Even though, it actually didn't even take a full injection at that time of【Berserk Case】.

「Aa, geez-. This is really an awful failure-. The luck of me today is undoubtedly the worst!」

The man cursed out like that while jumping down the stairs.

「Guh, fuck-. Stop damnit!」

Kimberly's face distorted due to the damage that was still remaining in his body while standing up somehow, he then chased after the man by rushing down the stair.

「Rod! We are going back!」

「Eh? A, Dennis? But, something like this……」

「Get a hold of yourself! We have to let everyone know! Besides, that man might be going to where Emily is!」

「ts. Tha, that's right.」

Dennis scolded the greatly shaken Rod and made him stood up.

And then, they turned a pained expression at the agent's remain that got his head blown off, before they rushed out toward the room where Emily and others were waiting

While listening to the *countless* roars and continuous gunfire resounding downstairs.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Even though I planned to finish the reminiscence at two chapters……

Seriously I got no time for writing. This time it stop at incomplete point too

It will be a bit harsh for the update for the next Saturday.

Arifureta Chapter 205

Arifureta Extra Compilation – From Abyssgate Lord of The World

I’m Not Mr. K, But I’ll Become Your Strength

AN: It’s a little bit late.

Sorry.

Part 1

When Kimberly finally arrived at downstairs where screams and bellows and beastly roars were flying past each other, he witnessed the manifestation of picture of hell there.

Men and women were enlarged atrociously without distinction. The strengthened monsters were trampling down everything at the surrounding following their instinct.

At first there were only several people that got dashed over with【Berserk】, but the body fluids that were scattered along with the roar, the biting act, the scattering blood due to the security guard's gunshot, all those were increasing the number of the infected like rats multiplying.

If it was only a bit of【Berserk】, then surely there wouldn't be anyone at the surrounding that got infected just like when that young man rampaged in the middle of city a few days ago. However, this time the people that got infected the very first were absorbing a lot of the undiluted solution of【Berserk】. The ability of【Berserk】should be lowering much if it was by indirect infection, so at this level there would be no worry of explosive contagion happening.

However, even so there was the need to be resigned of at least tertiary infection or quaternary infection. And above all else, the people who got hit at the beginning with the undiluted solution were even now scattered about somewhere and kept producing the secondary infection.

The hell was only starting just now.

「Fuck-. It's really a B-class movie like this.」

Kimberly was cursing while aiming his gun muzzle at a berserker that just now was snapping the waist of a small statured female student to *opposite direction*. He consecutively fired life-reaping bullets within an instant.

The former student that was Berserkified carelessly tossed away the female students who died in a way that was beyond imagination by getting snapped right into half, and then it covered its head using its arm that was like a log while rapidly rushing at Kimberly.

Kimberly's bullets that flew straight to the berserker's head were easily stopped by that muscle armor. Its flesh was gouged and blood was flying, but that was all. The wound was immediately starting to regenerate and its charging momentum didn't decline at all.

「Nine milli is just like peashooter huh-」

Kimberly immediately jumped forward into a head-sliding. Strong wind of death and madness passed through above his head. He evaded by slipping through between its legs.

Kimberly was sliding while instantly rolling face-up, and then he aimed at the back of the head of the berserker and pulled his trigger. Inside the corridor that had turned dim due to the broken lamps, muzzle flashes flickered along with consecutive gunshot sounds.

At the same time, skin and flesh and blood scattered from the berserker's back of the head. The berserker that got hit with fierce impact on the back of the head while in the middle of charging pitched forward and fell on the corridor with a slide.

「I heard that it doesn't have weak point other than the head but……it's more troublesome than I thought.」

Kimberly stood up while smoothly replacing his gun's magazine. He whispered with an expression as though he was chewing something bitter.

Right after that,

「aAAAAAAAH」

「-!? Shit-, it's infected!?」

Behind Kimberly, the female student who was snapped into two just now shrieked while standing up. When he looked there, the girl's face was really wet. Probably when she was caught she was also dashed with a lot of saliva that was

scattered together with the berserker's roar.

Kimberly aimed his gun to deal the finishing blow before it could finish its transformation. But, before he could pull the trigger, presence of death blew from behind him.

「-!?」

He obeyed his instinct's order and jumped to the side, an instant later, a war hammer was swung down. The fist attack was so fierce that he mistakenly thought that. Cracks in the shape of spider web was created on the floor by that fist.

「So I failed to finish it off-」

Yes, the attacker from behind was the berserker just now. Actually, the angle of Kimberly's bullets was too bad to pierce the skull, they could only slide on the skull's surface and shaved the skin.

And then, the worst thing was that the second berserker finished transforming in front of Kimberly who lost his chance.

「This is bad……」

He muttered those words unconsciously. Cold sweat trickled down the temple of Kimberly. He was sandwiched between two berserkers behind and forward in a corridor that wasn't that wide. Kimberly's cheeks were twitching in this dangerous situation.

But, at that time, a severe earthquake suddenly came. The corridor wall slightly away from him was blown away along with intense thunderous roar, and from there a berserker came out. However, it appeared that the berserker wasn't intentionally smashing the wall. The berserker flew out with a somersault and its head struck uncouthly at the corridor's opposite side with a tumble.

It was as though its charging momentum was made use to send it flying and crashed onto the wall. That conjecture was proved to be correct by the man in white doctor robe that jumped out from the broken wall right after that.

「My stomach got cold inside here because I need to imitate a matador against berserker.」

The man made such frivolous talk while kicking the berserker's arm that was trying to stand up. When its balance's broke, the man drilled its head with point-blank range shooting and finished it off with certainty. The berserker fell down like a puppet with its string cut, and then it withered up while spewing white smoke. The man in white doctor robe attentively put in bullet toward the heart's location from the back.

「GAAAAAAAH!」

「Oops. Spare me from anymore chicken race okay.」

One of the berserkers aiming at Kimberly roared and charged toward the man in white doctor robe. Immediately following that, a black object lightly flew in air.

「Wai-, you stupid bastard-」

Kimberly got down in panic. The next moment, the dim corridor was overran with intense flash. The white robed man was using flashbang.

Kimberly was sweating coldly that he was crouching defenselessly right beside a berserker while desperately covering his eyes, then gunshots roared four times in the corridor that was filled with flash. At the same time, a heavy crashing sound resounded for the second time.

(He sniped in this kind of situation!?)

Kimberly shuddered in his heart while sweating coldly at the white robed man's skill, however, he still jumped out by relying the slight presence that he felt.

「Uwah, that's dangerous-」

「Chih, I missed-」

The flash was already settling down and the dim corridor came back into view. The two people crossed through each other among the falling bodies of berserkers and now they were opposite of each other. The white robed man that easily slaughtered three berserkers tried to cross in front of Kimberly to go ahead of the corridor, but then Kimberly assaulted him with the knife that he was secretly carrying.

Kimberly already perceived that it was impossible to catch this man for interrogation due to the difference in strength between the two of them, but rather than letting him escaped just like this he thought that he would instead kill the man and search for even a scrap of information about who this man was from his dead body.

However, the attack that was filled with that killing intent was easily dodged. Kimberly reflexively clicked his tongue.

Although, as expected, perhaps the man in white robe didn't expect Kimberly to attack using his instinct when his eyes were burned to some extent by the flashbang and he kept it closed, the man exposed a slightly pained expression.

「ts, ……you, that face」

「……Geh, this is bad!? Aa, can you pretend not seeing anything?」

The white robed man still talked with light tone. The place on his face that was grazed by Kimberly's knife had something dangling down on there. However, it wasn't blood. There was unharmed skin that could be seen from under the peeled off skin.

It was obviously a disguise mask that was using advanced technology. It was something in the level that couldn't be prepared by low level organization.

(Wait, wait a second. He is using a disguise of this level just for sneaking into a university's research facility? He is extremely vigilance of having his face known? In addition he know about Berserk's existence and act in this timing, also an organization that has skilled member above my level?)

Kimberly stared fixedly at the white robed man who was holding his head in exaggeration while saying「Ooh my, goddd!」because of his failure of exposing the fact that he was in disguise. And then, with the information that he had as the premise, and the speech and conduct of the man that he felt déjà vu from……

「You……don't tell me……」

The eyes of Kimberly who guessed the true identity of the white robed man turned round. The man showed even more fluster at Kimberly's state that was like that. The man muttered in small voice「Even though I'm already at risk of

getting fired from making this great failure, seriously spare me from more than this!」before turning on his heel.

「Wait-」

「I'm not waiting! This is out of control already! I had taken care of all the first berserkers already, take care of the rest please! This is what you called collective responsibility!」

「Don't screw-——」

Kimberly tried to chase after the man, but the white robed man vanished in the blink of eye deep at the corridor ahead. Furthermore, in a bad timing more berserkers showed its figure from the opposite side of the corridor that Kimberly was forced to stop running.

「This is really a shitty B-class. This one and that one are just doing whatever they pleased.」

With a pained expression, Kimberly gave a sidelong glance at the berserkers charging at him while roaring. He then dashed up the stair to the floor above.

At the very least, he had to secure his money tree, the girl that was Berserk's creator.

Part 2

On the other side, when the berserkers were starting to scream for the first time, Emily and others were tormented by bewilderment and anxiety and fretfulness while hesitating of what to do, whether they should go out to look at the situation or not, or if this was the diversion caused by Rod and others and they should get out of the research building right away.

At the very least, this surely wasn't the diversion that they planned seeing from Kimberly's state before this and from how the two agents that came to be the guard replacing him suddenly dashed away in panic and abandoned their guard duty.

「……Everyone, let's escape.」

Professor Down made his decision in the middle of the oppressive atmosphere. Hendricks was about to make objection reflexively, but Professor Down continued his words before Hendricks could form his words.

「This feels too strange to be something caused by Rod and others. Perhaps something else is happening right now. However, it's certain that the agents are directing their attention elsewhere. I think we shouldn't let go of this chance.」

Those words caused everyone to look at each other's face. And then, they nodded at Professor Down's suggestion even while feeling anxious.

They slowly and quietly opened the door, and after confirming that there was nothing strange going on outside, Emily and others came out. Violent sound of clatters and impacts resounded from the corridor. Emily's body spontaneously froze from that. Hendricks showed his usual kind smile at Emily who was showing small fear while her body stooped a little, their eyes met each other.

「It's fine Emily. We are with you. Surely everything will go smoothly.」

「Senpai……」

Emily looked anxious, but she obediently nodded. Hendricks then tousled her

head in encouragement.

「Wait Rick. Don't tousle Emily's hair like that. Good grief, you just don't understand how to treat a girl.」

「Oi oi, Lizzie. If Hendricks understand how woman's heart work, then you two will be already married from long time——」

「Stupid Milo-, close that mouth of yours!」

The cheerful overseas student Milo ate Lizzie's slap with 'hebuu' and his body half-rotated. But he kept rotating for a half more and returned to face the front and sent Lizzie a wide grin. A vein emerged on Lizzie's forehead.

Seeing the exchange between the seniors——no, her big brothers and big sisters who were always jovial, Emily's anxiety was also eliminated a bit. She said「Thank you」inside her heart while returning back a powerful smile in place of words of gratitude.

Emily and others arrived in front of the stair.

「Then, Hendricks, Lizzie, Milo. We'll rely on you to recover the research data and the drugs. I and Emily will leave ahead from here. Let's meet again at the meeting place.」

「Yes teacher.」

Hendricks replied with determined expression at Professor Down's instruction. Lizzie and Milo also nodded.

Like that, Hendricks and other went upstairs while Emily and Professor Down went downstairs, it was just before they could do that, *zushin-, zushin-* a sound that was like something heavy hitting the floor resounded from downstairs.

「What?」

Hendricks and Milo looked at each other's face and they peeked downstairs hesitatingly. Even while they were doing that, the heavy sound was gradually getting louder while transmitting vibration regularly.

「He, hey, Hendricks. You see, I, feels like I have seen this kind of scene, in a movie before……」

「He, hee? What, coincidence. I, I also recall something like that.」

The two were feeling cold sweats drenching their body while they couldn't take off their gaze from downstairs, however, they muttered in small volume simultaneously.

——JurasOc Park

They said.

「This ain't a joke. Why, the hell. Why, are those guys……」

「Ha, haha. I wonder, if this is still better, than T-Rex……」

Milo stepped back while shuddering in fear from that——the berserker that finally showed its appearance. Hendricks also stepped back while making a dry laugh.

Right after that, a scream that pierced the air was raised.

「ts, RUN-」

Hendricks's voice warned so loud it felt like her throat would tear. Milo came back to his senses as though he just got punched, while Emily and others who were similarly stiffened also turned on their heel and started running through the corridor.

「Go down from the other stair!」

「No, use the elevator! Get into that!」

Lizzie mentioned about the other stair at the end of the research building. But midway Hendricks saw the floor display of the elevator and wasted no time to tell the others about the change of plan.

Emily jumped forward and pushed the elevator button. The elevator was currently at a floor above them. The sound of the elevator operating sounded a beat later after the button was pushed. Emily and others would be able to ride the elevator in just a few more seconds. But, right now those seconds felt like eternity to them.

「Quick-, quick-!!」

Emily spoke impatiently while pushing the button repeatedly.

A roar reverberated. The berserker climbed the stair and arrived at the floor where Emily and others were at right now. The figure of Emily and others was reflected on its bloodshot eyes. And then, it screamed once more. However, this time the sound was accompanied by the shaking of the floor from its forward charge.

At the same time, the elevator door opened. They all rushed inside and pushed the button with all their might. Seeing the door slowly began to close was really frustrating. However, it closed just in time.

Just before the door closed, the wicked look of the berserker peeked in from between the door's gap and a fist approached, but the door closed completely. Thunderous sound and impact ran through the door. Milo and Hendricks fell on their butt seeing the door now became greatly dented.

Lizzie was covering her mouth with her hands, her expression showed how she couldn't believe what had happened. And then, Professor Down was dumbfounded while muttering「Impossible. This……what happened……」.

While the floor display of the elevator was slowly heading to the lower floor, Emily let out her words using voice that was filled with uneasiness.

「We, we have to contact the police. After that the security bureau too. After that, after that, the research building need to be sealed……but, the way to seal it is……」

Those voices caused Hendricks and others to quickly return to their senses. Their little sister was desperately thinking even while they were in stupor. That fact made them recovered some part of their composure.

「We don't know what happened but, it's unthinkable that Rod and others were the one scattering【H3-α4】——no, 【Berserk】. Anyway, let's get outside for the moment abd then contact the police. If they don't send armed men here……」

「……Yeah. We don't know how much【Berserk】is scattered, but it will be a disaster if it gets outside.」

「Are Dennis and others safe……. As for the security bureau, surely agent Warren has contacted them though.」

Hendricks and others desperately calmed down themselves while talking to each other. Before long the elevator arrived at the first floor. The door opened and then they caught sight of armed men in janitor uniform a slight distance away. Those must be the bodyguard agents from security bureau.

With that conclusion, Milo felt a slight relieve, and then he rushed out of the elevator in order to seek help from them.

「You guys! Help us! Upstairs there is berse——」

Milo's figure disappeared.

「Eh?」

It was unknown who whispered that. Hendricks came out of the elevator with shaky footsteps and turned his gaze to the right.

He already knew. Right after Milo got outside, something big nabbed Milo from the side. He knew——that this something was a berserker.

「A, a, aah」

Hendricks trembling voice echoed. His eyes opened widely and he sunk down on the floor as though strength left his waist. He didn't avert his gaze away. He couldn't.

He couldn't avert his gaze from the figure of his friend that got his head crushed. He couldn't avert his gaze, from the monster straddling his friend while madly punching with its fist that was like rock.

The roar of the berserker that easily snatched Milo's life reverberated. It sounded like the war cry of victory.

The agents fired. From the direction they fired at, further two, three more berserkers appeared.

「Senpai!」

「Rick-」

The agents fired blindly in panic. Several of the bullets hit nearby the elevator, even so Hendricks kept standing stock still without being able to avert his eyes from the tragic appearance of his friend. Emily and Lizzie jumped at Hendricks

who was like that. And then, both of them dragged him back into the elevator.

「Milo is, Milo is-」

「Rick-, get a hold of yourself!」

Lizzie scolded Hendricks who was holding his head in panic. A painful slap flew onto Hendricks's cheek. Hendricks returned to his senses due to the pain running on his cheek and the expression of Lizzie before his eyes that looked like it would burst into tear anytime.

「Right now……that's no good. You still, cannot break down yet. Live, search for help, after that…….protect our little sister! Think just those for now! You are a big brother right!」

「Lizzie……yeah, you're right. Sorry.」

Hendricks stood up and turned his gaze at the little sister who was standing still at the elevator corner.

(She looks like a corpse. Shit-, it's just as Lizzie said. I've got to pull myself together-)

The look of Emily's expression that lost color was certainly like a corpse inside a coffin. Hendricks who treated her like family all this time understood really clearly that Emily now was getting crushed by guilt.

The drug that she created turned a lot of people into monster. And then, those monsters, finally killed a person that she loved like brother. That was really no different than Emily herself getting killed……

Of course, from the point of view of Hendricks and others, that was nothing more than barking up the wrong tree. But, surely, even if they said「This isn't Emily's fault」, their words wouldn't reach the heart of Emily who was drowning in guilt.

That was why,

「Emily, I want you to lend us your strength.」

「Eh?」

Hendricks entreated to Emily.

「It’s only Emily who can stop Berserk. There is no doubt that we will be unable to make the antidote. It’s only you who grasped the whole thing and possess the insight that we won’t even be able to imagine, that can stop the monster that *we* created.」

「Senpai……」

「Please, Emily. Save us, save everyone. Lend us, your power.」

There was no time for them to stop still. There wasn’t any time to drown in guilt. Exert Emily Grant’s whole strength. Hendricks who pleaded like that made Emily to notice his true intention.

Emily’s almond-shaped eyes sharpened even more fiercely. She wiped her eyes with the sleeve of her kinked lab coat and slapped her own cheeks so hard that it made sound. And then, she gave a sharp nod at Hendricks.

Hendricks looked fondly at Emily’s gaze and he nodded back, and then he suggested that they took a look at their own laboratory. He was thinking of the possibility that perhaps Dennis and others or agent Warren returned there.

Of course, there was the possibility that the berserker before this was still there. Therefore, they had to stay on guard so they could evacuate back into elevator anytime.

However, when they peeked out of elevator, what entered their eyes was——a disastrous sight.

「Sa, m?」

「A, e, a……this is, lies, right?」

There was the figure of Sam who had been reduced into a berserker, and then the figure of Jessica who was dangled in midair with her neck broken. And then, there was the figure of Dennis soaked in sea of blood at the side, and the figure of Rod sitting down while leaning on the wall. ——It was really, a nightmare.

Right after that, the elevator that had its button kept being pushed by Emily so they could escape anytime was suddenly assaulted by impact. *zuhin*- Something fell on the elevator from above. The elevator was making unpleasant sound while sinking below.

At the same time, a roar and an impact struck the elevator's ceiling. The elevator was dented with each roar. It was clear that a berserker was invading from above the ceiling.

「-, Emily! Teacher! Get out quickly!」

Hendricks and Lizzie stretched their hand to Emily and Professor Down in panic. The elevator entrance had turned narrow like a guillotine. Emily and Professor Down crawled out from there desperately.

The next moment, the elevator finally surpassed its endurance limit and fell below with a screech. The berserker that was on its ceiling reached out its hand and grasped the edge of the elevator entrance that was still opened.

Emily and others moved away from the entrance in panic, but there was no way that much commotion wouldn't attract the attention of the berserker that was Sam once.

Sam threw away Jessica like a doll and raised a groan. And then, a berserker crept up from the elevator.

In this hopelessly deathly situation, a gunshot suddenly rang.

「DAMN ITTTTTTTTT-」

The one who yelled in frenzy like that while pulling trigger toward Sam——was Rod. He kept leaning on the wall while still sitting down, perhaps he had no strength to stand up anymore, yet he was still pulling the trigger of the gun that he likely borrowed from a dead agent.

It seemed that Sam whose attention was taken by Emily and others got taken unaware by this surprise attack. The moment he was about to turn toward Rod, one of the fired bullets pierced the side of his head and he fell down. His body was smoking white while rapidly withering.

Hendricks and others had no word toward the figure of their important companion that was so miserable it was painful to look at, and then, Rod who was the one that did that was crying while muttering「Damn it……」one more time.

「Rod-oniichan!」

「-, Rod!」

Emily rushed ahead. She dashed toward Rod who was dropping the handgun powerlessly. Hendricks and others were also sprinting to Rod's side in panic.

Midway, Hendricks took a look at the condition of the fallen Dennis but…… there was a single shot in his temple. He had already expired. And then, looking at Dennis figure that was smoking even though it was only a little, Hendricks guessed how Dennis was already infected.

「……Den, nis, he did it, by himself. He got splashed, by Sam's blood……, midway here, he picked……the gun……that was why, he said, he don't want to become monster……and he」

The gasping Rod was sending his gaze at Dennis with hollow look. It seemed that it was Dennis who dealt with himself. Dennis and Rod always quarreled when they met each other, they weren't compatible with each other at all, but even so, they were "buddy". Surely the feeling inside Rod's chest was something that couldn't be expressed by words at all.

「You idiot Dennis. ……When I go to the other side……I'll yell at……you again. ……I'm going, to beat you……up」

「Enough already-, don't talk, Rod!」

「Rod-oniichan! Don't, please don't! You must not die!」

「Stupid Rod! Get a hold of yourself!」

Emily and others clung on Rod. 'Gofuh' Rod vomited out blood while making a wry smile. Shadow of death was emerging on his face. Looking at his caved-in chest and his stomach that looked discolored, it was clear that his internal organs had received fatal damage.

No matter how they looked, Rod, was already beyond help.

Surely even Rod himself understood that. His gaze was calm in acceptance while his trembling hand patted Emily's head.

「……Sorry, yeah, Emily.This is, our fault…..because, we did……something, unnecessary……but, we want to do something……really, sorry」

「No-. This isn't Rod-oniichan's fault! I, I-」

Rod's hand fell down limply.

——Youu, live on

Those were Rod's last words.

Emily and others were dumbfounded. Their companions who were like family, who were laughing with each other only just now, were gone already. That fact, that reality, they couldn't accept it.

But, reality wouldn't give any consideration to their feeling.

The berserker that crawled up from the elevator showed up. Its bloodshot eye glint captured Emily and others as its prey without any room for hesitation.

Hendricks stood up. And then, he slowly pulled out the handgun that Dennis's hand was still holding and he ascertained its magazine. Hendricks sent only his words to Emily and others without looking back.

「I'll lure away that guy somehow. During that time, you guys escape.」

Emily and Lizzie reflexively were going to shout just what was he talking about, but Hendricks didn't allow any objection.

「Go-. I'll meet up with you guys again for sure!」

Saying that, Hendricks charged at the berserker alone. Emily yelled「Senpai-」and she was going to rush out, but Professor Down pinioned her from behind. Emily struggled, but when she was yelled「Don't waste Hendricks's feeling here!」, strength left her.

「……We are going!」

「Wha-, Lizzie-nee!?」

At the corridor ahead, Hendricks was shooting while he passed through the berserker's side with a slide. And then he fired again to attract the berserker's attention. The berserker turned on its heel and determined Hendricks as its target. During that time, with the monster between them, Hendricks and Lizzie's gaze crossed each other.

That was enough.

Lizzie grasped Emily's hand and she turned around. Emily made an expression

of unable to believe the action of Lizzie who should be harboring feeling for Hendricks, but she shut up when she saw the blood flowing from Lizzie's lips and her bitten lips.

Emily and others ran off with the figure of Hendricks running to the other side of the corridor behind them.

「Let's use the emergency stair. The first floor is dangerous, so let's use the plumbing pipe from second floor to go down.」

Lizzie wordlessly nodded at Professor Down's words and she pulled Emily's hand.

They opened the door to emergency stair and ran down toward the second floor. But, right now the research building was a berserker nest. And then, their developed sense of hearing could sense the prey's existence even across wall.

「GAAAAAAAAH!!」

「KYAAAH」

「UWAH」

The door of the emergency stair was blown away together with a roar. The steel door that was flown together with its clasp became a brutal weapon, and in a stroke of bad luck, it separated them from each other. Professor Down fell on his butt on the stair that connected to upper floor, while Lizzie and Emily fell on the stair landing because they embraced each other.

The eye glint of the berserker caught Professor Down.

「Do, don't come-」

Professor Down stood up with a yell and escaped by climbing up the stairs. Lizzie and Emily also stood up desperately, but because the steel door stood in their way and they couldn't pass through, they had no other choice but ran down the stairs.

The berserker seemed to choose the group with more prey. He sent a crushing blow to the direction of Lizzie and Emily.

「Emily-. Don't stop no matter what!」

「Lizzie-nee-」

The two somehow escaped from the range the fist could reach and immediately stood up again even though they were entangled with each other due to the impact. However, the berserker immediately caught up to them. It really looked unlikely that they would be able to escape until second floor.

Lizzie instantly made an expression that was filled with resolve. Emily who noticed that was caught by bad premonition. Lizzie pulled at Emily's hand and wasted no time to open the door right below them and ran through it. The berserker destroyed the steel door again and entered the floor to chase after Emily and Lizzie.

Lizzie who was pulling Emily's hand continued to run without hesitation as though she had a destination in mind.

「Lizzie-nee!」

「It will be fine! I swear I'll protect you!」

Lizzie turned the corner several times to shake off the footsteps resounding behind them before she came to a stop in front of a certain door. And then, she desperately suppressed her fingers that were trembling from tension and fear while she entered the password into the electronic lock that was installed beside the door.

The door opened accompanied by small mechanical sound. Lizzie pushed in Emily inside. Emily who had no doubt that they would be hiding together inside turned pale seeing Lizzie didn't enter. She guessed what Lizzie's intention was.

Toward such Emily, Lizzie showed her a gentle smile even with a stiff face while opening her mouth in persuasion.

「Emily, hide here. You absolutely mustn't go out.」

「Wa, wait, Lizzie-nee-. We can——」

「The door here is sturdier then other room, that's why it won't be broken down that easily. The security bureau people should arrive soon, that's why do your best to endure until that time.」

「If that's the case then Lizzie-nee too, quickly get in!」

「I'm sorry, that guy has to be lured away. There is no more place to escape inside here, so in the worst case that guy noticed then that will be the end. That's why, okay?」

「Who cares about that! It doesn't matter, just come in quickly!」

Emily desperately pulled at Lizzie's hand, but Lizzie smiled sweetly and pushed her down on her butt.

「It's okay. I'll find that idiot Rick and teacher, and we will return here together. So believe in your big sis.」

「Lizzie-nee-」

Emily reached out her hand. But the steel door obstructed that. Emily's small fist desperately punched on the steel door, but of course it didn't even twitch. Yet even while losing composure, Emily recalled in a flash that the door could be opened from inside too and her hand reached out to the door button but,

「Emily-!」

「-」

Lizzie's angry voice resounded from behind her. Emily's body spontaneously stiffened. This time a gentle voice reached her.

「No matter what happen, never give up. If it's Emily, then it absolutely will be fine, I, we all believe that.」

「Lizzie-nee……」

Those words of her big sister that came from across the steel door made Emily's hand that was reaching to the button to fall powerlessly. Hot tears were falling along her cheeks without end.

「I love you, Emily. Don't forget that. No matter what happened, you are the little sister, that we are proud of.」

「Lizzie-nee-」

A roar reverberated. Lizzie's presence was getting farther away. A beat later, heavy footsteps were passing through in front of the door.

Emily backed off unsteadily before she powerlessly sank down on the floor

helplessly. And then, she hugged her knees and buried her face onto it, both her hands held her head and she turned small.

Emily waited, obeying the command of her beloved big sister.

However, what returned was only the completely transformed Hendricks.

Emily’s important people, in the end, not a single person of them came back.

Part 3

(This is baadd……. Heavy. This is just awfully heavy. Honestly, that's too heavy that I want to run away right now……)

After she finished talking of the long recollection, Emily hugged her knees once more, buried her face, and turned small. Kousuke was sighing inside his heart while looking at such Emily. Honestly speaking, he couldn't help but felt sympathy with Emily's circumstance. Emily had even forgotten that she wasn't wearing anything down there that it felt like her secret place down there could be visible with her current sitting position, but right now Kousuke was in the middle of much regret of hearing the story that he didn't even have the composure to be aware of such thing.

「When we arrived, there is almost no survivor anymore inside the research building. We met up with Kimberly who ran out of bullet and went into hiding, then after we shared information, we split up to search for Doctor Grant, I managed to secure her but……」

「That handsome bastard betrayed you then.」

「Yes. It was when we met up with our comrades and gathered in the first floor to escape. We were surrounded by berserkers and put up a fight, and when we somehow managed to secure an escape route, we were gunned down by Kimberly and an armed group from somewhere that had replaced the bodyguard agents.」

Because of the attack of that time, the agents who came for the pick-up were annihilated. Vanessa was able to survive even while getting wounded on her side was because she was immediately covered by Hughes. But in exchange he was also lethally wounded, even so he fought hard in order to let Vanessa and Emily escaped.

As the result, due to Hughes's last stand, Vanessa and Emily managed to escape.

There, Kousuke spoke his doubt.

「Hm? After that, you didn't contact the security bureau right away?」

Kousuke witnessed the car chase at the afternoon. From the story that he heard, the incident occurred at midnight. That meant that Vanessa and Emily were fighting alone for more than half a day.

「My smartphone that can connect with the private line was broken when we were ambushed……. Doctor Grant's phone also seemed to break somewhere in the middle of our escape.」

「You can just use public phone right?」

「That's true. I also tried to do that. However, that……it's embarrassing but, after I performed first aid on my wound, I fainted.」

It appeared that Vanessa ran out of strength because she even performed the bullet extraction inside the car. After that Emily nursed Vanessa for the whole night.

And then, the next morning, Vanessa who woke up from her fainting finally made contact with the headquarters, but right after, perhaps they were detected or something, they were assaulted by Kimberly and his group then.

After that, they were chased around relentless without any time to meet up with the people from headquarters, also the meeting site that was decided beforehand was also known by Kimberly so it couldn't be used, and that was why they were doing nothing but running away.

「I see. ……Then, what are you going to do from here? The security bureau seems to be suspicious too right?」

「That's right. However, it's also the fact that we won't be able to do anything by ourselves. It's only in the movie when individual can oppose an organization as their opponent. ……We have to determine, the true intention of the chief.」

In this situation, even though the security bureau seemed suspicious, but it was unthinkable that the whole place was pitch black. If it was just as Kimberly insinuated, that the security bureau was pulling the string of the attack, then Chief Magdanese was exceedingly close with "black". In that case, then Vanessa

would ask for help from bureau member listed up inside her head that seem to be trustable, and also from other places like intelligence department and so on.

But if it was the opposite, that Chief Magdanese was “white”, they would be able to get rescue from the most direct place.

In any case, to investigate about the organization behind Kimberly and further to oppose them, Vanessa would need to obtain the power of organization too. Because of that, no matter what it was essential to clearly determine the position of Chief Magdanese, whether she was white or black.

「First, it’s important to classify which is the enemy and which is ally. I plan to move with that direction, so during that time I want Mr. K to protect Doctor Grant.」

Kousuke scratched his cheek with a troubled look after listening to Vanessa’s plan. And then, he was about to open his mouth to say something, however, his voice that was going to sing an objection was interrupted.

「I’m not looking for protection or anything.」

「Doctor Grant?」

Vanessa turned her gaze in surprise. There, Emily who turned small was slowly lifting up her face and looked back. The dark flame dwelling inside those eyes, which contradicted her frail atmosphere before this caused Vanessa to gulp unconsciously.

「That drug,【Berserk】, it’s something that mustn’t exist in this world. It has to be erased from this world, all of it without leaving anything behind. I who created it, have to erase it no matter what.」

「That’s……」

「I absolutely don’t want to be just protected, only waiting for the situation to end without understanding anything. That’s why, Vanessa. Please, bring me along. I want to ascertain with my own eyes, who was the one that spread around【Berserk】, and, what will happen from now on.」

「……My apologies but, Doctor Grant. You are——」

「A burden? I don’t think so.【Berserk】is a defective merchandise that was

created by chance. Whether it's to improve it or making its antidote, those are out of the question without me. In other words, I am the best shield you can ask.」

Vanessa was greatly troubled with Emily's point. Indeed, for the people who were seeking for Emily's knowledge and ability, Emily's life was something they had to absolutely protect. To put it another way, if she turned Emily into shield then they wouldn't be able to pull the trigger.

If Vanessa said that she would search information against an organization in this isolated situation, then indeed it could be said to be a useful card. However, even though she was fighting to protect Emily by nature, but if she made her into something like a shield than that would mean putting the cart before the horse.

Besides, there was nothing absolute in a battlefield, on top of that an "accident" could possibly happen. And even if those didn't happen, the enemy had no reason to not make the decision "it's fine if she is at least alive".

For Vanessa, taking around Emily together with her from here on was something that couldn't be permitted. However, even with all those reasons, she was unable to simply reject and left her was surely because of Emily's eyes. If she forced her to stay behind, then she would run off by herself. That risk was something possible with the current Emily.

How should she persuade her……Vanessa was at a loss, but before Vanessa could say something, the one who spoke to Emily who said rash things, was Kousuke who was being reserved.

「Look here……as I thought, something like this, I think it's better if we leave it to the pro you know? Emily is a researcher right? A researcher has their own battlefield that can only be fought by researcher isn't it? If Vanessa-san found ally and they prepared a place for you to research【Berserk】, then Emily's battle would be from there on, isn't that right?」

For Kousuke, it would be the best for him if Vanessa could quickly found ally organization that could give heavy protection to Emily. Because at that point of time Kousuke would become unnecessary and he could leave. Thinking so, Kousuke tried to back up Vanessa, but

「No.」

His opinion was rejected with one word. Emily didn't even meet his gaze.

「Saying no like that, are you a child throwing tantrum huh. You understand right? You said you are going to become shield or whatever, but you are virtually still a burden. There is no way Vanessa-san will be able to use Emily as shield. That's why, here you shou——」

「If I said no then no-!」

Hearing Kousuke's words, this time Emily's almond-shaped eyes glared fiercely while saying a rejection that sounded completely childish. As expected Kousuke was irritated hearing Emily's words that weren't even an objection but simply selfishness.

「Seriously, this isn't the time to throw tantrum. How about you understand your own position a bit more? You are genius right? Then at least understand that much.」

「……」

Kousuke's obviously pathetic atmosphere until now faded, and its place he replied with expression and tone that were visibly irritated. Emily trembled in shock from that. However, the flame dwelling in her eyes didn't die down for even a bit. She couldn't say any rebuttal and tears were oozing out slightly from her eyes, but even so she still radiated rebellion to Kousuke.

Kousuke continued his words while holding down his irritated feeling at the unreasonable Emily.

「Look here……if you keep being obstinate, and Vanessa-san get hurt again because of that——」

「What's wrong with being obstinate huh!」

Emily interrupted Kousuke's words and exploded.「OoU」Kousuke raised a strange voice in shock. Emily approached Kousuke who was like that and gripped his collar.

「I know already! It's better for Vanessa-san to move by herself! That I won't be useful if I'm with her! I know that! But, I still cannot help it! Because, because-」

「Ca, calm do——」

Kousuke caught Emily's shoulders to try to calm her down, but right after that, he tasted an impact that shot through his heart from the words that Emily yelled next.

「Everyone, they died!」

「-」

Emily who was shedding tears with her emotion exploding kept yelling without noticing Kousuke's condition.

「Everyone, everyone died there! In order to let me get away! In order to let me stay alive! Everyone died! They died there……」

——I told you they died! Captain Meld and Alan-san and the others, all of them! All the knights that entered the labyrinth died! In order to let me get away! Because of my fault! They died! They all died there!

The wailing that he once raised was resurrected in his head.

「I was entrusted. Everyone, they entrusted me with their hope. I, I cannot stop. Or else, or else everyone……」

He was entrusted. At that time, Kousuke was entrusted with his comrade's hope. The knights, they entrusted their hope to Kousuke. They kept him alive and let him escape, just him——

As the result, he could save his friends but, Emily……

Kousuke stared at Emily. She was hanging her head down, clinging on Kousuke while sobbing. At the side, Vanessa's hand reached out to stop Emily, but she saw Kousuke's face and her breath got caught unconsciously. Vanessa didn't understand how to describe it, it was a mysteriously transparent expression.

Kousuke gently caressed Emily's head. And then, to the surprised Emily, he spoke with a voice that was calm, and yet it mysteriously penetrated until deep in her heart.

「I'll become your strength.」

「……Eh?」

Emily slowly lifted up her disheveled face. Kousuke scooped the tear trickling

on her cheek with his finger, and then he smiled with a troubled look.

「I'll become your strength. I'm not Mr. K though. But, surely, it will turn out well.」

「Mis, ter K——」

「It's Kousuke. Emily. I'm Kousuke.」

The tear on her cheek was gently wiped. It was like, the warmth of her brothers and sisters.

Emily was half in a daze while she repeated Kousuke's name「Kou, suke?」just like how she heard it.

Even Vanessa at the side was wide-eyed. Kousuke showed a grin that was full of confidence and declared.

「It will be okay, Emily. After all I'm——」

——The right-hand man of the demon king-sama yeah?

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

The next update is planned at 6 P.M Saturday too.

Arifureta Chapter 206

Arifureta Extra Compilation – From Abyssgate Lord of The World

Just a Second-Hand Telling From a Friend

Part 1

The time was at morning where the sun still hadn’t ascent to the peak. The cool and clear cold air felt pleasant on the skin, and the east sky that was starting to grow light was gently to eyes. The sound of human activity began to be audible from the townscape of old alley that was made from brickwork here and there.

Although, as expected there was almost nobody walking outside. The only living thing outside was only a doggy with its head plunging into a fastfood bag thrown nearby the garbage box that looked like old drum can.

That doggy suddenly lifted up its head with a snap. The paper bag attached on its snout looked like a mask that covered its head. The doggy hurriedly shook its head left and right to shake off the paper bag.

Right after that, the thing that made the doggy reacted——a single car stopped right beside the dog with intense breaking. It made *kikit*- sound from its break which caused the doggy to twitch and ran away in full speed.

「Doctor Grant, Mr. K. This way.」

The one who got down from the driving seat was Vanessa. Her movement had sharpness in it that was unthinkable coming from a person who had gunshot in her side even if it had been given first-aid already. Actually, a medicine from another world was smeared on her gauze which displayed quite the restorative strength……but the person herself didn’t know that. She was only thinking that「Oh my, me. I am more sturdy than I thought……」, like so.

「……Heey, is that stubbornness or something? Or else is that harassment to me? How many times I need to tell you that I'm not Mr. K until you get it?」

Kousuke was piercing Vanessa with an extraordinarily reproachful gaze while getting down from the backseat. Mysteriously, no matter how much he appealed that 'I'm not that up-and-coming assassin-san you know!', Vanessa still addressed Kousuke as Mr. K.

In her own way, Vanessa also thought「By any chance, this is seriously the wrong person?」just a smidgen but……last night, from Kousuke's behavior that said「I'll become your strength」, she then changed her mind that 'just as I thought he is really Mr. K'. Surely he was simply hating that nickname Mr. K, but there was no doubt that he was a virtuoso hitman, she thought.

And so, she unconsciously called him Mr. K. But unexpectedly words that backed-up Kousuke against Vanessa who was like that were spoken out.

「That's right, Vanessa. After all Mr. K had finally taught us his name. Let's properly call him, Ko, Ko Ko, Kousuke okay.」

Emily who was also at the back seat with Kousuke got down, but for some reason she looked shy. She advised Vanessa to call Kousuke with his name while stuttering. Emily also had the same thinking like Vanessa, that Kousuke wasn't an average civilian. She thought that Kousuke had taught them his name that was concealed by the initial. That was why, she thought they should call him with his name after he had finally told them.

Emily had strangely taken distance from Kousuke since last night. Kousuke himself was thinking「……Now I've really done it. Just what is right-hand man of demon king. She must be creeped out. That was just nonsense there. The Lord inside me, it damned peeked out its face randomly like that……」, he believed that Emily was surely thinking him creepy and put some distance between them, so he was a bit shocked with this cover fire of Emily and he smiled widely in joy.

Seeing that, Emily behaved in a strange way. Her gaze was intensely wandering to empty air. And then, perhaps something in her heart had reached its limit, her cheeks reddened and her almond-shaped eyes glared fiercely while she threatened「Don't look here!」. Her hairs stood on end *fusha*— as though she was the great haughty cat itself. Her trademark side ponytail turned unruly.

Kousuke felt down. On top of having a younger girl putting distance between their heart (Kousuke was thinking so), he was also told「Wait, can the chuuni bastard not look at me like that? It's seriously gross!」(That was how Kousuke heard it). The mini Kousuke inside his heart was already going 'orz'. (TN: orz = Watch the shape, it's like someone on all fours.)

「Excuse me, our situation is comparatively urgent here, so if you two can put off your youth's springtime for later……」

「The, there is no youth's springtime here! What are you saying!」

Vanessa was sending a lukewarm gaze at Emily even while she scratched on her cheek looking troubled. The redness of Emily's face turned deeper. Her *fusha*— ratio also rose up. She might let fly her cat punch before long like this.

As though to say that she couldn't associate more than this with the other two, Emily flapped her white lab coat that she still didn't take off even now and entered the alley with loud and fast steps.

「Doctor Grant.」

「What now!」

「It's not that way, but the next alley.」

「……」

Emily came to a stop still. And then she backed up without turning around before starting to walk with loud stomps to the left while she went red until her ears.

「Doctor Grant!」

「What now!」

「Not the left one, it's the right alley.」

「……」

A high speed turn. Her lab coat stylishly flapped! However, the shame of the person was already at max.

Vanessa and Kousuke looked at each other's face and smiled wryly at each other before following behind Emily.

By the way, this was one of Vanessa's personal hideouts, so Emily wasn't familiar with the area. And so, Emily who was leading in the front set off into unknown place until three times after that.

In the end, when she finally noticed that she could just follow behind Vanessa, Emily had become a white ghost with her lab coat covering her whole body from the head. ……It appeared that lab coat had this kind of use too.

Part 2

The wooden door opened slowly while making small sound *kii*. Vanessa's face peeked inside fully on guard from there. There was no sign of anyone inside the room.

Kousuke and Emily also entered into the room by Vanessa's urging. Inside the room, there were signs of someone living there quite much for a hideout. There was a table and a leather sofa that looked like they were often used, magazines were scattered randomly on the table.

「It seems my friend is away. Well, she is often going outside so perhaps this is natural.」

Vanessa who had just taken a quick look at the other rooms and bathroom returned to the living room while saying that. It appeared this hideout hadn't been discovered by the enemy.

「This is the room of Vanessa's friend? Isn't this a personal hideout that you created by tacit misunderstanding from security bureau?」

Emily tilted her head while recalling the explanation that she was give before this. Vanessa had lost her weapon. She was unarmed. After this she would need to do various things like contacting the headquarters and probed about the true intention of Chief Magdanese, but regardless of what she would do, first thing first she needed to procure weapon.

For that, they made their way to a hideout that Vanessa didn't report to even the bureau which she prepared based on the tacit understanding among the security bureau's staff.

「I am sharing this with my friend. She is a freelancer cameraman that is bustling about everywhere around the clock. We are sharing the duty for maintaining the room, so it works just right that both of us are similarly out often.」

「H~m」

While Emily nodded in understanding, Kousuke was taking a magazine on the table with his expression strangely convulsing.

「……I see. So the source of the prejudiced knowledge of Vanessa-san about Japan, is that friend is it.」

The magazine in Kousuke's hand who was whispering something like that. If it was a magazine that young woman read, then normally it would be something like fashion magazine. However, this magazine had this name written along with a picture of a girl that had colorful hair.

——Anim○e (TN: Animage)

When his gaze dropped further, every single one of the scattered magazines were things that were fully loaded with information of Japanese anime and manga he was familiar with. Inside the room there were several large bookshelves that were decorated with pretty cloth cover, but Kousuke obeyed his hunch and checked one of them.

As he expected, the content was packed full with Japanese comic and light novel and anime DVD.

「What do you think, Mr. K. My friend's collection is quite something right? By the way, the three bookshelves over there are my collection.」

「What are you hiding in your hideout……」

Emily passed with small run in front of the exasperated Kousuke and brushed open the cover of Vanessa's collection shelves. And then while saying「Hee, so this is Japan's subculture……」, she took a Japanese manga into her hand with deep interest. It seemed this was her first time seeing something like that.

However, it was an excessively thin book.

「Hinyaah. What's this!?」

Emily screamed, her face was bright red and she held away the book as far as possible from her face. The book's front cover, should it be said that it was immodest, or that it actually easily surpassed such expression, anyway the picture's skin exposure rate was too high, and on top of that there was the illustration of a girl making outrageous posture drawn on it.

「Aa, Doctor Grant. Please don't handle it so roughly like that. That's a treasure you know.」

「Wh, who cares about that-, pervert Vanessa!」

「Why do you even have doujin huh…..」

Emily swung around the thin book with her hand stretched out with all her might while moaning「Uu—」, doing her best so that it wouldn't enter her sight, but she didn't show any sign of letting it go. It was unclear whether she was simply handling it more or less carefully because it was Vanessa's collection, or perhaps *there was some reason* that made it hard for her to let go of it……

From how she was sending glances at the front cover, surely it was because of the latter. When she noticed Kousuke's awkward gaze, Emily made excuse「Tha, that's not it! I, I'm not someone like that!」while returning the book in panic to the bookshelves.

「Doctor Grant. If you have an interest to it, then after we take care of this case, I will lend it to you, so please be patient for now.」

「I'm not impatient or anything! I'm not a pervert! It's true okay? Kousuke, I'm really, really not like that okay?」

「Aa, yep.」

Kousuke who didn't know how to react when a younger girl was pleading to him「I'm not a pervert! Believe it!」could only nodded vaguely.

Vanessa sent a glance at Emily who was desperately making excuse for some reason before she suddenly approached one of the bookshelves. And then, she sent brief glances at Kousuke. She looked like a child that was going to show the toy she took pride in to her parents while saying「Look! Look!」.

Kousuke tilted his head while turning his gaze at that direction. After confirming that, Vanessa pulled at one book inside the bookshelves, a book titled『Chupacabra Encyclopedia』.

Right after that, the bookshelves was sliding. It made a half-rotation, showed its backside and returned to its original position.

「Se, secret bookshelves?」

Emily also turned her gaze at the bookshelves when she heard Kousuke's whisper. And then, her jaw fell down. There, many firearms were lined up orderly.

「Fufu, surprised aren't you? But, still not yet. It's still not over with just this.」

The very short haired beauty wearing black suits was making a triumphant look. While Emily and Kousuke felt complicated irritation to that face, Vanessa walked toward a bed that was inside a room and this time she twisted the lamp shade of the lamp beside it.

Right after that, the back of the bed sprang up and exposed the firearms stored behind it.

「What do you think? All these hidden armories were made DIY(Do-It-Yourselfer). I spent most of my holidays for this. I threw away all of the summer and winter bonus pay to prepare this prided arrangement of mine. Don't you two feel something seeing this?」

「Holy cow……. Vanessa-san, you, are really something.」

It was settled with this. Inside Vanessa-san's heart, there was a burning soul similar with Kousuke! The "Lord" inside Kousuke suddenly made a nihilistic smile. It came out a bit to the surface at Kousuke's act and speech, which Vanessa nodded at, her face looked like she understood what he felt for some reason. Emily was getting creeped out at the two of them!

Vanessa quickly chose her equipment and stuffed them into her holster and rucksack when she suddenly noticed something.

「……Come to think of it Mr. K. Are you okay with your gun? Like your bullets or the spare gun……」

That question came because thinking back really carefully, until now Kousuke didn't show any kind of firearm even once. Far from that, Vanessa who was able to decide whether someone was bringing weapon or not just from looking at the clothes' surface couldn't sense any presence of arms from Kousuke at all no matter how hard she observed. She thought that he was hiding his weapon really skillfully but……

「? No, I don't bring anything like gun though.」

「……Mr. K. Didn't you say that you will become Dr. Grant's strength? Its necessary for us to grasp each other's equipment. It's troubling that you are hiding your capability.」

「No, no, I'm not hiding anything. I'm really not carrying anything like a gun here. Or rather, I told you already that I'm a student in Japan. Please listen to what people said seriously. I'm not an assassin, that's why I don't bring any gun!」

Mr. K was an assassin that would corner all his targets into death with one shot to the head and one shot to the heart no matter who they were……. Vanessa was making a complicated expression, and not just her but Emily too.

Vanessa wordlessly approached Kousuke and began to pat all over his body. It seemed that she was performing a body check to confirm that he really wasn't carrying gun. Kousuke felt flurried inside his heart with the body touch that came from a pretty onee-san. For some reason Emily was hiding her eyes with both her hands saying「A, a, you even touch that kind of place!?」while in a cliched act she was peeking from her finger gaps.

「……You are really not bringing anything.」

「That's why, I told you that already.」

Vanessa took a step back while looking somewhat astonished. She made a difficult expression for some reason then she shook her head.

「I understand. You must have some kind of circumstance. I won't pursue it any deeper.」

「Oi, you. What are you doing convincing yourself like that as though assuming that I'm usually carrying it. I'm telling you that I'm never carrying something like that.」

「However, thinking of from here on, you also cannot be unarmed like that. I don't know what you are usually using, but please carry mine if you don't mind something like this.」

「……Like that it suddenly appear, this unnaturally natural disregard like I'm not here. I, know it. That on earth there is also an evil god like Ehito, and I caught his eyes when I was born.」

Kousuke made a dry smile at Vanessa who was giving him recommendation「Would you like Glock? Or would you like Beretta? Or else, would you like Desert Eagle?」while he averted his gaze.

「No, I don't need gun. It's meaningless even if I carry one. Firing them, well, I got experience before, but I couldn't hit anything at all with it. It's also dangerous. Seriously, that guy, just what kind of skill he got.」

It went without saying just who was "that guy" referred to. Kousuke recalled the time when he asked to be allowed to shoot a gun half playing around and he shook his head from the bad memory. After all at that time he got his face struck by the gun due to recoil, then the bullet that should be flying forward miraculously ricocheted and pierced his own buttock, the used cartridge that flew out in piping hot state entered into his clothes, and then when he tried to fire again and pulled the trigger, the trigger couldn't be pulled, but the moment he released his shooting stance to look for the cause, the gun discharged accidentally and it almost blew away his son on his crotch……

If there was a god of gun, then there was no doubt that he hated Kousuke as though Kousuke had killed his parents. Even that demon king warned him「You, don't carry a gun anymore. ……You are going to die, by self-explosion」with an expression that was a mix of fear and pity.

The confusion of Emily and Vanessa who didn't know about that circumstance was increasingly getting deeper. An assassin that wasn't carrying gun and made disgusted expression from the bottom of his heart when he saw a gun……. The words of Kousuke「I'm not Mr. K」raised its head high inside the two. However, at the same time, his confidence words「I'll become your strength」and his accomplishment of enabling them to escape before this forcefully pressed down that raising head with a single push.

Perhaps in subconscious level they were simply wasn't thinking that Kousuke wasn't Mr. K. If Kousuke wasn't Mr. K, then that meant that at that time, there didn't appear anyone that could save Vanessa and Emily who were surrounded by Kimberly's group, and that meant they didn't obtain the cooperation of the real Mr. K.

No matter how skilled Vanessa was, but she was someone who was still in the

realm of newcomer, on top of that she lost all her reliable allies because of other ally betrayal. And in this situation where the organization she should rely itself was suspicious, she was also chased after by an organization of unknown scale. If in this kind of time what she thought as a trump card was actually just a throwaway card, then there was no way she would want to recognize that even though she understood that being optimistic was taboo in this line of work.

Kousuke put aside the bewilderment of Vanessa and Emily who were like that and spoke indifferently.

「Well, it will be fine. No matter what happen, I'll manage somehow. Rather than that, let's get going if you are finished with the preparation. Emily's house is really far from here right?」

Emily and Vanessa looked at each other's face after that urging from Kousuke to depart. Their bafflement still hadn't disappeared, but seeing Kousuke who declared that he had no problem being unarmed even though he understood that their opponent was an armed group, they decided to postpone their question for the moment. Or rather, it could also be said that they had no choice other than betting that Kousuke was the real Mr. K.

They had talked with each other last night, and they concluded that first they would head toward Emily's parents first. Securing and sheltering Emily's parents who were her weak point was an indispensable matter that had to be prioritized first.

However, Emily's home was a long way from their current position. It would take more than half a day using car. They would have to evade places with high possibility of being monitored like highway and so on. In that case, they would reach the destination around evening if they took taking rest into consideration even if they were taking their meal inside car.

「……You're right. My equipment is in order. Let's depart.」

「Okay. ……But, before that tell me. Vanessa, why are you bringing comic along?」

Vanessa excitedly finished her preparation, and then she returned the lovely secret bookshelves and secret bed back to normal. While she was at it, she nonchalantly pulled out several volumes of comic from the bookshelves. One she

put into her suits' inside pocket, and the other were stored into the rucksack. Seeing that, Emily asked with her eyes twitching.

Vanessa's expression went puzzled as though to say「Eh? You don't get it?」. Both Kousuke and Emily got plainly irritated.

「Even if you asked me why……. After this, we will chanllenge an extremely difficult situation. So to speak, it's like a soldier heading to the front line.」

「Well, perhaps it's something like that……」

「Isn't that right? Then, it's normal to bring along comic right?」

「Why does it become like that!? I don't understand your thought process!」

Emily made a splendid retort at that incomprehensible logic. Seeing Emily like that, Vanessa made an expression that irritated Emily, as though she was a teacher facing a dim-witted student, and then she explained carefully and thoroughly.

「Listen, Doctor Grant. In movie or film, have you seen a scene when a soldier head to battlefield inside car or helicopter, they will take out bible and pray?」

「Ri, right. I've seen something like that before. ……Wait a second, in other words, those comics……」

「Yes. They are my bible.」

「Apologize to god! Apologize to the believer of Christianity!」

Emily howled. Grant family was also a believer more or less. And so, she couldn't help to make retort when someone talked as though bible and comic had same status.

Vanessa snorted「Fuh」at that retort mixed with protest from Emily and ignored it.「Why did you snort just now!?」Emily's cat eyes glared fiercely once more while she raised her voice, but Vanessa who was in perfect form left the room without breaking her attitude that seemed to say「The doctor is also still young huh」.

「……Shura no ○, Gra○ler Ba○, and then Na○to, to treat them as bible like that. In a sense, perhaps this is also Japan's karma.」(TN: Shura no Mon, Grappler Baki, Naruto)

Emily rushed after Vanessa with her side tail swinging wildly while saying「Hey wait-」. Kousuke was getting a bit of faraway look when he saw the title the comics that Vanessa brought before he followed behind them.

Part 3

The sun went down to the west. By the time the sky was starting to be colored vibrantly with orange, the car Vanessa was driving was running through a road that was extending straight forward as though the car was gliding.

Inside the car, Emily and Kousuke was satisfying their stomach with burger and fried potato they purchased from a certain famous restaurant that they visited midway.

「……Emily, what's the matter?」

Kousuke suddenly asked. Emily was eating her fried potato bit by bit like a hamster while her gaze was directed outside the window. She then turned her gaze at Kousuke.

「What do you mean?」

「No, it looks like you are getting faraway look there. You are tired?」

「Aa~, no. I'm fine. It's just, I'm really familiar, with this area. Seeing this, it feels that I really have come home. But, even though I had a lot of story to share when I went home before, but this time……something like that.」

It seemed that when she compared the current situation with the time when she went home previously, it caused a deep and heavy emotion to stir up her heart. Just like how the orange color of setting sun aroused loneliness in people without reason, it seemed that Emily's heart was also aroused with indescribable feeling by the scenery of her home town and the orange color of the burning sky.

Kousuke who knew about the gruesome circumstances Emily went through in these few days, hesitated about what to say back. He thought that he should say something, but he could only let his gaze wandered unable to find any good words. In this time, he became envious of a certain agitator who could spun words smoothly.

Emily made a faint smile at Kousuke who was in such a state. She then gulped

up the drink in her hand in one go before she said one more time「I'm fine」.

Vanessa who was watching through the rearview mirror at the exchange between the two at the backseat, opened her mouth tactfully, as though to be the replacement of Kousuke.

「Excuse me, Doctor Grant……」

「Geez. Vanessa too, don't worry about me. I told you I'm fine.」

「No, I really cannot believe that. Doctor Grant. What is called limit, is something that will come faster than what we thought.」

Vanessa's unexpectedly serious expression could be seen through the rearview mirror. Emily's words unconsciously got caught in her throat. Kousuke was thinking「As expected from an agent of the security bureau. She also know various things about how to care to a person who is dragged into a case」while sending her admiring gaze——

「Is your urinary bladder, really okay?」

「What kind of thing you are worrying about there!?」

Of course, it was a worry about the dignity of the peeing girl Emily-chan.

「At the restaurant just now, and also at the gasoline station before that, I noticed that Doctor Grant didn't go to toilet. And yet, you were drinking two large size coke and coffee. I'm extremely worried whether you will get more wound like this.」

「Tha, tha tha tha, that's-」

「However, I cannot believe that Doctor Grant who has already done a severe failure for twice already will be so easy-goingly take an optimistic action like this. Doctor Grant……」

「Wha, whattt」

Emily was already turning small into half her original size while her wariness and shame were in full display. Vanessa's eyes shined glaringly through the rearview mirror at such Emily.

「By any chance, were you awakened?」

「Wha, what does that mean?」

The pure Emily-chan couldn't grasp the meaning of that question. Of course the young man beside her grasped the meaning. Vanessa asked with determination.

「To the pleasure of urination.」

「ARE YOU IDIOTTT————!! There is no way I'm awakened to something like that!! Do you want to make me into pervert!?」

World Unknown to Emily Part 2. There was no way anyone would feel good from wetting their pant in public! If there was anyone like that, then that person was a pervert without doubt!

Of course, there was no way Emily had awakened to overly special pleasure like that. And so, Emily turned at Kousuke with a fretful expression and pleaded「That's wrong! That's completely wrong! I'm not that kind of pervert! Believe me, Kousuke-」.

「Ca, calm down. It, it's not like I'm thinking that you are a pervert or anything.」

「Really? Really, really? Kousuke is——」

Emily was about to say something. However, carrying out a beautiful intercept at that timing was how Vanessa Paradis roll.

「So Doctor Grant isn't awakened to that……it's unfortunate for Mr. K isn't it?」

「There ain't no way that's true! Don't make me into a pervert so naturally like that!」

「Ko, Ko Ko, Kousuke!? Yo, you are aiming for my "that"? You are happier if I'm a pervert!? That……that's troubling for me!」

「There is no way that's true! Why are you feeling a bit troubled like that!? What do you mean troubling!? You need to deny strongly there at all cost!」

Chaos maker Vanessa. She displayed that ability of hers without sparing any effort, driving Kousuke and Emily into the crucible of bewilderment!

「Fumu. Great difficulty is waiting ahead for us. It's better to be energetic like

this. Both of you are full with fighting spirit there.」

「You, just shut up already!!」

「You, shut up already!!」

The retort of Kousuke and Emily burst out in harmony. Vanessa made an expression that seemed to say「Incomprehensible」by herself.

Giving up on Vanessa who was scattering word bombs so naturally like that, Emily was making justification desperately at Kousuke, while Kousuke was desperately soothing down Emily. During that time the scenery of the surrounding was starting to change entirely.

They entered into the town. There was high construction, but most buildings were giving off retro atmosphere.

「Vanessa. Follow this path to go across the town center and head to the north. A river will come into view after some time. There is also a restaurant that makes delicious pie nearby there. You will understand right away because they have cute signboard.」

「Roger. This is the first time I come here but……this is quite the beautiful townscape.」

There was chic building with brick color, and there was also glass building. But, those two types of building didn't mutually harm the scenery. It was as though the new thing and the old thing accepted each other, giving anyone who watched a gentle impression.

In this downtown at the time where the sun was mostly sinking, the local people had calm expression. They were strolling with relaxed pace on the stone paving while holding bag that was stuffed with food. The sight had a comfortable impression where they could slowly feel the flow of time.

And that impression became even more striking when they left the town center and entered the suburb. There was more greenery, houses in the same color and same style lined up in order, forming similar shape of shadow. Somehow, it felt like even the light of sunset also became gentle.

Vanessa ran the car following Emily's direction. In contrast with Emily who was

somewhat restless with this long time homecoming, Kousuke was tensing his body in moderation. Of course, he was considering the possibility of an ambush by other force waiting for them.

But, in contrast with his expectation, he couldn't find anything like black car or the like parking nearby. They could see children noisily playing with lot of energy, and the figures of fathers, mothers urging them to return home soon with wry smile. There wasn't any sign of conflict, the area really looked peaceful.

「Ah, over there. That house with white van parked! The light is on. It looks like father and others are home.」

Emily leaked out a relieved sigh. The white van was the car Emily's father, Carl owned. It was a car that was bought as replacement a few years ago so that the grandmother, Syla who was using wheelchair could also ride car. They still hadn't finished paying the loan for this car. There was also a blue light motor vehicle parked beside it. That was the car of the mother Sophie.

Vanessa stopped the car in front of the house. Emily was going to rush out right away, but Vanessa halted her back. And then, Vanessa observed the surrounding's situation carefully from inside the car while sliding out her gun from her breast pocket.

「Let's be careful. I'll stress this to you Doctor Grant, please don't separate from me no matter what.」

「Ye, yes. I understand.」

Vanessa's hand reached the engine key and she glanced at Kousuke. Kousuke's usual light atmosphere disappeared and he looked around with serious gaze, but before long his expression turned perplexed.

「Mr. K. What's the matter? Do you see any sign of something wrong?」

「……No, there is nothing wrong. There is none but……that's exactly why it feels wrong.」

「? What do you mean by that?」

Kousuke didn't answer right away at Vanessa's question. He stared for a while at the direction of the house. Emily's expression was tinged with shadow of

anxiety seeing Kousuke who didn't seem normal. Endo shook his head and then he spoke with reservation in consideration of Emily.

「……Inside the house, there is no sign of people.」

「Eh?」

Emily tilted her head. Her parents' cars were parked, the lighting inside the house was also turned on. Those were the proof that the family was home. Despite so, there wasn't anyone inside. A bad premonition bloated up inside her heart.

On the other hand, Vanessa raised one of her eyebrows and her expression turned dubious. The "sign" that Vanessa mentioned before was something like any traces of fighting, or if there anyone peeking at them from the cover of building somewhere, or parking cars that looked out of place with this neighborhood, she meant about "human trace" that was visible to eye like that.

Just how did he know about inside the house that was out of sight…….

「Anyway, we cannot do anything from here. Let's try to enter. Perhaps they are only going outside a bit at the neighborhood.」

「Ri, right. Surely, it's like that.」

Kousuke noticed the anxious expression of Emily and so he urged them to quickly act. And then, he hurriedly got out of the car to move in the lead. Vanessa buried her doubt inside her chest from that action of Kousuke.

They crossed the lawn that was well maintained, went up the slope that was still looking like new from the renovation so that it could be passed through using wheelchair, and they arrived in front of the entrance.

Emily sounded the chime. And then she called「Father! Mother! Grandma! This is Emily! You there?」. However, as though to prove the correctness of Kousuke's words, there wasn't any reply coming from inside the house.

Emily too out a key of the house from her pouch, thinking that the door was surely locked if there wasn't anyone home. And then, she put in the key and was about to open the door……

「E, eh?」

The door wasn't locked right from the start. Even though this was a quiet neighborhood, it was impossible for the whole family to be out leaving the home not locked. Emily's cheeks spasmed.

「Father! Mother! This is me! You aren't here!? Grandma! Where are you!?」

「Doctor Grant! Calm down!」

Emily opened the door loudly and stepped into the house without being unable to contain herself. Vanessa hurriedly stopped Emily who was like that.

However, Vanessa's warning didn't enter Emily's ears. Her heart that was thinking of her family was in disarray from the abnormal condition of the house. She desperately supported her heart that felt like it would be crushed under unease and terror while running around the house. She did that while calling at her family. She wanted to say her usual "I'm home". She wanted to hear "Welcome home".

However, whether it was in the bright living room, whether it was in the kitchen where her mother was usually standing wearing her apron, whether in the bathroom, or in the second floor's bedroom, or even in Emily's room, there wasn't anyone at all.

「It, it must be a mistake. Everyone, they must be going out for a bit right now. Tha, that's right. Surely, they are going to Mr. McBurney's place, or at Aunt Hannah's place.」

「Emily.」

「Wait, okay. I'll call them back right away. And then, I'll properly introduce Vanessa and Kousuke to them——」

「Emily Grant!」

「-」

Emily was about to go out of the house with a dry smile. But Kousuke called her name with a strong tone to stop her. Emily twitched and stood still before turning around with a stiff movement like a machine that hadn't been oiled.

Emily's eyes were catching sight of Kousuke taking up a table that was put on the living room's table. It was something that Emily overlooked before. But, that

item was definitely not Grant family's property.

The reason was,

「It's addressed, to me……」

Yes, the name of Vanessa Paradis was displayed on the screen of the tablet that was left in turned on state. There was no way Emily's family who didn't know about Vanessa's existence could prepare something like that.

In other words, this home was entered just a few hours ago, by someone other than Grant family members, someone who knew about Vanessa……

Emily's face went white. Her body unconsciously staggered unsteadily. Kousuki swiftly supported her.

Urged by Kousuke's gaze, Vanessa touched the tablet.

Then, the table projected the image of a room somewhere. The room didn't look particularly desolate, it was a normal room. There was a sofa with cloth cover and a wooden table. There was no one there. It seemed that the tablet was just put in place to take video.

But, a beat later, the door at the corner of the camera opened. What entered from that door were a wheelchair, and an elderly woman sitting on it. And then, a man past forty that looked somewhat weak-willed was pushing on that wheelchair. A woman about the same age was holding on the hand of that man while looking around restlessly.

「-, grandma-, father-, mother-」

Emily's voice echoed like a shout.

The people in the video didn't look like they would be harmed. However, from their expression and gesture, it seemed that were taken away without really knowing anything. However, even so it still couldn't make Emily who was watching the video to have a peace of mind. Emily looked at her kidnapped family and powerlessly fell down.

And then, the video cut off and the display became pure black. And yet when they thought that was it, slowly an image of a clock that displayed the time of a few hours from now appeared, next, a map from aerial photograph was starting

to get displayed. It was a show that was like the embodiment of the bad taste of the maker.

「That place……looks like a warehouse district. They are screwing around.」

Vanessa spat out those words. Beside her, Emily was turning small by hugging her knees and head. She was getting flashback of the chain of events that should be called as her trauma, where she lost her important people.

Perhaps, she would also lose her family……that terror pushed aside the mission she was entrusted from her big brothers and sisters, and pushed her off into an abyss of terror and despair. She wanted to cry while begging, that she would listen to whatever they say, so please don't hurt my family.

A voice spoke to such Emily. That voice was soft yet harsh, warm yet sharp, that kind of voice.

「Emily, it will be fine. I don't know who did this, but there is no sign of struggle at your house, and there is no sign of violence on your family. Those guys want Emily's cooperation, so even though they can use your family to threaten you, they cannot hurt them that easily. That's because they understand, doing that will only push Emily past despair and into hostility.」

「Kousu, ke.」

Kousuke gently took the hand of Emily who was holding her head and softly pushed it down.

「Emily knows, the pain of being kept alive and let escape alone, and having something entrusted to you. If you stop here, then, surely the same thing will happen again.」

「No, I don't want that! Something like that, again-」

Emily raised her voice with her expression distorted in tears. Kousuke nodded「Right?」, then this time she pulled up her hand and made her stood.

「——"If there is a time where you must muster your all for once in your life, then now is exactly that time. Right now, in this time, blaze your soul"」

「Eh?」

「That's a second-hand telling from a friend. But, in the past, when I was going

through crushing defeat, I was able to stand up one more time from these words. I was able to risk my whole body and soul against bunches of monster as my opponent. Thanks to that, I can be here right now.」

「Kousuke……」

Emily lost her words. That was just how “heavy” the words of Kousuke just now. They reverberated at the deepest depth of her weak heart profoundly.

Kousuke’s sharp eye glint that looked like a veteran warrior pierced straight through Emily.

「For Emily Grant, surely right now is exactly the time to blaze your soul. Brace your legs, grit your teeth, and then yell until your lung burst. “Who is going to do anything that you say! Don’t look down on me, you shitty bastard!” Like that.」

Those were passionate words like a boiling magma. Kousuke’s gleaming eyes were still piercing through Emily.

Therefore, there was only one reply Emily could make.

「Yeah. Yeah!」

Her soul that almost sunk into the swamp of despair, now, it blazed up once more. Emily strongly clasped back the hand of Kousuke that was clasping her hand.

「Kousuke, will also lend me your strength right?」

「Yeah. That was what I told you. I’ll become your strength. Emily’s family, let’s save them for sure.」

Emily’s eyes shined like a starry sky. The distance between the two was so close they could feel each other’s breathing. It was as though that was the current distance between their heart——

「……Should I read the mood and go outside? Or else, should I cut in saying “Don’t forget me, pleazeee”? That is the question.」

Vanessa muttered.

It went without saying how Emily leaped back from Kousuke like a nimble cat. And then, it also went without saying how she turned small from shame when

she recalled how she was super close with a boy just now.

Part 4

In a time when the curtain of night had fallen completely, the darkness of night of a warehouse district at the outskirt of town was cut apart by a car's headlight. The car that was carefully advancing slow and quiet soon entered a spot that was surrounded from four directions by tall buildings.

The headlight illuminated a black car ahead.

Vanessa, Emily, and then Kousuke got down from the car with the headlight still turned on. Vanessa walked at the front with Kousuke and Emily following behind. Emily was cluthing the sleeve of Kousuke's clothes tightly.

The black car at the opposite side turned on its headlight as though to oppose their side. A person got down from the black car in front of the vigilant Vanessa. The person's figure wasn't clear due to the backlight's backlighting, but Vanessa could make it out vaguely.

And then she thought.「Aa, so it's like that just as expected」. At the same time, she also thought「It will still be better if it's Kimberly」.

「Agent Paradis. You really have put us into much trouble. By all rights you should get a disciplinary discharge you know?」

That figure walked with clopping footsteps and showed themselves. It was a reality that if possible Vanessa wanted to deny.

Chief of national security bureau——Sharon Magdanese, it was this person who appeared.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

The next update is planned at 6 P.M Saturday too, desu.

Arifureta Chapter 207

Arifureta Extra Compilation – From Abyssgate Lord of The World

Are You Prepared?

「How do you do, Doctor Grant. I am Sharon Magdanese, the person who is entrusted with the chief position of national security bureau. I will bring you into a safe protected place. Now, this way.」

Chief Magdanese prompted as though it was only natural that the situation went like that. In the middle of where the headlights of the two car collided against each other in rivalry, the door of the black car for the backseat opened, from there the analyst Allen Parker and one other male agent climbed down.

Allen was spreading both his hands widely in an exaggerated posture, as though to say「Noow, you were scared right? Jump into my chest!」. Although for some reason the tip of his nose had a large gauze affixed there, he cut a really painful figure, or a stupid one.

「What do you mean “protection”! How dare you brazenly say that after kidnapping my family-」

The gesture that was too impudent caused Emily’s boiling point to be reached instantly. By all rights she should behave modestly in consideration of her family’s well-being, but right now she could depend on a reliably boy regarding that. Emily was able to honestly raise her voice in anger that she even surprised herself.

Chief Magdanese showed a really troubled bitter smile at Emilly who was like that.

「Doctor Grant, it seems that you are under a really great misunderstanding. There is no way that we the people of security bureau will do anything like a kidnapping. We are only safeguarding everyone of the Grant family.」

Chief Magdanese talked with a tone and attitude as though she was admonishing a child that was throwing tantrum toward Emily who reflexively was going to object.

She meant to say, that they secured Grant family in order to protect them from the organization that annihilated Hughes and other agents of security bureau. The tablet that they left behind would only react to Vanessa's fingerprint, without her other people wouldn't be able to grasp the information in it. It was valid for them to be at the side of Grant family to make contact with Vanessa and Emily who cut off contact with the bureau. In the first place the bureau had approved the adoption of the protection program, so they had planned to move in order to take them into protection since the beginning.

「Bu, but……」

Emily was at a loss for words after receiving the logical explanation. Vanessa took a step forward in place of such Emily.

「Chief, can I ask a question?」

「Refrain yourself agent Paradis. Your skill in protecting Doctor Grant by yourself is worthy of evaluation, but you are acting too arbitrarily on your own. Even though there was the attack of Warren and others, you should be able to get in contact with us more frequently.」

The knife-like words of Chief Magdanese cut off any argument with a single stroke. Her eye glint was also pressuring with several times the intensity compared to the usual. However, Vanessa who normally would falter in panic inside her heart against this instead took a further step forward and displayed her will with action.

「……Do you understand, what are you doing right now?」

「Yes. I understand very well. Until my question is answered, I won't lower down this gun.」

Yes, Vanessa was aiming a gun at Chief Magdanese. Her gaze was sharp and showed that she wouldn't draw back even against Chief Magdanese. Her will of determination was emitted from her whole body. Allen whistled「Hyuu~」behind Chief Magdanese in admiration. The other agent also gulped down his saliva.

「This won't end with just disciplinary dismissal.」

「I'm resolved for that.」

Chief Magdanese stared fixedly at Vanessa for a while, and then she sighed a bit. It was unclear what kind of meaning that sigh had……. A complicated expression flashed briefly on Chief Magdanese's face while she urged Vanessa to continue with her gaze.

Vanessa opened her mouth with her gun still aimed vigilantly.

「Why are you, the chief herself is in this kind of place?」

「I lost five agents that I sent to execute the protection program, where one of them is that Hughes. And then, the culprit is also an agent from security bureau……if this is leaked outside, surely the media will be jumping wildly in joy. Furthermore, seeing how this is related to【Berserk Case】that greatly agitated the world then it will be all the more true. This case is already the biggest case even among the cases that security bureau is currently facing.」

「Are you saying, that it's not strange for you yourself to come out?」

「Naturally. To say nothing of how we currently don't know how many people there are inside the bureau that are like Warren, or, more accurately those under the patronage of the organization behind Warren. The optimal solution is for me to move myself.」

That explanation had consistency. There was double agent coming out from the bureau, on top of that there wasn't any time to clean up the organization right now, under such situations it could rather be said that it was a heroic decision for the top herself to take action accompanied by her few trusted subordinates.

Chief Magdanese sent Vanessa a cold gaze that said「Finished already?」, however Vanessa didn't avert her gun even now.

「Then, one more question. What caused Berserk to be scattered in the research building was because of the dispute between Kimberly against someone to contest the possession of【Berserk】. According to what Kimberly said, that someone was a skilled person in the level that even he couldn't match.」

「……And?」

「An organization that possess an operator skilled enough to handle Kimberly whose combat ability is high even in security bureau, it knows about the

existence of【Berserk】, and the operator came to steal it at that timing. And then, naturally that operator belong to an organization that is different from Kimberly's. There is only one organization that I know that fulfill all those conditions.」

「Are you insinuating that I ordered for【Berserk】's usurpation?」

「Am I wrong? Kimberly who attacked me hinted of that possibility.」

Chief Magdanese shrugged with an expression that seemed to say how worthless this talk was.

「Don't tell me, that you are accepting the words of a betrayer seriously? If that's actually the case, then I can only doubt your qualification as an agent.」

「Putting aside my qualification, there is no doubt that you chief is under suspicion of ordering the attack. Please answer. Was it you chief, the one that gave the order to steal【Berserk】?」

Vanessa's gaze pierced Chief Magdanese through her gun's aim. From the beginning Vanessa didn't think that she would receive honest answer. Therefore, with the determination to challenge her superior who should be regarded as a monster that had shouldered a bureau of Britain for many years until now, she concentrated to fathom the truth or lies.

But, as expected from the living legend who shouldered the national security, she wasn't someone common. Her face didn't change a single color even against Vanessa's sharp gaze and the fact that a gun muzzle was pointed at her. To the end she opened her mouth with naturalness, it even made anyone who heard her voice to feel her exasperation as though she was facing a problem child that wasn't obedient.

「The answer, is No.」

「……Is that, the truth?」

「Proving something that I haven't done is like proving that devil exist. If you are telling me to show the proof, then you have no more qualification to introduce yourself as the bureau agent. In the first place, why do you think that I have to the order to steal【Berserk】?」

Certainly, for the security bureau that didn't know how Emily and others planned to escape, it was a done deal that Emily and others would come to them. Even if the chief didn't intentionally order the stealing, the security bureau should be able to obtain everything, whether it was the【Berserk】, and the creator Emily, and also the antidote that Emily would create.

Therefore, it could be said that Chief Magdanese had no need to secure【Berserk】at that kind of timing.

The sources of Vanessa's doubt were all circumstantial evidences, her own instinct was also playing a large part in it. In the end, Vanessa who was self-aware of that could only attempt to thrust all those facts before the chief to try to shake her and then saw through the chief with her own eyes.

Vanessa couldn't say anything back. She focused her eyes to try to see through the truth, but Chief Magdanese wasn't shaken even for a bit. Vanessa was starting to doubt her own instinct……could it be, that the first attack was really caused by a completely different organization?

「Are you finished with your question? Then, Vanessa Paradis, you will need to be restrained. Don't tell me, that you are thinking you will be able to continue in your post after pointing a gun like that to me?」

「That's……」

Chief Magdanese raised one of her hand. The agent that was standing by beside the black car walked forward wordlessly. It appeared that he planned to restrain Vanessa.

Emily raised her voice seeing that.

「Wait! Vanessa did that only for my sake! Even until now, she has been protecting me all this time! That's why——」

However, that pleading was silenced forcefully by Chief Magdanese's eye glint.

「……Doctor Grant. I wish you can stop with your childish selfishness too. Have you thought about how many sacrifices that appeared in this case you are involved with?」

「-, that's……」

「You are a prodigy aren't you? Well, perhaps that is only limited to a specific field but……I wish you can have the discernment to know right from wrong when it's actually necessary. I have the authority to have you restrained as the person who created【Berserk】and make you create the antidote. After all this is a situation that threaten the security of the country. But, in that case the protection of your family won't be included in it you know?」

「Such thing-. Didn't you say, that you are giving safeguarding them properly——」

「Yes, that's because of our good will.」

In other words she meant, that if Emily planned to complicate this case, then the security bureau wouldn't safeguard Grant family. And then, Chief Magdanese would restrain Emily with the authority possessed by national security bureau and forced her to research the antidote. Most likely, even if Emily took this matter to the court, it wouldn't go through. After all, this was a case that threatened the national security just like Chief Magdanese said. And Emily wasn't a third party in this, but she was literally the origin of the case.

Vanessa lowered down her gun. Her instinct was still ringing the alarm bell loudly in doubt of the security bureau. However, there wasn't any hole in Chief Magdanese's logic. Shea also couldn't detect any sign of lying. And then, even Emily was also feeling that she was only being outrageously selfish after hearing Chief Magdanese's words, her shoulders dropped. Her anger deflated when she was told that her family wasn't kidnapped or anything.

Chief Magdanese sighed as though to say how troublesome all of these were and she was about to turn around. In her place, the agent walked forward to restrain Vanessa and took Emily into custody.

There, a voice suddenly came into hearing.

「Don't you think it's better for you if you read up again what is the meaning of the words good will in dictionary?」

It was an aloof voice that didn't match the place. Even though the voice wasn't raised too loudly, but it resounded with extreme clarity.

Every single people in that place were taken aback without exception. Vanessa,

and Emily who was emotionally standing beside her quickly turned around so fast their momentum could make whoosh sound.

「……That reaction. That hurts you know. Why are you all looking like『WHO-!?』like that? Even Emily, even though you were holding on my sleeve until just now.」

Kousuke twisted his lips into shape of 'へ' in dissatisfaction. Vanessa and Emily averted their gaze awkwardly. There was no way they could say that they had completely taken off their mind from Kousuke who was right behind them and they were plainly shocked just now. Although, Kousuke had completely seen through that already from their reaction.

「……Who are you? It seemed that you were hiding inside the car?」

「No, no, I got down the car together with Emily there! When you were questioned by Vanessa-san, I was also standing normally behind her!」

「……」

Chief Magdanese's dubious expression! Kousuke was wounded further! But, he was used to it so he was fine!

「Answer the question.」

For now Chief Magdanese ignored Kousuke's retort and repeated her question. Kousuke simply ignored her order and replied back with a really "nice smile (complete with vein on the forehead)".

「It doesn't matter who I am right? Rather than that, stop lining up pretentious statements and bring Emily's family here right away. No matter what you are going to talk about, everything will only start after you do that, right?」

「A foreigner boy like you, do you know who you are talking——」

A cold air that was incomparable with before struck from Chief Magdanese. But, even when Vanessa was reflexively sweating coldly from that, Kousuke only deflected it away in stride. So what if she was an authority of a country. Compared to the god apostles that were smeared with inhuman killing intent or the pressure of the demon king that was lacking in even a speck of mercy, this woman looked like a puppy making a menacing look.

「Something like the words of someone who was behaving worthlessly to fan up the talking partner's anxiety, no matter how consistent it sounded like, it cannot be trusted at all.」

「Fanning up anxiety?」

Chief Magdanese tilted her head as though she didn't know what he was talking about. Seeing that caused Kousuke to replace his expression into a cold one.

「Wasn't that what you did? What the hell with that message in the tablet. Don't tell me that it was just for keeping it a secret from other people. Stop it already with the stupid excuse. After all if you want to make contact with Vanessa-san then there are so many other ways to do that.」

They could simply leave behind a single cellphone that was filled with only one contact number to call at. There were many ways to make Vanessa to make contact with the bureau. Even if the one that made the contact wasn't Vanessa, then that could also be a chance to investigate just who they were facing against. There wasn't any need to expressly leave behind the video recording of Emily's family in that way.

They were leaving that kind of message, they were taking that kind of method was in order to carve a message in Emily's subconscious. That if they felt like it, then they could do anything they liked to her family. That they were still safe *for now.* All those was to make it easier for the scale in Emily's heart to tilt to one way when she was approached with option that was putting on the face of protection. To instill into her what was the pecking order in their relationship.

Kousuke understood that, he understood just how much Emily was worrying for her family, he had already heard from her of her feeling that didn't want to lose her important people anymore for the second time.

Those were why, the voltage of Kousuke's anger was rising up without stopping.

「Even now you are acting like that. You dare putting on air as though everything is Emily's fault. The one that caused this case the first time, and then everything after that, all those, they are all the fault of the stupid idiots who got their eyes blinded by greed. The scramble for that thing that was created

accidentally and even dragged in the important people of this child, those are the doing of some other stupid idiots somewhere. Don't get mistaken here. This child is the victim, not the perpetrator.」

Of course, she had the responsibility as the creator of【Berserk】. That was why Emily was here. She even had the option to hold her head down and turned small, and waited until everything was over like that. But, she resolved herself, that there were things entrusted to her, that there were things that she had to do no matter what, and so she was standing here.

「She is still sixteen you know? And yet, she lost her important people that were like family to her, and she was also not allowed to meet her blood-related family……and against a child like that, here you are fanning up her anxiety and guilt. I absolutely cannot trust someone like that.」

「……」

Kousuke's aloof words were mixed with anger in them. It was unthinkable that this was the man that was forgotten even by Vanessa and Emily until just now. Something that couldn't be ignored by any means was oozing out from him. Chief Magdanese was staying quiet, however her body was facing straight toward Kousuke. That attitude of hers was the proof of the existence of that unidentified pressure.

Kousuke walked forward passing through Vanessa and Emily. And then, he stopped walking when he reached in the middle between Chief Magdanese and Vanessa, and then he asked without looking back.

「Hey, Vanessa-san, what is your instinct is telling you? Who cares about logic. Your heart that has been protecting Emily wholeheartedly until now in any kind of situation no matter what anyone said to you, what is it telling you now about that woman?」

Vanessa's gaze wandered around. However, even that was only for a moment. She responded with a cold expression, as though to cut off her hesitation.

「My instinct says, that she is black.」

「Isn't that right. I also think so.」

Kousuke's gaze shifted quietly from Chief Magdanese and he casted his gaze to

behind her.

「In the first place, just what is the woman who was sending her shitty subordinate, one that pointed his gun at Vanessa when we escaped from the hotel, is saying at this late hour?」

Kousuke's gaze flowed smoothly toward Allen.

「Eh, m, me? What are you, saying so suddenly……I'm just a humble analyst——」

「Don't play dumb, gauze man. Is that your true face? Your disguise is pretty good. But, the scar from my ashtray attack isn't something that can be treated somehow right away isn't it?」

「I really don't understand what are you talking……」

「I'm not merely bluffing or just guessing. I remembered your presence. That's why, the hoodlum standing in our way that time, that was unmistakably you.」

The analyst with gauze on his nose, Allen Parker's gaze was wandering around in bewilderment. He was muttering「Oh maann, really, what is this about……」, but Kousuke lost interest already and he took off his gaze from Allen. Behind Kousuke, Vanessa believed Kousuke's words and now she was making a questioning face, about why was a mere analyst was present in that hotel.

Chief Magdanese sighed once more.

「……And, you cannot believe me, so then what will you do? As you know, the organization of Kimberly will be chasing after Doctor Grant mercilessly. They won't even care how many sacrifices will turn up from the surrounding.」

She implicitly declared that in the end, they had no choice but to obey the security bureau. Normally that was how it would be. An organization could only be opposed by another organization. That was the reason why Vanessa was trying to ascertain the true motive of the chief.

Just what could one agent and one foreigner boy do only by valiantly speaking sharply?

「I'll protect her then.」

「……What did you say?」

Chief Magdanese reflexively asked back after she heard those words that were said really casually. That was natural. Even though the speaker was a boy from Japan that was often said to be peace idiot country, but that big talk was really far away from reality. There was a limit even in being out of place.

However, Kousuke didn't show even a speck of shame or looking like he was drunk with the situation, he continued his words matter-of-factly.

「I said that there isn't any problem. It's fine if Emily carried out her duty through the path that she decided herself. Together with her family. Of course, the best thing would be if the security bureau "respectably" give her protection without doing any messing around intervention. Even if we cannot obtain the backing of you guys, there will be no problem. It doesn't matter, I won't let anyone be a nuisance. Whether it's Emily, or her family, I'll protect them with my all.」

「……It seems that you are getting in a little high spirits after experiencing boy-meets-girl. I wonder if you have been watching movie too much?」

Behind Kousuke, a girl was pressing on her chest saying「hauu-」as though she was shot through by something. Chief Magdanese gave that a passing glance with an exasperated look on her face. Seeing that, Vanessa objected with a self-assured gait.

「Chief, he isn't a normal boy you know? At the very least, if he become serious then the like of one analyst and one agent won't be his match. In addition, he excelled in information war and can assassinate any kind of opponent. Chief, you are not an exception.」

「……It looks like you evaluate him really highly, Paradis. And so? This boy who no matter how I see it is nothing more than a dreaming boy that misunderstand himself as a main character, who are you saying he is?」

Vanessa made a smile that while small was clearly a fearless smile, and then she spoke her greatest trump card.

「He is the one, who got his name recorded on the blacklist of the security bureau just from a few years of activity——Mr. K.」

'That's why, don't do anything imprudent. Protect Emily and her family

properly. And when she finished the antidote, dispose all the【Berserk】that currently exist. Promise us that.' Vanessa conveyed that. 'I don't know what kind of ulterior motive the chief has, but concentrate only to resolving this case' She meant.

Vanessa returned threatening words in response of Chief Magdanese's similarly threatening words. For a moment Chief Magdanese showed an expression as though she was looking at a surprising scene, but at the next moment she sniggered.

「……What is so funny?」

Vanessa's gaze sharpened in irritation. Chief Magdanese's shoulders trembled seeing that.

「No, you headed toward the house of Grant family on your own accord, you pointed your gun to me, there are many of your actions that were really self-assured. I was wondering just what was up with that, but to think that the basis of that confidence is "Mr. K" of all thing. Well, though certainly you were contacting Mr. K, so perhaps it's understandable for you to mistake that boy as him.」

「What are you saying——」

「He is not Mr. K.」

Her trump card was laughed at, and in the end it was denied decisively like that. Vanessa became speechless. She was about to argue back just what was the basis of her saying that.

Chief Magdanese showed a gesture as though she was thinking of something for a moment, and then she answered with a gaze as though she was looking at something pitiful.

「Paradis. You see, Mr. K is a member of security bureau.」

「……Eh?」

Vanessa's eyes turned into dot in incomprehension. Toward such Vanessa, Chief Magdanese continued her words slowly and thoroughly as though to grind her hope into dust.

「It's natural that you don't know. He is a staff that is outside the law. ——【JD(John Doe) Agency】. Intelligence bureau and security bureau, these two large organizations of our country oppose the dangerous and disturbing people and organization inside and outside the country. But JD Agency is *a non-existent organization* that extends over these two organizations. The members are all called with alphabet or number.」

「Bu, but, Mr. K, he is an assassin——」

「Yes, that's why I told you didn't I? That it's outside the law, and non-existent.」

Vanessa was speechless. Of course she would. After all the organization she belonged to was carrying out murder outside the boundary of law. It was truly like the world in movie. How darkness was an unavoidable part in a huge organization.

And then, this information that was originally known only to the highest class of leadership other than the chief was now disclosed here, it was in order to break the heart of Vanessa and Emily. In order to convey to the two of them that the bureau wouldn't pull back, they wouldn't let them get away. In order to display the mightiness of state organization.

「It was a surprise that you made contact with Mr. K separated with your contact to the headquarters. Because it was an unthinkable method to be taken by you who are still young with sense of duty and justice more than others even if you usually endeavor to be cool-headed. Although, even though I dispatched him to give back-up to the two of you, for him to be taken out by a passing by ashtray……I wonder if your ability ought to be reassessed, what do you think, Allen——no, agent "K"?」

Chief Magdanese looked behind and stared with a pressuring gaze that even emitted killing intent. Ahead of her gaze, was analyst Allen.

Yes, just as Kousuke said, the man that fainted due to the ashtray throw when they escaped the hotel, and furthermore got his crotch stepped on by Vanessa, was Allen in disguise. At the same time, he was actually Mr. K who received Vanessa's request for back-up. The reason that Mr. K who was supposed to be assassin, agreed to receive the work of being Emily's bodyguard was now said

here.

「The, then, Kousuke, is……」

Beside Vanessa who was astonished from catching a glimpse of the organization's darkness, Emily muttered with trembling eyes.

Allen was walking forward with table in hand while shivering from Chief Magdanese's gaze. He had been operating that tablet all along right after he confirmed Kousuke's presence here, and the result of that seemed to be the answer of Emily's question.

「Chi, chief? Certainly I have been continuously committing failure in these few days, but that's because I'm an assassin, everything other than that is like outside of my specialty, can you see……that's why, what I want to say is, please don't be so angry……」

「Shut up, incompetent.」

「Yes, Ma'am.」

Allen who got the tablet snatched from him dropped his shoulders dejectedly. Chief Magdanese's gaze moved toward the information Allen gathered. There, the face photo of Kousuke that was taken from who know since when and his photo in the airport a few days ago were projected. And then, Kousuke's age and nationality were calculated based from the passenger list and Kousuke's true identity was pinned down.

Even though Allen was calling himself an assassination specialist, but as expected his skill as analyst was super first class. He was famous as an assassin that was strong in information war, but it seemed that fame wasn't merely because he was backed by security bureau.

「Kousuke Endou. Japanese, 18 years old. Born from a really normal family, a really normal high school student. Are you traveling abroad using your winter vacation? ……My, you are one of those "returnees" that agitated the world previously. I see, so you aimlessly traveled like this and poked your nose into this case. That baseless confidence of yours, I wonder if that is because of your optimistic thought that you will be okay this time too because you had come back once from that disappearance?」

Vanessa and Emily were shocked. Sometimes they got the thinking「Is he really a virtuoso hitman?」. He couldn't drive a car. He didn't bring gun, far from that he even said that he couldn't shoot properly. And above all else, the atmosphere he was clad in was too light. To the degree that saying that he was really a student from Japan fitted him to a tee.

Even so, they thought that he was Mr. K because they could cut their way through the assault in that hotel thanks to him. And then, the expression that that he sometimes showed them made them got the expectation that "as expected he really is the one".

But, it turned out he was really just a student from Japan.

「That's why I told you two many times already. I'm not Mr. K. You two didn't believe me at all……」

Kousuke looked behind with a wry smile. Chief Magdanese announced to such Kousuke.

「Mr. Endou. I'll consider that nothing happen if you just go home now.」

「Hee. You don't think that I will blabber about JD Agency or that various other things?」

「Just who will believe that kind of story when it's a Japanese boy who is telling it? Stop putting on air like you are a main character in a tale already.」

Right after that, a single gunshot rang, and a bullet gouged the ground near Kousuke's feet. Allen said「Sorry, okay」while firing so fast his gun drawing movement was unseen. That was the last warning. If Kousuke didn't turn around and run away with his tail between his legs here, then there would be news report about how a Japanese boy met an unfortunate accident in his travel.

That was conveyed to Kousuke really clearly. But,

「Well, I cannot go home though.」

「Are you still unable to look at reality?」

「No, I'm aware of it. ——There are thirty two armed men. They are lurking inside the buildings around us and completely surrounded this spot. I know at least that much.」

Chief Magdanese's expression changed for the first time since coming here. Her eyes opened really wide with her shock laid bare. Even while she was like that, Kousuke's gaze ran through places like a building's window, the shadow of a street corner, behind a pillar, and so on. ——All those places were the spots where the special squad of the security bureau's assault section was hiding themselves based on Chief Magdanese's arrangement.

「You are moving personally, bringing only those two because you have no one you can trust. That was what you say, but it looks like you are bringing really a lot despite of that.」

「You are……」

Chief Magdanese's words got caught in her throat when she saw that piercing eyes of the person that should be just a student. Her preparation for the worst case backfired on her. Faint indication of agitation leaked out from the surrounding. Allen who was standing at the side narrowed his eyes slowly with his frivolous act thinning down.

The night breeze felt like it was growing warmer and damp. Even after seeing through the squad's position, Kousuke was still not showing even a fragment of agitation, his hands were still inserted inside his pockets with composure. He then said.

「I'll say it one more time okay. You cannot be trusted. And then, in this three-way fight, the enemy of the enemy actually can be trusted more than you. After all that hint from Kimberly is spot-on. The shitty bastard that infiltrated the research building and dragged this child's important people into their death, it's that Mr. K over there. Just now, he said that he already failed continuously.」

「……I also said this before. There is no need for me to do something like——」

「The talk about motive? Something like that is not important. If it's reason then I can imagine many. It can be to use it as weapon, or for pursuing profit, or because of the country's decision, or maybe it's for your own greed……」

Chief Magdanese stared at Kousuke for a while. And then, she suddenly lifted up her hand.

Right after that, the members of the special squad showed their figure all at

once. The muzzle of their machine gun that could shoot in full-auto was aimed at Kousuke. At the same time, Chief Magdanese gave an order through the wireless on her collar. Her command was to bring the people of Grant family here.

「In order to protect the large ship that is the country, there is time when evil is necessary. There are opponents that law or negotiation cannot do anything against, and yet something still has to be done against them to protect the large ship that is the country. The incarnation of that necessary evil, is the JD Agency, this Mr. K.【Berserk】is also like that.」

The gaze of Chief Magdanese caught Emily.

「I wonder if you know how many personnel, how many soldiers died in the battle against terrorist each year? If we can turn captured terrorists into mad monster to send them in as the substitute of those noble people……just how useful that will be. How can we save the noble life of our country without paying any sacrifice. However, surely Doctor Grant won't be able to understand that.」

「That's why you tried to steal【Berserk】itself while making her create the antidote?」

「Correct. Because Doctor Grant seem to hate【Berserk】, there is a possibility she would build some kind of bug in the data through the process of researching the antidote. It's necessary to secure the original drug. There is a necessity to have at hand the antidote that the girl creates voluntarily and unaltered【Berserk】. Next if the girl dispose【Berserk】by herself, we can just advance the improvement of the drug by ourselves using the stolen data.」

But, even that farce would end here. Now they would force Emily to improve【Berserk】for the sake of the country. Rather than making antidote, she should make the control drug for【Berserk】. And then, what would be used to motivate Emily was her family that was taken hostage.

Emily's face turned pale. She must be imagining the future where【Berserk】was put to use as weapon. And then, she also imagined one other thing at the same time. The reason why Chief Magdanese was starting to talk like this.

Chief Magdanese's gaze returned to Kousuke as though to prove that.

「This too is a necessary evil. You know too much about this case. This is

incomparable with something like gossip about state organization that doesn'' exist. It will be a little troublesome if you talk about Berserk to the media that is currently heated up. The cost of getting carried away with boy-meets-girl like this is a costly one. This time, you cannot be a “returnee” anymore you know?」

「Run away Kousuke! I’m sorry! I’m sorry to drag you into this! Quickly run away!」

「Kousuke-san……my apologize.」

Emily yelled. Even while she understood that it was already impossible, even so, she couldn’t help herself from yelling. Vanessa tried to rush at once, but she saw the red lights of laser pointer showering her body and her movement stopped reflexively. And then, when she saw Kousuke who was similarly covered with red points of death like her, she spoke her apology with expression that was colored by regret and guilt.

Seeing the two who were like that, Kousuke who had death thrust before himself was,

「Don’t be so worried like that. I told you right, I’m not Mr. K but……I’m the right-hand man of the demon king.」

Kousuke’s face couldn’t be seen. His face that was slightly looking down was hidden by his forelocks. Like that, it even looked like he was assaulted by fear of the fate that would happen to him after this, where he looked like he would crumble down anytime. But, even while he looked like that, his voice that spoke back to Emily and Vanessa resounded pleasantly like a gentle breeze.

And then, hearing Kousuke saying something like “right-hand man of the demon king” now that the event had reached this point, Chief Magdanese sighed thinking that this was a pitiful boy who was living in world of delusion while she was about to give the signal for the execution,

「Hey, chief-san.」

Her attention was diverted for a moment from Kousuke addressing her. And then, she noticed how her own arms were getting goosebumps without her noticing it. Toward Chief Magdanese who was feeling doubt about her own state, those words softly reached her.

——Emily’s family, they still haven’t arrived yet?

Feeling taken aback, Chief Magdanese spoke into her wireless, questioning just what were her men were doing. *zaa-zaa-* After listening carefully to the grating sound from the wireless that felt excessively eerie for some reason, an impossible voice replied back.

『Just now, they resigned from their duty. For the chief who has business with them, please do over your life again from beginning after the beep sound.』

She understood even through the wireless. That voice was unmistakably the voice of the person who had been talking with her until just now. It was impossible. How could the voice of the young man that was here in this place could come from the communication device of the personnel that she was sending to monitor Grant family?

She couldn’t comprehend it. A chill was creeping up her spine like worm. Chief Magdanese was slowly raising her gaze from the wireless on her collar while feeling terror——and then, she saw.

With his expression still hidden by his forelocks, only Kousuke’s mouth was splitting wiiiidely. It was as though she was looking at the crescent moon shining in the sky tonight.

「You dogs of the state that sing the praises of necessary evil. Are you prepared? Are you resolved? If not then you better hurry. The abyss is already here.」

Chief Magdanese was feeling a terror that was like a black ink painting out her whole consciousness while swinging down her arm half unconsciously.

It happened at the same time with the appearance of “that guy”.

「Now, it’s showtime.」

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

He is coming, that guy, he is cominggg

The next update is planned at 6 P.M Saturday too.

Arifureta Chapter 208

Arifureta Extra Compilation – From Abyssgate Lord of The World

Showtime Beginning Part

AN: This chapter became long, so I split it into beginning and end parts.

I will upload the later part in one more hour.

「Do it!」

Chief Magdanese's command that unusually sounded like a shriek was handed down. The elites lurking in the shadow showed their loyalty without even the slightest lag even though they were agitated from having their existence discovered.

Storm of death swept from all directions along with thunderous roar. Muzzle flashes flickered in the darkness of night as though to color the victim's journey to the next world. Bullets cut through the air mercilessly and arrived at their target through the shortest distance.

「KOUSUKEEEEEE-」

Emily's shriek resounded along with the thunderous roar. In her eyes were reflected the figure of Kousuke whose body was rocked by overwhelming violence like a badly made marionette. His body was pierced countless time, and when the body was going to fall down, the storm of lead from the opposite direction would strike and made it stood up.

There was not the slightest ground for doubt, Kousuke was definitely pierced by several hundred bullets in front of everyone at that place.

However,

「He, doesn't fall?」

「Aha, haha, this is really a harsh joke. ……Why, is there no blood flowing?」

Vanessa murmured in astonishment, while Allen had his expression twitching grandly. Just as they said, Kousuke was still standing in the middle of ground that

had been desolated and pierced by bullets.

The shooting was finished. Was it stopped because the loaded bullets ran out? Or else, was it because the elites who shouldered the country's safety shrank back from the manifested bizarreness? In any case, silence filled the area, as though all living things were holding their breath.

A beat later,

「It's over already? Then, next is my turn.」

The mutter that came from Kousuke who was hanging his head destroyed the silence. And then, the moment everyone opened their eyes wide thinking「Impossible」, an even further irrationality assaulted their brain nerves and common sense.

pon- Such light voice that could be called as stupid sounded, and Kousuke's figure vanished along with slight smoke!

「Where are you looking at?」

「Gueh!?」

Everyone in that place directed their gaze toward the direction of those words and the shocked voice raised by Allen that was mixed with pain.

There, they saw Allen who without anyone noticing was lying on his face, his body stepped on by Kousuke above him. One of his hands was inside his pocket with his upper body slightly turning away, while the middle finger of his other hand was pinning down on the sunglasses that had been on his face without anyone noticing when he was putting it. Sunglasses, even though it was night! Sunglasses, even though it was night!

「What coolness!」

「Vanessa!?」

A shout of joy that sounded out of place was spontaneously raised. The side tail-san beside the voice owner goggled in surprise!

「You-」

Perhaps it should be said that it was just as expected from the real Mr. K. Even

in this situation, the shadow of the country that was bestowed with license of killing still showed a movement that would make anyone who saw to have a chill on their back. He pulled out a small gun hidden inside his sleeve with his wrist's motion and fired at Kousuke while still lying face down.

What was terrifying was that the fired bullet was soaring toward Kousuke's head accurately even though it was shot from that kind of posture. Normally, if someone was abruptly fired at from that close, that person would immediately travel into the next world, but……

「Oops, you are really energetic there.」

Kousuke smoothly tilted his head while saying those words and the bullet rushed through toward the sky in vain. Allen didn't show even the slightest bit of agitation of having his attack evaded and wasted no time to pull his trigger in succession.

However, the bullets didn't even graze Kousuke. He only tilted his upper body slightly and evaded all the bullets with paper-thin difference. His figure that even looked blurred in double and triple layers was just like the agent in MatrOx!

「Don't tell me, your sight can follow the bullets!?」

「Naturally. As long as this "Heavenly Eye" given by my friend is with me, any kind of attack won't be able to escape from my perception.」

kaclick- That kind of sound rang from the trigger. Allen's bullet ran out. Kousuke sharply pushed up the sunglass artifact that was enchanted with "Lightspeed" and "Foresight".

……By the way, the creator of this artifact didn't give it a name like "Heavenly Eye" or anything.

The agent and Chief Magdanese returned to their senses and fired toward Kousuke. Kousuke maginificently danced in the air. Using a somersault with form that could even be called as beautiful, the bullets from the two passed through below Kousuke in vain.

「Don't just stare stupidly like that! Finish him off quickly!」

Chief Magdanese's order released the squad members from their petrified

mind. They attacked Kousuke from all directions once more with barrage of bullet that was like a heavy rain.

「Fuh. Nice killing intent. But, it's not enough. It's not enough at all to catch this abyss without form!」

Kousuke said such thing while speedily evading the approaching bullets smoothly. He then finally took out a weapon. Before anyone noticed his hand was holding a jet black short sword that was unknown just from where he took it out from.

「Don't take your eyes off, from mine power of abyss! ——Purr, "Demon Sword of Destroyer Calamity Crawling the Earth".」

Kousuke called out some kind of chuuni name while leisurely caressing the blade of his short sword. When he did that, black light that could be mistaken as the night was starting to envelop the jet black short sword! And then Kousuke stabbed that short sword into the ground.

In a moment, the ground instantly bulged out and covered Kousuke completely. The surrounding ground became an omni-directional protection that blocked the bullet.

「——"Doton – Saryuu no Shiro(There is No Hope of Touching the Abyss)"」(TN: Earth Escape – Castle of Sand Bump)

Kousuke's words resounded the moment the ground bulge completely closed. Those words had no meaning, This was important so it needed to be said twice, those words had no meaning. If it had to be said further, the name of the short sword and the gesture of caressing the blade were also meaningless. So far as it went, the magic circle of the short sword artifact wouldn't activate without chanting, so it was necessary to say something, but if the user had to chanted the name of the short sword and the skill name each time, they would be turned into swiss cheese by the enemy.

And so, the ground was already started bulging by the time Kousuke said "Pu" from the "Purr!".

Then, why did Kousuke chanted the meaningless skill name……

Of course, because it was cool!

「Do, Do Do Do Do, Doctor Grant! Did you hear!? Just now, he said “Doton” you heard that!? What to do!?」

「What to do is my line there! That’s not what you should be surprised with! The ground was suddenly moving you know!?」

「That was Doton skill so the ground moving is only natural isn’t it!? Just what are you talking about! Rather than that, Kousuke-san was using “Tonjutsu” (TN: Ninja art of escape)! Aa, how can this be! He is, he is——a Japanese ninja!」

「I don’t get what you mean!」

Vanessa was so excited that it seemed her character was breaking down, and Emily was desperately making retorts back. The members of the special squad were giving them a glance while losing their patience of how bullet wasn’t working. They then took out grenade.

The grenade directly hit the mass of rock while at the same time making stupid sound *poshu*. Fierce thunderous roar resounded and the mass of rock was instantly pulverized, its fragments were scattering everywhere showily.

「He isn’t there!?」

「Watch out at your surroundings. This is a trick! That guy is using trick! Don’t get lead astray!」

The person who seemed to be the captain of the special squad spoke loudly and gave words of warning. The squad members whose mind was painted out white by the supernatural phenomenon that was happening repeatedly were recovering their calmness from the word「trick」the captain said as temporary explanation.

Although, when they collected themselves, it didn’t change that what happened before their eyes wasn’t any trick or mechanism, it was a genuine “mystery” where any explanation was futile. Therefore,

「Gaa!?」

「Gueh」

One of the troops hiding at the third floor near the window whirled in the air. It was as though he was ran over by a truck from behind, he cleared through the

window and was blown away to outside. That was how it seemed, but at the next moment, from the fourth floor of the opposite building, the troop that threw the grenade just now shot out like a human bullet in spiraling motion, and crashed into the opposite troop whirling in the air with graphic sound.

The two crashed at each other midair and fell toward the ground. Right underneath them was the figure of Allen who was pulling himself back together. Allen tried to dodge right away. But,

「From the bottom of earth, the dead captures——”Doton – Naraku no Jigoku(The abyss seize thee)”」(TN: Naraku no Jigoku = Prison of hell.)

「Wha-」

Allen’s ankle was caught. The hand thrusting out suddenly from the ground was seizing Allen. The abnormal situation that was like a horror movie caused him to feel shaken, even so he immediately attempted to shake off the hand, but he only felt pain from being caught tightly as though by a vise and the hand didn’t even twitch.

And then, right after that, Allen was dragged into the ground just like the words of the resounding voice. The ground wasn’t paved by asphalt or anything, but it was a hard ground that couldn’t be easily dug by human strength, yet regardless of that, he was buried from his waist below into the ground without any resistance, as though he was swallowed into a smooth quicksand.

「Shit-, what is this——gueh!?」

Allen thought that his whole body might be completely swallowed under the ground like this, but unexpectedly he was dragged only until his waist before the pulling strength was gone. At the same time, the surrounding ground also recovered its former hardness. Allen struggled and hit the ground, but the next moment, he was crushed under the falling two fully armed men and he shrieked like a flattened frog.

「Serves you right! Mr. K, serves you right! Doton rulez!」

「I beg you, please come back Vanessa! I really like the usual cool you!」

Vanessa turned toward Allen who vanished from view due to being squashed by the two troops that appeared to have fainted, then she pointed while going

‘hyahhaa—’. While Emily was making retort with teary eyes, chaos and scream resounded from inside the buildings surrounding the open space from four directions.

「Shit, what is going on!?」

「Just where is he aiming from!」

「Be careful of friendly fire——gua!?」

The troops of the special squad were cursing while their gun muzzle was wandering in doubt. But, they were unable to catch sight of their formless enemy(Kousuke). They sometimes caught something like black shadow at the corner of their eyes and at the nook of their mind, but the moment they turned their gaze there, the splash of their comrade’s blood would fly from completely another direction or they would get blown away like a joke.

「The stillness of the dark night is splendid. Don’t you think that something like the sound of explosives is boorish for it?」

「Wha-——gih!?」

hyuu- Wind blew, right after that a troop got the tendon of his hands and feet cut and he collapsed.

「You feel it don’t you? The cold yet gentle arm of darkness.」

「DAMN YOUUUUUU-!?」

The smooth sensation of caress on the nape caused a troop to have gooseflesh through his spine. He cursed while drawing out handgun without delay and shot behind him, but what he felt was hot touch caressing his four limbs instantly.

「Don’t you know, there are things in this world that you ought to not know. Do you know what I mean? Yes, it’s me.」

「This-, monster——」

There should be his partner beside him shooting his gun desperately. Yet, what was standing there was only a black shadow. Where did his partner go? Why, didn’t his comrade back him up? Without even any time to speak out such doubt, one more troop had his consciousness fell into the bottom of darkness together with hot touch that he felt on his limbs.

「What is this……just, what is happening……」

Chief Magdanese muttered in blank amazement. The thunderous sound of shooting in full-auto, consecutive muzzle flashes, and then scream and angry roar reverberated from all the surrounding buildings. Her gaze ran through the buildings around her as though she was a country bumpkin looking up at a skyscraper. She took back steps with shaky footsteps.

This was impossible. Even if Kousuke was skilled, this was strange.

How could troops get blown away from her right and behind at the same time when a troop was thrown out from the building at her left? Was enemy removal being carried out in all the four buildings surrounding this place?

Kousuke was alone. The enemy should be one person. Even if the enemy possessed strange fighting technique using trick, but it was only this fact that should be certain.

「Who in the world you all are fighting!? The enemy number!? All teams-, report!」

Chief Magdanese raised an angry voice. Normally there should be concise and swift reply coming back to her.

The moonlight was hidden behind a small cloud and darkness swept the area. The headlight illuminated her as though she was an actress standing alone in the stage. Replies returned at Chief Magdanese who was sweating coldly.

『This is Beta 2. The enemy's identity is unclear. The shadow, the shadow is attacki——』

『This is Delta 4! I don't know! I don't know anything! Shit-, my partners are disappearing!』

『Alpha 3-. The enemy is a Japanese young man! That guy is a monster-! The bullets-, the bullets cannot hit-. I can see him-, yet it's not hitting!』

Reports were screamed from the communication device. *DADADADDADADA*- The voice of the troops that were dyed with panic mixed in the interval between the unceasing sounds of gunshot. Not a single one gave a clear report that Chief Magdanese could comprehend.

『All troops, get outside! For a circle!』

A harsh voice that was tinged with dominating aura resounded from the communication device. That was the command from the captain of the special squad. The troops obeyed that voice as though it was their lifeline. They all jumped out from the window simultaneously without even a glance, without even thinking of the consequence, wishing only to take distance as far as possible from the terrifying something that was lurking in the darkness inside the room.

The troops that jumped out from the second floor took skillful landing posture that was as expected from trained operative, they sprang up to their feet and rushed to Chief Magdanese's side. The people who were at third floor and higher descended down to the ground by using stair's handrail, window frame, and so on to decrease their speed, but the dread filling their chest threw out their limbs out of kilter and more than half of them struck the ground and writhed there.

Even so, they were dragged by their comrades to gather around Chief Magdanese and the formed a circle formation around her. They aimed their gun at the surrounding buildings with desperate look. They strained their eyes toward the window they jumped through just a moment ago while desperately holding down their rough breathing that was unrelated with the exhaustion of their stamina.

Inside the window was dark as though all light was being sucked in. Surely even if they were told that it was a hole that connected to the realm of the dead, the troops would easily believe it right now. Their gun muzzles were busily wandering around, searching for the enemy, which displayed the state of their heart. Surely in their heart, there was also the ashamed feeling that they had left behind inside that darkness many of their comrades with whom they had shared joys and sorrows with.

The personnel of the special squad that was at first more than thirty people were already decreased until seventeen people, including Allen who somehow managed to crawl out from the ground and the agent that was standing by beside Chief Magdanese.

It hadn't been even five minutes since Kousuke vanished. In just that much

time, a platoon of the special assault squad owned by the state's organization was pushed into a partially destructed state.

The sound of breathing that couldn't be pushed down resounded. The sound of rustling clothes from roughly wiping out the sweat that was flowing from reason other than heat resounded. No one was making any voice. Even Allen who often joked around was desperately searching for the enemy position with his wandering eyes. Even Chief Magdanese was also feeling cold sweat trickling from the tip of her jaw while her gaze looked around from the center of the circular formation.

There, a strange sound resounded.

——clop, clop

It was footsteps. Footsteps were echoing in the world of night that was ruled by silence.

——clop, clop

But, there wasn't anyone that could react to those footsteps. No, to be more accurate they were reacting. However, aiming their gun when they learned the enemy's position by hearing——wasn't the reaction they made.

——clop, clop

The expression of everyone was twitching. Because the sound of footsteps resounding in their ears right now was coming *from an impossible place*. Their gun muzzle was clattering. It wasn't because they didn't understand who they should aim at. The assaulting terror finally caused the tough elite squad troops to be unable to repress the trembling of their fingertips.

——clop, clop

Slowly, teasingly, the footsteps reverberated in the dark night. *gulp*- Sound of swallowing saliva pierced the ears clearly.

Chief Magdanese sighed deeply. And then, she slowly *lifted up* her face toward the place where those footsteps resounded from, to the place where the owner of the footsteps seemed to be at.

「——Impossible.」

That mutter where it felt like the soul of the speaker also came out at the same time with it, made the other troops, and Allen, and then Vanessa and Emily to lift up their gaze too.

「Once again, good evening, ladies and gentlemen. Don't you think that tonight is a really good night?」

There, a man in black was standing.

That black outfit was darker than even the darkness of night, as though it gave anyone who saw it a hallucination that the black of night was melting into the outfit. A mask hid the mouth, completed with a sunglasses of one-lens type. In one hand was a mysterious black short sword that gave anyone chills.

His voice resounded with echo that conveyed night of night, and darkness of darkness. Absolute confidence and domineering aura dwelled inside it, however, at the same time, it contained dread that tightly held the entrails of heart.

At midair, footsteps echoed on invisible stair, like a ruler that was descending from his throne. Behind his back, was a beautiful crescent moon that looked like the sneer of the devil. A step, a step, that figure that descended from the night sky to the lower world while making darkness colored ripple under his feet, was truly an existence of myth.

「I like the crescent moon better than the full moon. It's not so bright that it will drive away the darkness of night, however, it garnish this wonderful darkness with color. Its shape that draws an arc looks like the smile of the goddess of night.」

He——Kousuke was looking down on everything, with an exaggerated gesture like a stage actor, he spread his hand as though to embrace the whole night, however, seeing no one replying back he shrugged his shoulders. And then, he slowly made a rotation, he turned his hand that was holding the short sword to behind, and his other hand propped up his sunglasses, he drew back his left foot a bit.

By the way, that rotation, and also his chuuni pose, of course, they were all meaningless.

「You……you, just what in the world, are you?」

As expected from the chief of the security bureau. Chief Magdanese asked Kousuke's true identity while everyone were at lost of words and fell into stupor seeing the impossible situation. The situation was too abnormal to be dismissed as trick. In the end, was it really okay to classify the man that was making pose midair even now as mankind……

That question came from such doubt.

In regard to that, Kousuke's answer was,

「"What are you"——I believe that question ought to be asked to all of you instead.」

「What, do you mean by that?」

Chief Magdanese returned a sharp gaze even while feeling perplexity. To that, Kousuke twirled in a rotation once more, and then, he pushed up his sunglasses with one hand while at the same time he threw his head back a bit with the tip of his short sword pointed in sharp motion.

「O guardian of the country. It's exactly as you said before, there are few things that can be protected using beautiful ideal. Without the resolve to dirty oneself, what is waiting ahead will be a trampling down.」

The eyes of Chief Magdanese turned round from Kousuke's words. She didn't even imagine that he would make a statement that affirmed her own words. It seemed that Vanessa and Emily were also similarly shocked from that. Emily was still wholly shook up without being able to get back on her feet from her agitation, and Vanessa opened her eyes widely from the shock that she received.

「Just feeling is insufficient. Nothing can be done without resolve. Trying to resist fate without dirtying one's self, something like that cannot even become a funny story.」

Those were heavy words. Even though they didn't know anything about this young man, they understood that he had gone through tremendous experience. They understood, how it had been engraved into his flesh and bones.

「One has to choose what they ought to protect. One has to persist in carrying their own will, surpassing the distinction of good and evil. To wish for everything, that is only possible for someone who transcend the extremity of that will.」

To protect the great ship that was the country from the ill will and hostility that lurked all over the world, was impossible with just law. It was impossible to resist with only right conduct and beautiful ideal. By the point of time someone cursed that the other was cowardly or the worst, what they lost wouldn't come back.

To "protect", was a next to impossible undertaking more than human could imagine.

Therefore, Kousuke didn't deny. The hidden face of this country. The act of the non-existent organization that was called JD Agency. If there was things that couldn't be protected without such existence, then that was inevitable.

However, still, however.

「Even so, there are things that one mustn't throw away.」

Yes, that was why Kousuke was here. He was here, with his blade unsheathed. He unleashed the technique and strength, that he obtained at the end of deadly combats, along with bitter experience, at another world.

「The humanity and justice in one's soul.」

Those must not be forgotten. Even if the body was dirtied with necessary evil, the soul must not get rotten together with it. If not, then the necessary evil would someday be degraded into mere evil.

「The faith in one's heart.」

The people had faith in them. That they would protect the safety of this country. That faith must not be betrayed. If that was betrayed, than the whole foundation would be shaken.

「The sincerity in one's resolve.」

Their established resolve, their oath, those must be carried on faithfully. The moment they made compromise, that resolve would run wild, and bared its fang even toward those that it ought to protect.

Just like the current situation.

「O guardian. Is Emily Grant not someone that you also ought to protect?」

「……」

Chief Magdanese didn't answer. Or possibly, she couldn't answer.

「She was born in this country, raised in this country, live in this country. A girl like her, isn't she someone that you ought to protect? Necessary evil——I won't reject that. But, in the end, is Emily someone that ought to have such thing pointed at her? Cornering someone who is desperately doing her best, a girl who wish to create a remedy of an incurable disease, is that the national safety you are talking about?」

Hearing Kousuke's question, there were people who made complicated expression among the special squad troops, there were even people who were obviously looking guilty. The expression of Chief Magdanese didn't change. Right now, she was staring straight at Kousuke without any discomposure.

Kousuke also stared back at Chief Magdanese as though to wait for her answer. Still in his chuuni pose.

Just how long they were like that. Before long, Chief Magdanese sighed, and quietly opened her mouth.

「I too, am the dog of my country. I feel no self-depreciation or regret of that. Not to mention hesitation, I have none of that. ……I have, made my determination already.」

That was her answer.

Allen sent a sharp gaze that only lasted for a moment at the captain of the special squad and the agent. The captain of the special squad tensed his jaw slightly, at the same time, the agent slightly moved back.

Kousuke sensed it. They were planning to make Allen and the special squad into disposable pawn, in order to evacuate Chief Magdanese from this place. The agent intended to rush until the car to bring Chief Magdanese to escape.

Should that be admired, or be exasperated at? What made Kousuke hesitated in making conclusion, was how lacking Allen and the special squads troops in hesitation. In order to let their boss got away, they accepted their end without even a moment of hesitation.

「Is that the resolve and sincerity of you guys?」

They would coerce a girl of their own country, in order to protect the people of the country. Despite Kousuke's opinion that it was putting the cart before the horse, that was the answer of the security bureau. They knew only too well of that, even so, if that was what their homeland decided, then they wouldn't hesitate. For that, they had made the resolve to put their life on the line since a long time ago.

Chief Magdanese spoke.

「About the research building, that was a sorrowful miss on our part. We were also unable to detect the betrayal of Kimberly, and also how the students of Down classroom were going to raise a commotion. ……It was my misjudgment to make Allen infiltrate by himself.」

She had never expected that the bodyguards safeguarding Berserk had been replaced by Kmberly's accomplice. At that time Allen caused the alarm to sound because the reaction of the bodyguards that was different from the usual trained agent, and he completely got taken by surprise by the unexpected conduct of the fake bodyguard agents.

「I have no excuse for that.」

「Such thing, even if you say that-」

Emily was enraged hearing that apology which was directed at her. She questioned whether this woman planned to beg for forgiveness only with that one sentence. Did she know understand just how great what had been lost due to her action.

But, it seemed that in contrast with her sentence, Chief Magdanese didn't have even a speck of intention to ask for forgiveness. Her eyes were still cold even while receiving Emily's rage right from the front.

「All of you, this is an order. Carry out your duty.」

「「「「「Yes, Ma'am-!!」」」」」

Chief Magdanese drew back. At the same time, Ellen rushed out from the circle toward Emily while the agent turned around toward the car. The eyes of the

troops shined with their last killing intent and they were about to pull the trigger at Kousuke midair.

It happened at that moment.

tan-, tan-

Two gunshot sounds resounded faintly.

「Muh」

「-!?」

Those didn't come from the special squad. It also didn't come from Allen.

One shot splendidly drilled on Kousuke's flesh, and the other shot pierced through one of the troops while gouging Chief Magdanese's left shoulder.

Chief Magdanese collapsed from the impact with splash of blood scattering. And the, Kousuke fell to the ground in an arc trajectory.

「KOUSUKEEEEEEE-」

「KOUSUKE-SAN-」

Emily and Vanessa screamed loudly.

「Chief-」

「-, protect the chief!」

The sprinting Allen made a turn that disregarded human's body structure while raising a voice that exposed his agitation and uneasiness for the first time. With the command of the captain of the special squad, several of the troops used their body to cover Chief Magdanese as shield and dragged her body toward the wall.

Emily and Vanessa dashed toward where Kousuke was falling. Emily embraced Kousuke with an expression that could break into tears anytime, and together with Vanessa she pulled his body to the cover of car.

The second wave of attack didn't come. It seemed that the sniper became unable to take a line of fire. Even so, everyone there stayed still while staying on guard to the surrounding. Kousuke's body was limp without any movement.

It was unclear how long time passed. Perhaps it was about a few dozen seconds. The captain of the special squad gave a glance and saw that the first-aid to Chief Magdanese was finished, and he was about to order them to move out, but several lights cut through the area.

Those were lights from car headlight. And they didn't come from merely one or two car. More than ten cars were rushing at them with fierce speed.

Several of the cars arrived with a drift before stopping and took position that encircled the people of the security bureau and Emily's group. The cars were all stopped horizontally and blocked any path of escape.

Vanessa and Chief Magdanese scowled their face from having a certain person coming to their mind from seeing this method that was repulsive yet cunning.

It seemed that their expectation was right on the mark.

「Yoo, honored chief Magdanese. How envious for you to have a clandestine meeting outside the city at night. Let me join in too, okay.」

「Kimberly.」

The one who got down from one of the cars was Kimberly who was sporting a really disgusting smile. With that as the start, dozens of armed men also got down from the other cars. They didn't look trained like the special squad troops. They looked more degenerate and violent, if it had to be said they were fellows that looked like mafia members.

Allen and Vanessa tried to move nonchalantly. But, as expected Kimberly gave no opening and sharply noticed them.

「Whoops, both of you, don't move from there. Especially the analyst-kun. You are bad news after all. Just try it if you move even for just a bit. I'll slaughter everyone without mercy.」

Kimberly commanded his men to release their weapon's safety. Although, the people who had resolved to die just now wouldn't obey that instruction that easily, both of them glared with their gun muzzles raised even with that overwhelming difference in battle strength.

「Well, guess so. There is no way the chief will comply that simply. No matter

what you are the “cornerstone of Britain’s protection” or “the iron woman that married Britain” huh. What’s more you also got strong bad luck.」

Kimberly shrugged while watching Chief Magdanese’s left arm that was oozing blood. And then, he turned his gaze at the reason why he didn’t kill Chief Magdanese and everyone else here right away.

「So, chief-sama. Just what the hell is that?」

At the end of his gaze was the limp Kousuke who only looked like unmoving corpse even now, and the figure of Emily who was embracing such Kousuke.

「The elites of security bureau assault section was half-destroyed under a few minutes. What’s more, he unveiled amazing technique like floating in the air. When I heard the sniper’s report and watched the recorded video, I thought my eyes gonna popped out of their socket y’know.」

Kimberly’s gaze left Kousuke and wandered to the air.「Well, there must be wire or something put in the air」It seemed that he thought what Kousuke did was a trick from those words that he said.

Although, even though he was a traitor but he was formerly a member of security bureau, because of that Kimberly knew how powerful the assault section was. It seemed he wanted to know the reason how a group like them could be cornered into devastation helplessly like that. That was the reason why he let the troops stayed alive even now.

Chief Magdanese distorted her expression cynically at such Kimberly.

「There is no way I know what that is. That is……yes, it’s “something” that human knowledge doesn’t reach. According to that thing’s words——he is the right-hand man of the demon king, something like that.」

「Demon King’s, what? Just what kind of joke that is huh. That’s——」

——Calling me “that”, “that” from some time ago, that’s a little bit impolite isn’t it?

A voice suddenly reverberated echoingly. Kimberly and his groups were taken aback and they looked around the surrounding. Chief Magdanese shook her head with an expression that looked a bit tired while saying「Aa, just as I

thought」.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

The later part will be uploaded in one more hour.

Arifureta Chapter 209

Arifureta Extra Compilation – From Abyssgate Lord of The World

Showtime End Part

AN: This is the later part of two parts.

For those who come here directly from bookmark, please pay attention.

---

kii kii Such small sound resounded. That was the sound of wheel. At the same time, multiple footsteps also echoed.

The sound came from the building behind where the car of Chief Magdanese was parked. Everyone focused at the steel door of that building.

And then,

「Fumu, Mr. Carl. About the wheelchair of Syla-dono, don't you think it needs maintenance? It's making this kind of sound each time it moved. It's causing various anxieties hearing it.」

「A, aa, no, I planned to bring it to give it maintenance just today you know? I, isn't that right, honey?」

「Yes, tha, that's right. But, just when we were about to go out, the people of security bureau came so……」

「I see. That's impolite of me. I have acted impertinently there.」

The people that came out from the opened door while making normal talk were a middle-aged man and woman who were making twitching expression. There was also a woman who was definitely passed seventy sitting in a wheelchair that was pushed by the man. It went without saying that these were Emily's family. And then, a man wearing sunglasses and black outfit was walking in the lead of them.

「Father! Mother! Grandma!」

「-, Emily!?」

「Emily-」

Hearing the shout of Emily that was filled with joy, the father Carl and the mother Sophie called back the name of their beloved daughter without being unable to hide their happiness. It seemed that the grandma Syla was sound asleep. Perhaps Kousuke had done something to her. Surely he had judged that this hectic situation would be harmful for her who was afflicted with Alzheimer.

The two parents had been told about their daughter's current situation to a certain degree. And so, they were about to rush toward Emily driven by their worry and the joy of reunion.

But, because of the pressure of the armed men that was standing between them and their daughter, and the ominous sound *kaclick* that came at the same time with the gun muzzles moving toward them immediately, they stumbled and came to a stop. And then, blood was leaving their expression when they saw the scene of the men that really resembled mafia, the personnel of security bureau who looked cornered at near the wall, and then, the collapsed person who their daughter was holding in her arms.

They now painfully understood the situation. The terrifying situation their daughter was confronting, it was different from the explanation of the security bureau that was a mix of truth and falsehood. They grasped just how dangerous the situation their only beloved daughter had been placed in.

It was in the middle of that, a dumbfounded voice resounded.

「Thi, this is a joke right? He, should have been sniped……」

It was Kimberly. At the same time, what he spoke represented what was in the mind of everyone there.

But, the right-hand of demon king exaggeratedly shrugged his shoulders saying「Good grief」to the crowd that was a hindrance to the family reunion, completely unconcerned with that kind of question of bewilderment. And then, he suddenly formed a handseal with both his hands. Yes, he formed a handseal! As though, just like a NINJA! Just like a NINJA!

It was unknown just where was the expression that was worried for Kousuke just now had gone, the female investigator that might be beyond hope already

yelled「Handseals come-————!!」while she desperately tried to copy it. It seemed that she was trying to memorize the handseals. But, the girl lacked a certain bloodline eye, on top of that Kousuke's handseals that were super complicated and super fast due to its lack of meaning weren't something that could be copied just from a glance.

'Your level is insufficient!'The handseals didn't really have any meaning, but with a glance those words were whispered toward Vanessa-san who was grinding her teeth.

「To disturb the family reunion like this, what a really boorish bunches. ——"Kuuton – Banji Saikuu(I exist, in the desired spot)"」(TN: Air Escape – Air Reside in the Whole Earth)

Something like black mist instantly whirled around Kousuke, but right at the next instant, Kousuke disappeared, and not just him, but the whole Grant family too. In their place, the corpse of Kousuke that was inside Emily's arms until just now appeared! And then, right after that, the corpse vanished with *pon*- sound as though it had accomplished its role!

「Thi, thi thi thi thi, this iiis!? Mikawari no Jutsu!? Isn't this Mikawari no Jutsu, Kousuke-san!」(TN: Mikawari no Jutsu = Kawarimi no Jutsu/Substitute Technique)

「It's a little bit different. Naturally I can also use Mikawari no Jutsu, but Banji Saikuu is something that is not limited to just myself. It designate things within a certain range around me and replace them all with my clone body along with the space. Fufu, this is a more advanced technique.」

In response to the yell of Vanessa who was in a state of 'Excitement Climax!', Kousuke answered while brushing up his hair with 'fuh'. Kimberly and the bureau staffs come back to their senses from hearing the exchange of the two, and when they turned their gaze at that direction, there were the figures of Kousuke and Grant family that had teleported at Emily's side unnoticed.

「Wha wha wha, what happened thank god Emily! You are safe!」

「Emily, you are not hurt just what happened!?」

「Ca ca, calm down mother, father! You two are safe I am also confused here!」

Grant family was in a state of ‘Bewilderment Climax!’. The parents and daughter hugged each other while showing quite the skill where they were rejoicing with their reunion while acting bewildered at the same time. The grandma opened her eyes a tiny bit saying「My? Is it morning already?」, but she soon went ‘munya munya’ and went to sleep again. What a grandma.

「Impossible, what kind of trick is that. Is that thing just now a puppet!?」

Kimberly raised an angry voice in half-panic, trying to find an explanation that his understanding could accept.

Toward such Kimberly, and then also toward the armed men and Chief Magdanese’s group, Kousuke suddenly lifted up his right hand to the sky and opened his mouth.

「Puppet? Ku-ku-ku-. Certainly, you can call it that. Isn’t that right——right me?」

Kousuke waved his lifted up right hand elegantly as though he was an orchestra conductor while making a finger snap *pachin-* and pointed at the right building. There,

「Or, you can also say that it is a dream, or an illusion, or even darkness. ——Front me」

At the window in the right building’s second floor, a man in exactly the same appearance appeared as though he was oozing out from the darkness. The Kousuke that was called as “right me” then stepped out to the empty air without any hesitation, and walked down on the air while spreading ripples that looked like black miasma.

「At the same time, it’s a reality, a counterfeit, and also a real thing. Right, ——left me.」

Kimberly and others turned unbelieving gaze at the right building, but right after that the same voice resounded from behind them this time. When they turned around in panic, as expected, there was also the figure of man in sunglasses and black outfit showing his appearance, oozing out from the darkness of the building over there, as though he was born from the darkness itself.

「Although, there is no need for you all to understand. After all, understanding the true abyss with human body, is something that cannot be done.」

The same voice entered their ears once more. When Kimberly and others turned to the left as though they were being toyed around, there, on the roof of a car that was parked horizontally to block the path, was the same man standing elegantly with his arms crossed and one of his feet drawn back slightly. Leaving aside a female investigator who was greatly being noisy「Real clone! Real clone!」in high spirit, everyone was lost for words feeling dumbfounded and astonished.

「Ko, Kousuke is, Kousuke is, four people……」

Emily's whisper echoed faintly at the place where silence had descended. Right after that, the four Kousuke smoothly unsheathed their jet black short sword and made cross shape with their arms.「Camera-, where is the camera-」Leaving aside the female investigator looking around with a desperate look who was surely beyond hope already, the right-hand man of the demon king chuckled at the words of the girl who he had promised to protect while he called out to her.

「Emily.」

「Ye, yhesh」

Emily's voice spontaneously squeaked because she didn't think that she would be addressed here. Seeing the girl like that, the nearest Kousuke chuckled while asking her.

「I'm not an ally of justice. If those who doesn't balk from harming others for the sake of their own will are called evil, then without a doubt, I am extraordinarily evil.」

「E, err……」

Emily-san was bewildered. She didn't understand the meaning of those words, and she also totally didn't understand Kousuke's speech and behavior! But, Kousuke didn't pay that any attention. Because, the one who was here wasn't Kousuke anymore.

「But, I plan to at least bear in mind the moral code that I should stick to. Therefore, I will protect you. I will protect my promise to protect you. That's why, will you believe in me, and let me protect you?」

「……Ye, yes. I believe you, Kousuke.」

It didn't seem like that she wasn't a little bit creeped out, even so the cheeks of Emily reddened when she was told "I'll protect you". She joined her hands in front of her chest, and returned back her trust as though in prayer. Toward her who was like that, Kousuke went「fuh」for who knew how many times today, and then lastly he spoke.

「Emily. And then, everyone here in this place. Listen-」

Each of the four Kousuke displayed diverse chuuni pose's variation from their original arm-cross pose that even left behind afterimage, while he raised a voice that echoed in the dark night!

And then, Kimberly and his group went 'twitch!' from witnessing that somehow amazing movement while they came back to their senses and aimed their gun toward the four Kousuke. Toward them, Kousuke declared! With a voice that was loud, proud, and echoed from the bottom of the abyss.

「I, am the shadow! The right-hand man of the godslaying demon king that was born from the bottom of the abyss! I came from the deep abyss, from the darkness that is deeper than even darkness! Now, engrave into your soul, this taboo name!」

The jet black short sword was swept, and the empty-handed left hand spread open its five fingers while covering the right eye. The left eye that sharply glared over everything, emitted penetrating light!

Kimberly gave his order「Fire! I don't really get it but, anyway, fire!」. The armed group broke out of the bizarre atmosphere that restrained them, and they pulled their trigger simultaneously. In the space that was blanketed with thunderous roar and muzzle flash, "his" introduction rang out clearly.

「——Rapid Fang Shadow Claw, Kousuke E Abyssgate. I have arrived!」

The bullets that were fired without thinking of leaving behind any reserve, all of them cut through empty air in vain. *shu*- Together with such sound, Kousuke——no, Lord Abyssgate's figure vanished!

Right after that,

「Crawl on the ground. Embrace the infinite hell fire! ——”Katon – Kouen no Ryuu(The flame of abyss extinguish all creation)!”」(TN: Fire Escape – Prominence Dragon)

Lord Abyssgate appeared behind the armed group and stabbed his short sword on the ground while saying such thing. Instantly, vividly crimson blaze *gou-* was spreading in radial shape like great snake crawling on the ground.

「Uwah-, what!?」

「Hot!? Shit-, the fire, the fire is coiling around me-」

The flame was crawling below the armed group coiled on the men and twined around them burning them mercilessly.

——Short sword “Heaven Destroying Sword of Brilliant Lightning Flame”

It was one of the treasures bestowed to him from the demon king. Originally it would create flame snake that randomly ran around to make the area fall into chaos, it was an item that was enchanted with a sublimated flame element magic circle to assist in escape. Just as the name showed, it was also possible to do the lightning version of the attack, not just flame element. It was possible to instantly activate two elements magic for escaping or assisting in battle.

By the way, he thought up the naming himself. Together with a rabbit-eared woman of another world.

Some of the men were about to rush out reflexively, perhaps to help their comrades to put out the fire. But a black shadow slowly appeared right beside them and they turned their gun there with great reflex. However,

「The surge of darkness, corrode everything——”Rasetsu no Mashu(It is beyond your mean to touch the abyss)”」(TN: Rakshasa’s Evil Hand)

「Ugoh!?」

ton Lord Abyssgate’s palm lightly touched the man’s chest, at that moment the man was blown away like a joke, as though he had been hit by a truck.

——Fingerless glove “Rakshasa Black Hand of Second Advent and Rejection”

This artifact was inserted with “Magic Shockwave” that converted magic power into shockwave——”Rasetsu no Mashu(It is beyond your mean to touch

the abyss)”, and regeneration magic “Daten no Ote(There is no end to the abyss)” that could regenerate what it touched to a certain degree. (TN: Daten no Ote = August Hand of Fallen Heaven)

By the way, the chief of rabbit-ear thought and groaned for three days to come up with the naming.

「Die-, die-, this damned monster-」

Several men who fell into panic were brandishing their gun indiscriminately. The bullets that flew out randomly were something dangerous that might drag Emily and others who originally they should secure into danger instead.

「How could you guys appeal to Emily and others while ignoring me. I feel lonely——”Zekkou Senjin – Shin’en no Kaina”」(TN: Light Severance Thousand Blades – Abyss’s Arm)

Lord Abyssgate had jumped to the sky unnoticed by anyone, and in midair he swept his arm in large movement. With that, four kunais appeared from empty air. Those kunais flew as though they had their own will, three of them stabbed on the ground around Emily and others *ka-ka-ka-*, while the remaining one came to a stop still above them.

And, just before the astray bullets reached Emily and others, they were obstructed by invisible wall that manifested at the space slightly ahead.

——Offense and defense dual use gravity control kunai “Zekkou Senjin”

This artifact’s ability was almost the same like the demon king’s bit weapon. It would lay out space isolation defensive wall by making each other as fulcrum. It flew freely using gravity control, and could accomplish space teleportation by replacing their position with the user.

By the way, Kousuke didn’t have a thousand of this kunai. He had twelve. The one who named it as thousand blades was the rabbit eared sniper boy. It seemed that the naming reason was「Heheh, stylish right?」

「Don’t screw around-」

Kimberly howled. Lord Abyssgate was about to land on the ground with several kunais orbiting around him like satellites. Kimberly aimed the moment he would

land and pulled the trigger. It was a superb timing. Even while he was in panic and confusion, that was still an amazing judgment and technique. Furthermore, foreseeing that as a chance, even Allen also gave support fire to make it so there was no place of escape. Perhaps this was the so called the enemy of my enemy if friend.

Lord Abyssgate smiled wryly. He fired a single kunai to the ground while falling and his body made a single rotation midair.

「Invite to the abyss——”Doton – Shin’en Ryuusa”」(TN: Abyss Quicksand)

Instantly, the ground undulated like a whirlpool, Lord Abyssgate slipped through the bullets and then smoothly dived into the ground.「The true worth of Doton, IT COMES-————!!」The frenzied voice of the female investigator who was beyond hope already, it startled Kimberly. At the same time,「CALM DOWN VANESSAAAA-」everyone of Grant family was also startled from their beloved daughter’s shriek.

That became an opening where Kimberly was made to pay a painful compensation.

——Bulge, breaking wave. “Doton – Raiton Combination Art – Raika Hourai” (TN: Raiton = Lightning Escape, Raika Hourai = Lightning Flower Phoenix Arrival)

Such words were propagated from the whole darkness of night. Right after that, the ground underneath Kimberly bulged up with explosive momentum. And then, roaring lightning attack burst out, like a roaring dragon climbing up to the sky.

「-, gah!?」

Kimberly was hit hard by hard rocks that came like buckshot while intense lightning attack showered him. Kimberly who couldn’t even make a proper scream was launched to the sky like in a cartoon.

For a moment, everyone’s eyes were fixed to that sight. In the middle of that,

「Be aware of your own sinfulness, o shadow of the country.」

「Wha-, the ground is again——」

Before he could finish speaking, Allen turned his head from the fright that

attacked his spine. There, he saw the figure of Kousuke who flew out from the ground with a momentum as though he was launched out. His figure with both his hands spread and his legs lightly folded, was truly the pose of a savage eagle!

But, Allen also didn't lose. Even while his eyes opened wide in surprise, he aimed the gun in his right hand with amazing reflex and he pulled the trigger.

But, Lord Abyssgate who floated midair, with his body that could be said to be exposed to death, he went「fuh」that he had done a lot today, and then he dodged the bullet with a stylish midair spin.

And then, he kicked flying Allen's gun with a midair spinning kick fully filled with centrifugal force. In the next instant, Allen's left arm moved. Of all things, a hidden gun came out from his left sleeve too.

「Got you-」

「No, that's your illusion.」

Lord Abyssgate's other leg cut through the air. Using the centrifugal force of the midair spinning kick, it was a second leg attack that wasn't unlike a second sword. Allen's hidden card was sent flying too quickly. Even so, the movement of the shadow of the country didn't stop, he fluttered the sleeve of his coat and his right hand that should be snapped away reached toward his waist. There, a revolver for quick draw was stored.

Although, that out of norm movement was already a step late in front of Lord Abyssgate.

「Shih-」

「Wha!? Gah」

A third kick attack. By twisting the upper body after the second spinning kick, it further connected to the third spinning midair kick. The right kick that returned to its original position after a rotation cleaved through the wind *gou*- while hitting hard the haw of Allen who immediately tried to pull back.

Allen's body was blown away, his body danced midair while making triple spin. The white of his eyes was exposed and he bounced on the ground, at the same time Lord Abyssgate's feet also touched the ground.

「……Abyss-style assassination martial art – kicking form……”Hien Renkyaku(The bird of abyss chirped three times)”」(TN: Flying Abyss Tempered Leg)

That unnaturally long pause was of course, because he only thought up that name just now!

Putting aside the former investiga——the mere otaku who said「Aa, not just ninja art, but even martial art……it’s lovely」and the father-daughter who conversed「Emily, i, is this person alright?」「No, it’s too late already for her, father」, the battlefield where the abyss lord had descended was filled with scream of chaos and despair where everything was merely trampled helplessly by the darkness that he brought about.

「I didn’t hear anything about this! What the hell is that guy-」

「Damn it-, don’t come here!」

Barrage of bullets surged along with thunderous sounds. But, Lord Abyssgate that was the target wasn’t even grazed. No, to be more accurate, the bullets actually hit. To the double or triple layers of afterimage following him every time he moved. It was as though the bullets were sucked in, they shifted slightly from Lord Abyssgate’s body and drifted toward the afterimages.

「——”Juuton – Keishi no Kage”. No one is able to seize the abyss.」(TN: Gravity Escape – Shadow of Unusual Death)

The combination technique from skill “Phantom Step” and gravity magic——”Keishi no Kage”. While generating afterimages behind using “Phantom Step”, those afterimages were enchanted with gravity magic that averted every attack.

「……This is like, a B-class movie.」

Kimberly cursed like that while somehow raising up his body that was finally freed from the numbness. He vomited blood ‘gahah’. He looked at his surrounding while on all fours and made a dry smile.

The incarnation of death boasting overwhelming force that surpassed the speed of sound couldn’t even graze the existence before his eyes. Even though they were able to see him, even though they could perceive him, but they were

unable to grasp his real state. Even though they were fully observing him like this, yet when they noticed they would suddenly lose sight of his existence, and the next time they noticed would be when they were on the verge of having their consciousness swallowed into darkness along with intense pain. And only the back figure of the lord that was in unrelaxed alertness.

Flame crawled on the ground, lightning flew wildly about, wind blade raised up blood splash, and the ground swallowed everything. The shadow ran whether it was on the ground or the sky, vanishing and disappearing, cloned itself into several bodies and kunais were rushing through the sky by ignoring gravity.

「Aa, shit. I really cannot go along with this-」

「That too, is the consequence of your choice isn't it?」

「-」

Kimberly whispered once more while somehow crawling toward the nearest car, but right after that, a cool voice replied to him from right behind him.

When Kimberly looked back, there was the figure of Lord Abyssgate looking down on him. At the same time, *dosha*- a body of his comrade fell with raw sound beside Kimberly. That body's neck was clearly twisted into a direction that a neck mustn't go.

「This, monster」

「You who prey on human, who doesn't feel any hesitation at involving unrelated people, and slaughter your comrades for money, aren't you the monster?」

It was a scathing reply. Kimberly faced Lord Abyssgate with his body falling on his backside. When he noticed, he couldn't hear any gunshot anymore. When he looked around with just his gaze, there was already no one standing in this battlefield.

No, there were barely some people. The troops of the special squad. With their back facing the wall, they formed a half-circle to become the shield of Chief Magdanese. They were standing even while trickling cold sweat. Beside them was a clone body of Lord Abyssgate, they weren't allowed to run away, even so they didn't seem like fighting each other.

On the other hand, the organization member that Kimberly led here seemed to have passed on already without even any time to feel pain. There wasn't anyone with showy wound. A single stab on the heart, or internal organ destruction using impact, stopping heart with electricity, or severing artery using wind blade. Even the people that were enveloped in flame had their life severed by a single attack of flying kunai before they died by fire.

「Oi oi, what the hell. You overlook them, but slaughter us all? Just what is the difference between those guys and us huh?」

Kimberly cracked jokes even with his cheeks twitching while his body was sweating from pain and unease. Lord Abyssgate changed his hold on his short sword into reverse grip while shrugging his shoulders at such Kimberly.

「Evil with conviction, and a mere fiend. Is it fine to consider that both will meet the same end as the result? The answer, is no. ……Well, there is also the difference at the level of troublesomeness for the cleaning up afterward though.」

Lord Abyssgate was Lord Abyssgate. He wasn't that demon king. A method of annihilating anything and everything when hostility was directed to oneself, was a method that he couldn't take based from his sense of value and also his lack of means to clean up afterward, nor did he want to take it. Not to mention how this was at earth.

But, he the experience that he had gone through was also not so sweet, that he would let alive fiends scattering around malice for their own selfish desires, for their own pleasure. Therefore, he made his choice. That was all there was to it.

From the slight movement of Kimberly's gaze, Lord Abyssgate guessed that he was wracking his brain for some kind of solution to escape from this situation. He unhurriedly walked toward Kimberly. And then, he violently grasped Kimberly's collar and lifted him up with one hand easily.

「Uoh. Wait-, just wait! What happened wasn't my real intention-. Even I have a circumstance, I cannot help it! Listen to me!」

Kimberly desperately beat at the arm of Lord Abyssgate that lifted him up from behind while speaking excuse that would overshadow even the word unsightly.

Lord Abyssgate lifted up him who was like that, like a criminal that was crucified on a cross.

At the same time,

「Uh. I, I was……aa, if I'm not mistaken, I fainted!? Why am I lifted up!?」

Allen who fainted until now with the white of his eyes showing was lifted up similarly like Kimberly by a clone body and carried near.

The special squad troops starting from Chief Magdanese, and then Vanessa who was sending Kousuke a strangely sparkling gaze, Emily who was completely creeped up by such Vanessa, and Grant husband and wife who was turning pale from the surrounding situations in a silent panic where they couldn't even hide their bewilderment, they all were paying full attention.

Amidst that, the lord drew back and recovered the kunais protecting Emily and others while raising his voice.

「Emily Grant! Vanessa Paradis!」

「Fua, fhyes!」

「Yes, what is it my god?」

Emily who was suddenly called in her full name responded with shaken stutter. As for Vanessa at her side, for some reason she wasn't shaken at all, instead she fell on one of her knees *sucha-!* right away, and replied with reverence as though she was kneeling before her lord. The end of her sentence caused Emily to goggle at her in shock.

But, even that no-good investigator Vanessa who wrecked the serious atmosphere like that immediately corrected her expression from the next words.

「I have captured the perpetrator that snatched away your precious family, your precious comrades.」

Yes. Kimberly snatched them away. Her esteemed superior Hughes. And also the life of her colleagues.

Yes. Allen snatched them away. Even indirectly, the lives of her substitute father, of her big brothers and big sisters.

「Can you two stay quiet?」

There was no way they could. Their heart that had been paralyzed by the serial unusual situations started to move again. The scorching rage they had been holding all this time started to blaze again like fire that was put into fireplace.

Emily stood up. The figure of her family floated around her mind. Because it was command? He didn't directly do it? So what. It was beyond doubt, that what was scattered by the man in front of her eyes, had snatched away the life of her important people.

Vanessa stood up. What filled her mind, was the figure of the superior that she should aimed at. And then, the figures of the comrades with whom she entrusted her life to and vice versa. Who was the one that shot at them from behind with a reason like "for the sake of money"? Who was the one who snorted at the offered trust while trampling on it? It was, the shitty bastard before her eyes.

「O, oi, Vanessa. Wait, just calm down! I——」

「Silence.」

Vanessa slowly stepped forward.

「A, aa~, young miss? That, it was my bad that I blundered——」

「Shut up.」

Emily stomped forward loudly.

Both of them, the two woman who had survived to this point, walked forward side by side. Their expression couldn't be seen from the shadow covering their face. But, their lips that were tightly pursed into a line spoke of their emotion more eloquently than anything.

They clenched their fist. Both of them broke into run. The two men who became the origin of calamity imagined the future that would befall them and sighed. In their action, there was contempt that could be seen, after all what they faced were just female, furthermore one of them was nothing more than a girl. Getting punched wasn't really a big deal.

But, that contempt too disappeared right after that.

——There is no end to abyss. The deep darkness envelop everything.(Now, beloved children. Let's bestow the protection of abyss to you.)

The moment that whisper was uttered, the night suddenly coiled about on the greatly clenched fist of the two. The blackly whirling light that gave such illusion was increasing in strength with pulses each time the two took a step forward! Yes, it was as though, the abyss lord was increasing that strength with each passing of time!

Unease ran through the expression of Kimberly and Allen. Both of them didn't understand what phenomenon that was. But, their soul understood this much. 'That's bad news-!' Following that impulse, they raised their voice to stop the two.

「Wai——」

「Sto——」

「「No more discussion-」」

But, at that time the two were already right in front of them. Their hidden expression became exposed. What was there was wicked look that even resembled evil Rakshasa.

ZUDAN- Impossibly loud footstep resounded. Cracks in the shape of spider web ran through the ground! And then, it was unleashed. It was like cannon ball that blasted through the air, the fist clad in the abyss!

「FLY AWAY-」

「DIE-」

Emily's fist at Allen, and Vanessa's fist at Kimberly. Both of them put their whole feeling, and their billions of rage, they spitted out everything, and struck!

「「THIS SHITTY BASTARD-!!」」

GOU-!! The thunderous sound of hitting flesh and,「GUPEE!?」「GEHAH!?」such screams resounded. On the eyes of the lord that had the perception ability raised by "Heavenly Eye", the sight of Kimberly and Allen's cheeks getting ran through by fist, their cheekbones broken, their teeth pulverized, and their flesh squashed in undulation, was projected.

When the lord timely released his hand, Kimberly and Allen were blown away in tailspin as though to prove that might and they bounced together on the ground. And then without any lessening in their momentum, they crashed on the car behind. Both of them cordially plunged through the front glass head first together and in the end there was only their butt sticking out without even a twitch.

The sound of someone gulping their saliva *gulp* echoed. The troops of the special squad were making expression that was shuddering in fear as though to say「Those fists really a damned bad news」.

Amidst that atmosphere, Emily and Vanessa who were standing still with their fist still outstretched slowly relaxed their tension. And then, they lifted their face and gazed at the lord.

There on their face, floated a smile. Looking at their smile, it could be clearly understood that even though it wasn't wholly, but at least their expression had cleared up a bit.

「Both of you. ……That attack felt like it would make me fall in love.」

The lord gave words of praise while once more going「fuh」that he had lavishly displayed throughout this day.

Emily and Vanessa looked at each other's face, and then, they turned their face at the lord one more time. Wordlessly, they both fixed a thumb up resolutely.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

This is not over you know? It's still continuing you know~.

The next update is planned at 6 P.M Saturday too.

Arifureta Chapter 210

Arifureta Extra Compilation – From Abyssgate Lord of The World

Please Kill Me Instantly Instead……

AN: This one is short. There is big possibility it will be rewritten, or added to.

「Now then, here we are o guardian. I'll grant you the chance to choose.」

After Emily and Vanessa made their settlement with a fist of all their might (plus abyss), the lord that was observing Chief Magdanese and her group said such thing with his eyes shining.

In the silent night where the tumult of death and strife had passed, leaving behind the heaps of corpses of armed men all around, the voice of the lord resounded clearly. Emily and Vanessa, and also Grant husband and wife who were in slight distance away, they all went 'hah' and their gazes turned toward that voice.

Even the special squad troops whose awareness slackened slightly from the extermination of the enemy and the *observing* act of the lord, they began to put on a tense air once again.

「Choose?」

Chief Magdanese was pressing on her arm that was soaked in blood while standing up with the help of the agent beside her. Her cheek was dirtied by blood splash and painted her gruesomely, but she responded at the lord with a straight calm gaze without even a grimace on her face.

「Yes, choose. Will you be exterminated in this place? Or will you take the second option?」

「What nonsense……I already told you my, no, the security bureau's will. If you want to kill us then kill. Even if the country lose a pawn like me, it won't affect this country's system.」

She had made her resolve. Her cold gaze without any emotion in it discarded

the lord's proposal as nonsense.

But, the lord wasn't making "proposal" here.

「Certainly, I don't think that your death will affect this country's decision considerably. But, I believe that the influence of the living you is powerful, isn't that correct? Don't you think that influence ought to be used for the sake of the country's safety?」

「? What are you……-, such thing. That's a contemptible threatening isn't it.」

Yes, this was the "ultimatum" that was only dressed up as "proposal".

Even if Chief Magdanese died, it would be impossible for the upper brasses of this country who knew about the appeal of【Berserk】to retract back their hand, there would be some remaining that would keep trying. The successor of Chief Magdanese would succeed her duty or else that duty would simply be moved toward another organization.

But, if this great woman who could even be said as a living legend used her position and all her influence to insist that【Berserk】was unneeded, or even dangerous, what would happen then. Chief Magdanese said that she was nothing more than a dog of the country, but sure enough, could the upper brasses ignore her full report?

From the lord's conjecture, there would be no way for them to ignore her.

For the lord who was lacking in the means of cleaning up the aftermath with the country as his opponent, the method of bringing over Chief Magdanese to his side and made her to revoke the【Berserk】case could be said to be the most realistic means.

Of course, the lord also had the means to make the top brasses of this country to forget everything regarding【Berserk】. He could make request to that demon king. If he did that, the whole case would be settled without leaving any loose end.

But, the lord didn't choose that. The dignity of the lord wouldn't forgive him if he left this case's resolving to other people wholesale even though he was the one that poked his nose into his case by his own. Above all, he thought of that person as a friend, and so there was no way he could treat him as a convenient

existence. If he did something like that, then the lord wouldn't be able to say that he was the friend of that demon king while raising his head high.

Therefore, for the lord, it would be for the best if Chief Magdanese herself put an end to this【Berserk Incident】.

And then, in the case this option couldn't be practiced, then it would be war against the new security bureau without Chief Magdanese, no, against the country itself that was backing the bureau.

「This is different from threatening. This is a declaration. If your side wishes for a fight to the bitter end, then I will fight until this body is reduced into worthless thing. Now, guardian. You can imagine using that sagacious mind of yours. In the end, just how much sacrifice will be necessary to stop this abyss lord.」

「……」

Chief Magdanese stayed silent. Her gaze surveyed around slightly without even speaking any words. What entered her gaze was the mere shadow of the armed men's former self. In contrast, the man before her eyes had not a single wrinkle on his outfit.

In front of this person who utilized supernatural technique that surpassed the realm of understanding, even the special squad of the security bureau would be powerless. His conduct and speech were also beyond comprehension.

Although, it was by no means that the winning percentage was zero inside Chief Magdanese's thought. No matter how much irrational strength this person had, but as long as he was only an individual, he would be in a losing battle against an organization. Inside her head she had already pictured several routes of killing the lord by using "strength of organization".

But,

「Haa……」

She let out a deep sigh. From how the agent standing by beside Chief Magdanese was blinking his eyes, perhaps it was really rare for her to act like that.

But, if that agent knew about what was inside Chief Magdanese's heart, then

surely he would feel that it couldn't be helped for her to make that deep sigh from the overwhelming fatigue drowning her heart, he would even feel sympathy to that.

(The right-hand man of demon king……what's more, the "returnees", is it.)

Yes, the lord had proclaimed before. That he was the "right-hand man of demon king". In other words, this embodiment of irrationality before her eyes *was nothing more than a subordinate.* In the end, was that existence which was referred as demon king, an existence that was even more powerful than this lord? That was something that Chief Magdanese didn't understand.

But, here, for some reason her mind was naturally under the impression that *this information was nothing significant*——from that, and when the keyword "returnees" emerged on her mind, terrifying possibilities were welling out from inside her, one after another.

The returnee incident that shaken the society for a period. Naturally the intelligence department of Britain also didn't ignore that incident. But rather than the boys and girls who were called as returnee, the intelligence department focused more in observing and dealing with the disturbing elements who were sniffing at the occult aspect of these returnees. Even so, there was no doubt that Britain was paying attention to the【Returnees Incident】.

But, at one point of time, the heated up media and suspicious organizations that were showing disturbing movement suddenly stopped showing any movement. It happened so quickly like the tide that was drawing back.

(Yes, that incident came to an end so naturally that it was unnatural. And then, I and also the intelligence department didn't feel that it was unnatural!)

The existence of the lord and the few keywords that he put before her eyes opened up Chief Magdanese's eyes.

——This person wielding supernatural power, is a returnee

——The returnees, numbered thirty people in total.

——At the very least, there is an existence that this person looked up as above him.

——The recognition toward the returnees is weak, and much less in their own country, but almost the whole world was like that.

——Even now she isn't feeling that it was unnatural about how weak this recognition is

'Just what's with this situation', Chief Magdanese thought. 'The opponent is an individual', such assumption was an excessively hopeful conjecture.

「Let me, ask a question. Among *all of you*, how high are you in comparison?」

When that question left her mouth, she thought that there was really no meaning in asking that, even so Chief Magdanese couldn't help but asking the question. She wanted to know even if just a part, about "they" who managed to hide from the whole world even after having the attention from all over the world gathered on them once.

Hearing the question of Chief Magdanese, the lord hummed「fumu」while touching his chin. He showed a gesture of thinking for a bit, and then he shrugged his shoulders in over reaction and answered.

「I can boast that I'm top class even among my friends. However……」

「However?」

The lord was putting on airs, however, Chief Magdanese only asked back quietly without showing any irritation. Toward such her, the lord held his head high, and then he spoke in pride.

「Compared to our demon king and his ladies, I cannot hold a candle to them. Even in one-on-one, using my whole body and soul, where I take out all of the trump cards that I have……dealing a scratch is the best that I can do.」

「……I see.」

The special squad troops were going slightly astir. An opponent that cornered them until half-destroyed state, and in his back there was still someone else waiting, someone that this person could do nothing except putting on a scratch. What's more, there were several of such people. What's more, he said *ladies.* Ladies-! The fingertip of the troops that was on the trigger was trembling! How envio——terrifying!

「Although, perhaps it won't even become a fight against you guys to begin with.」

The detail that was added like an additional blow convinced Chief Magdanese. It was just as she thought, even their awareness was being guided. That conviction made a sigh to leak out from Chief Magdanese's mouth once more.

And then, she asked the scale on her heart and a bitter smile emerged on her mouth.

「Indeed, it's not worth it to continue this just for the merit of turning【Berserk】into weapon. By the way, I wonder if there is any room for negotiation?」

「None.」

「Is it fine for you to say that even without asking that demon king-sama you respected?」

「Of course.」

A curt response. Chief Magdanese sighed for the third time.

「The effect and usefulness of【Berserk】are already known by the top brass. I cannot assert that this case will be resolved by me advocating for the opposing argument. It's my specialty to make argument armed with theoretical backing, however I cannot guarantee anything with certainty if I have to omit your existence in my argument.」

「Are you implicitly telling me to expose the information about me and the one behind me? Know this, guardian. In this world, there are things that shouldn't be known. ……Or rather, if I told you about them then it will be seriously bad news for me and for you too. Especially if anyone try anything to the wive~s it seriously will be the end. It will be totally over for this country. If this is known, then there will absolutely be some fellow coming out to do stupid thing, this country will disappear from the map yea——cough-. Anyway, I have no intention of telling you anything about us.」

「……」

For some reason, it was as though the bare face came out from Lord

Abyssgate. It was a momentary shiver that was obvious even through the sunglasses and black costume. Other than Chief Magdanese, even the troops were horrified. Just what kind of existence could make this aberrant existence to unconsciously return to his bare face!?

「Hhn, a, and, what is your answer?」

The lord cough unnaturally as though to pull himself together, and then he pressed the choices once more on them. The mind of Chief Magdanese was groping frantically for the best solution to her country even now in this moment, but she was aware that the answer had already come out from inside herself since some time ago.

The country's safety was everything for Sharon Magdanese.

Then, if what was waiting at the end of the path of pursuing that goal would be a war against an unknown, and furthermore a powerful organization without equal that could even possibly overthrow this country, then that would be really just putting the cart before the horse. At the very least, she knew that in the current time she was overwhelmed in the information aspect and battle strength.

A long silence descended. The cold gaze of Chief Magdanese pierced straight at the lord.

The lord was also staring straight back at Chief Magdanese. While crossing his arms.

Just how much time passed? When anyone realized, Emily and Vanessa were already standing close to the lord, the troops were nervously gazing alternately between Chief Magdanese and the lord. It was at that time that the words that would decide their fate were finally spoken.

「……Fine then.【Berserk】is uncontrollable. Refinement of wonder drug for it is impossible. At this rate there is a high possibility of it adapting to the environment and start air-borne infection, the damage in that case will be vast. ……What do you think about that? Of course, I will put seasoning on that story sufficiently.」

「Wonderful. With this there will also be no need for a joke like all the upper

brasses of Emily's country showing the same symptoms with Alzheimer, despite that being the illness that she is fighting against. My greatest respect on your decisive judgment.」

「I don't need your respect or anything, however I think that it's a silver lining that you are someone rational. ……Though honestly, I think there is something wrong with your speech and act.」

The words that were muttered in a whisper by Chief Magdanese in the end there. Surely those words came half from being sore loser, and half came from her heart.

The lord pretended not to hear that while his gaze moved to Emily beside him. By sending flying one of the causes that cornered her important people to death, her feeling had been diverted somewhat, but as expected, the flame of her hatred was still directed at Chief Magdanese who was the ringleader without even the slightest weakening.

「Emily. Just as you heard, we have procured a method to end this case. But, I know that this method is not something that you really can agree with.」

「……right」

Emily clutched the sleeve of the lord tightly. Her tightly pressed lips looked like she would bite on her lips anytime. That look of hers eloquently exposed the inside of her heart that was yelling「This kind of people, it's better if they all just die!」.

The lord questioned to such Emily.

「I was the one who said that I will become your strength. That's why, if Emily wish for revenge, I'll draw my blade against them. Emily, what do you want to do?」

Those words of the lord that came this late in the game caused the troops who were breathing sigh of relieve to make tense expression just when they thought the talk was concluded already. It was only Chief Magdanese who was sending a calm gaze at Emily, like a criminal waiting for the judgment.

The strength of Emily's hand that was clutching the lord's sleeve became stronger. Her figure that was looking down while trembling a bit as though she

was holding down a great emotion looked even more painful to look at. But, the first word that were let out from such Emily was strong, it resounded with dignity that made everyone there to be taken aback.

「Don't look down on me.」

The gaze of Emily who lifted up her face stared straight from the shoulder of the lord. In that distance where they could feel each other's breathing, there was light other than hatred shining in those eyes of Emily.

「You are asking me that kind of question after finishing the talk, are you testing me? I'll say it one more time. Don't look down on me, Kousuke. I decided to walk this path because I want to become the strength of someone who is suffering from sickness, because I want to keep alive even if just one person more. There is no way I will trample on the best path you have grasped for me!」

Her voice resounded clearly. That will spread like a ripple. Surely, that will was something that wouldn't lose even against the will to safeguard the country that Chief Magdanese displayed.

「Besides, I don't happen to have a shamelessness that allow me to entrust other with killing people for my own sake. Vanessa that has been helping me all this time, and Kousuke who told me that you will become my strength even though you are not related to this. I absolutely won't make that kind of horrible request to the two of you!」

Her cat eyes glared intensely. She was holding blazing hatred in her chest, however, she didn't mistake her path. This girl would immediately turn small in crisis, she was a scaredy cat, and obstinate, however it was obvious that inside this awfully straightforward girl, there was strength that couldn't be mistaken.

A faint smile emerged on the lips of the lord. Different from the fearless smile that he showed before this, it was a smile that was vaguely fleeting, and gentle. The lord's hand reached toward Emily's head in a natural motion. *pon pon* Light touches were conveyed to Emily.

「Emily. As I thought, you are a good woman.」

「……Boe!?」

Instant petrification. Next, she turned into a completely ripe tomato when she

comprehended what was said to her. The garnish was a weird shocked voice. And then, she noticed how their face had approached each other until super close range where her lips would be able to touch if she stretched up herself a little, and how she was tightly clutching the lord's arm. She went 'awawa, hawawa' while backing off in shaky footsteps.

And then, she noticed Vanessa who was giving her a thumb up for some reason, Chief Magdanese and the troops who were making complicated expression, and then, her family that was sending her a strangely lukewarm gaze……「Do, don't looook!」she said while turning small. She crouched, she held her head with both her hands, and then her body was trembling from shame. That figure was truly that of a small animal.

The lord made a pleasant smile at such Emily before his gaze returned to Chief Magdanese.

「That's how it is. Guardian-dono, please, for the sake of this country's safety too, persuade this country with desperation. There is no worth in effort. Result is everything. If anything is going to harm this child and the people at her surrounding, no matter what kind of shape that is——then know this, the abyss swallow everything without exception.」

「……I know.」

Chief Magdanese nodded quietly at the abnormal killing intent and pressure that were filling the last sentence. And then, she proposed that she would like to dispatch personnel to clean up this place, and prepare a place to talk to each other regarding the organization behind Kimberly.

Indeed, they couldn't just neglect the heaps of corpse, and it was essential to know about the organization behind Kimberly to save Emily completely. And so, the lord accepted that proposal while teaching them one fact.

That fact, was that the number of body bag they needed to prepare was only for Kimberly's comrades. Yes, actually the troops of the special squad, although they all were seriously wounded with their limbs' tendon severed, or their internal organ terribly damaged, but not a single one among them received lethal damage, none of them had died.

Thinking from the beginning that bringing over the security bureau to his side

was one of the methods to end this case, the lord left them alive so as not to leave behind seed of future trouble as much as possible. Although, even though the troops felt joy that their comrades survived, at the same time their mind felt down from the terror that they were partially annihilated even when the opponent was holding back that much……but that was just a trivial matter for the lord.

Now then, for the moment a relationship of cooperation was build with the security bureau and the matter had reached a point where they could pause. It was at this time

The lord, no, Kousuke heard. The sound of *saa*—. It came from inside his body. It seemed that he could hear for real, the sound of blood leaving his face.

Kousuke's hand was moving toward his sunglasses with small shivers. And then he slowly took off his sunglasses with the item clattering *rattle rattle*.

What appeared from behind the sunglasses was a grandly convulsing expression.

Other than the agent who received Chief Magdanese's instruction and made contact for personnel dispatch, everyone there noticed Kousuke's pale expression that was obvious to see even under the faint moonlight. His eccentric atmosphere until just now was vanishing.

Kousuke turned on his heel wordlessly, however, everyone could clearly see his dead eyes. He started to walk unsteadily, and totteringly. Before long he reached the gap between the wall and stair on the building, he flattened himself into the gap and turned small. Just like Emily-chan.

In front of the people whose eyes turned round in wonder, Kousuke buried his face onto his knees and whispered in small but clear voice.

「Someone, please kill me instantly instead……」

He wished to be beheaded in the middle of the warehouse district.

It seemed that the compensation to become peerless was great.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about

misspelling and omitted words.

Actually I wanted to write more about the entanglement when Kousuke returned, yet the time wasss~.

Work of 4 months is seriously bad news.

The next update is planned at 6 P.M Saturday too.

Arifureta Chapter 211

Arifureta Extra Compilation – From Abyssgate Lord of The World

No More, I Want to Go Home……

AN: I'm sorry.

In the end, just posting the next chapter is the best that I can do.

Just what is golden week I wonder? Does it mean a week of demonic work?

Haha—

Because of that, I'm thinking of putting aside the rewriting and improving the previous chapter for the time being.

If there is anyone holding hope for that, my apologies.

「Hold on! Get a hold of yourself, Kousuke!」

Emily's tragic call that didn't suit the warehouse district at night echoed. Kousuke sat on the floor while hugging his knees, he was staring at empty air with eyes of a dead fish, and a dry smile was pasted on his lips. Emily was holding the collar of such Kousuke while desperately jolting his body back and forth.

Everyone of Grant family was staring at such situation with a bewildered feeling in wonder of what was going on, also, Vanessa too was throwing doubtful gaze at Kousuke who suddenly became useless, even so she was running her gaze at the surrounding vigilantly in his place.

And then, at the end of her gaze were several bureau staffs and the surviving troops.

Yes, currently there were many bureau staffs in this place. When Chief Magdanese finished her talk with Lord Abyssgate, Kousuke suddenly turned into a state as though he was a stain on the wall. After that Chief Magdanese called in bureau staffs for cleaning up the aftermath.

After all the phrase of heaps of corpse all around perfectly suited this place right now. They couldn't just leave the corpse like that, and the cars Kimberly

and his group were riding to this place needed to be confiscated too. They needed extra hands for dealing with all those.

In addition, they needed to share information between the two sides regarding the organization behind Kimberly and also interrogating him. It was for that reason that Chief Magdanese and her group, and also Kousuke and others were remaining here.

Both Kimberly and Allen now looked as though their former handsome look was only an illusion. Their caved-in face was too tragic to look at, and they were still unconscious without even a twitch and the white of their eyes exposed. Several troops were watching over Kimberly, but he looked so atrocious that they questioned「Is this really need to be guarded?」.

And so, they were still unable to hold interrogation. Or rather, Kousuke's heart was hurled to far beyond as though he was in the verge of being swallowed into abyss, so currently they couldn't even exchange information with Chief Magdanese. Emily was doing her best so Kousuke would return to his sanity but……the damage on Kousuke-san was deep.

Chief Magdanese received treatment of her arm that was drilled by rifle bullet beside a car that was equipped with first-aid facilities, mixed among the injured troops. She was narrowing her eyes at Kousuke who was in such state.

Although they had reconciled, or rather formed cease-fire agreement for the moment, but the other party was the great woman who carried both good and evil in her method. With Kousuke's state where he was currently murmuring broken language「I'm, fine. I'm, working hard. I'm, fine」, Vanessa also needed to endure various things and kept watchful eye to the other side.

However, she wished that Kousuke would return to his sanity soon already. And so, looking at Emily who was desperately calling at Kousuke while her arms were circling on his head as though she was going to embrace him, Emily who was starting to reduce the sense of distance into one where it was hard to claim that they were just mere friend, Vanessa gave her advice.

「Doctor Grant. Can I say one thing?」

「Whaaat. Right now I have no free time to look after mere otaku heree!」

「That's impolite to call me a mere otaku. I'm not just an otaku. Even if I'm an otaku, but I'm otaku that is an agent——no, I'm the SOUSAKAN.」(TN: Sousakan means investigator in Japanese. All this time when I refer some people from security bureau as agent, the raw was actually calling them as sousakan or investigator. I changed them to agent in the translation though.)

「I don't get it!」

For some reason, Vanessa and Emily pulled a smooth funny man and straight man routine a little bit like a comedy duo. Emily went 'fusha—' like a cat while her gaze insisted「Be quiet a little!」. Of course, Vanessa-san was unstoppable.

「About my god, it appear that his state that was overflowing with awesomeness not long ago, for some reason that I don't understand it put a burden on his mental state. And so, how about trying something that will make my god's feeling to lighten up? Something that will make him happy.」

「That's a good advice you have there……but you see, let me point out at just one thing! What's with that "my god"!」

Emily Grant didn't fail to notice that opening to be the straight man.

Vanessa showed a really irritating face that seemed to question「Just now, is it really something important?」, even so she explained with the sense of values of good old Japan.

「Doctor Grant. The origin of why I call Kousuke-san as my god come from the tradition and culture of Japan, that is the correct way for displaying respect, because that is a title of honor.」

「Wha, what do you mean?」

「At Japan, people who displayed transcendental skill, producing result that cannot be matched by any other and ought to be given high praise, they would be called "~is god" (TN: Kami in Japan can mean god, but can also mean incredible or fantastic) in praise. Therefore, I'm praising "Kousuke-san is god!", or "Kousuke-san's awesome style is seriously godly!!" is something that is really natural and par for the course!」

「I, I didn't know that……」

Vanessa's finger snapped out powerfully and pointed to emphasis her claim. Emily's expression changed just like when she received new knowledge from university lecturer. ……She didn't even notice how inside her arms, Kousuke was shot by Vanessa's word bullets and he convulsed *twitch twitch twitch*.

It seemed that the SOUSAKAN's mood became pleased looking at Emily's attitude. Her tongue moved even more fluently.

「Doctor Grant. This is a digression, but at Japan, everyday new gods are being born.」

「Li, lies……in Japan, there are a lot of people like Kousuke!?」

Emily showed a frightened expression. Her side-tail stood on end. Beside her, the expression of everyone of Grant Family was grandly twitching. The eyes of Chief Magdanese narrowed so thin it looked like string now, and the troops expression turned grim as though to say「Despair!」.

……It seemed the people of the security bureau were also pricking up their ears and listened really attentively.

Whether she actually knew that or not, Vanessa shrugged her shoulders with over reaction that looked like a certain someone somewhere and said「No no, how can that be」and denied Emily's words.

「As expected, even Japan(the country of fantasy) won't have anyone that is in the level of my god. However, it's the fact that gods endowed with technique and zeal which shaken the soul exist there. ……Doctor Grant. Even you should at least hear about it before. The other popular name of that country. Bringing forth gods into existence day after day, this alias display that essence!」

「I, I don't know, I don't know what it is, Vanessa!」

It seemed that the strange switch inside Emily-chan was turned on. Or perhaps, she was simply someone that got easily swept away by the place's atmosphere. Speaking in term of story tale, then she was definitely in the category of easy heroine. (TN: Easy heroine is those heroine in the story that easily fall to the main character just because of a bit of kind words or gesture, or sometimes without any clear reason at all)

Vanessa who obtained amazingly excellent audience was showered by the

support light that was the moonlight while she raised one hand to her chest, her other hand was spread widely, and with an air as though she was an actress on stage, she made the alias of the country she would forever love to resound.

「People, call that country like this. ——The country where eight million gods are born.」

「That's not it-. Apologize to the sense of values of the good old Japan! You representative of misunderstood foreigner!」

That statement of Vanessa was really too much this time, which caused Kousuke to flew out from the bottom of the abyss like a launched missile. He reflexively stood up while roaring angrily. Emily also got carried up to standing position by his momentum, she said「Standing! Kousuke is standing!」which sounded like a joke material while revealing her joy.

「Congratulations of your revival, my go——」

Vanessa immediately fell on her knee with a thud and bowed like a retainer revering her lord, but her words were cut off in the middle. By *hyu-* the sound of cutting wind and the wind pressure grazing her cheek.

「Oi, Danessa. The next time you call me "my god" again……I won't miss.」(TN: Danessa, in the raw, the katakana of 'Va' here is replaced with the kanji of 'da' which could mean, worthless, hopeless, useless, *etc.* Sorry, but I cannot think up any fitting translation to English for this)

A cold sweat smoothly trickled down Vanessa's temple while she quietly looked across her shoulder. There, she could see a jet black kunai stabbed deeply on the ground. But, she wouldn't get discouraged by something of that level. Such thing didn't fit for this SOUSAKAN!

「……Then, I'll call you master.」

「Why!? Isn't it fine if you keep calling me "Kousuke-san" the same as always!?」

「No, there is no way I can do that. As a person begging for teaching, I wish to take up an attitude that adequately express that!」

「Somehow I'm feeling amazing spirit from you though. Somehow it feels a bit

scary though. Or rather, begging for teaching?」

「Yes. Please accept me as pupil by any means!」

「This development, is unexpected!」

The spirit of Danessa-san was full to the brim. After a total of five minutes explanation that hit Kousuke like surging wave……in short, she was awfully moved by Kousuke's strength, so please accept me as a pupil by any means, something like that it seemed.

To expand further, Vanessa was giving her explanation with enthusiasm that was at the peak of the peak, so it went without saying that a lethal wound was dealt once more on Kousuke's shame.

She said how magnificent the pose of Lord Abyssgate while reproducing it with a perfectly copied motion, she also chuckled 'fuh' while saying「The moon tonight is wonderful!」……. Kousuke was covering his face with both hands while shaking his head screaming「Stooop! Please, stop it alreadyyy!」.

「Why a pupil huh. I don't get how your thought process is working anymore.」

「I think that if anyone witness that numerous techniques which look like Japanese ninja, it's only natural that they will want to receive teaching though……」

「Have some self-awareness. The natural that Vanessa is saying is generally unnatural you know. Or rather, you are an agent of security bureau right? What are you going to do about that huh?」

Kousuke averted his face looking unpleasant after seeing Vanessa's fierily sparkling gaze while gently giving his refusal.

Vanessa glanced at Chief Magdanese before for some reason she went「fuh」with a smile that looked really irritating. Chief Magdanese's eyes twitched in reaction.

「In the first place, I entered security bureau because I thought that『Isn't something like an agent that fight against evil really cool?』」

「That motive is like elementary student huh……」

「Even after I safely became an agent, my heart was throbbing from

thinking『Won't I get dragged into national conspiracy I wonder?』while I went through the days.」

「Your way of thinking is seriously like an elementary student.」

Chief Magdanese covered her eyes with one hand. Her emotion could be easily guessed. There were several of the troops averted their eyes a bit and others that sent Vanessa lukewarm gaze. Surely they were the same kind with this Danessa.

「I was moved when I met with the chief the first time. She is the living legend that handed down swift yet cool-headed judgment, when I actually met her and felt her atmosphere on my skin, I thought『Eh, what, isn't this a real-life M!』. I instantly decided then. 『Yosh, I'll become a real ○07』」

「Oo~i, chief-sa~n! It seems that this otaku SOUSAKAN wanted to become your 0○7!」

Chief Magdanese whispered「……The Paradis that I knew, was just an illusion」with a tired expression. And then, when she averted her gaze away as though to say that she couldn't bear to see any more than this, ahead of her gaze she witnessed the troops and bureau staffs who were giving out air that said「Yep yep, I get that~」. Her cheeks were twitching grandly.

「However, yes, However! I had seen it! I had known it! That there are things in this world that not ought to be known! Yes, it's you!」

「Guhah. I, I let my guard down. It all came back at once.」

「Compared to master's awesomeness, this M wannabe chief is just too shabby. What I should aim for is right here! Master, I beg you. Please, accept me as your pupil.」

Saying that, Danessa-san bowed her head. As for the chief-san, after getting arbitrarily treated as fictional character, getting expectation arbitrarily put on her, and in the end she was called as shabby, she pulled out her handgun with gaze that was like tundra. Seeing that, the squad captain beside her held her from behind while saying「Ca, calm down-, chieef!」to stop her.

While sending a glance to that commotion, Kousuke who was given petition from someone to be his pupil for the first time on his life sighed loudly while

saying a word.

「Rejected.」

He cut down the request resolutely.

However, it seemed that Vanessa had predicted that from the beginning. She nodded once without looking particularly losing her composure. And then, she spoke a request that she seemed to have prepared beforehand, or rather this one seemed to be her heart's actual desire.

「Then, please sleep with me.」

「Your crypticness just know no bound there! What are you saying!? Just what the hell you are saying!?」

「Vanessa!? Wha wha wha wha, what is your intention!?」

Kousuke was greatly shaken, while Emily who was previously in a daze from the exchange between Vanessa and Kousuke was revived in one shot.

Vanessa was explaining with her gaze staring at Kousuke without any trace of shame in it, rather her gaze was like a hunter aiming at a prey. According to her explanation, the point was if it was impossible for her to become a pupil then 'I will become your woman!', something like that. If she received the privilege to stay at his side like that, later she would steal his technique by herself, she said.

「Impure! That's impure-, Vanessa! So, something like that, if it's not properly between two people who love each other——」

「No, Doctor Grant. I wish that you won't misunderstand me like that. I won't offer this body just for the sake of my objective whatever it is. I have fallen in love normally. Or rather, I have gotten wet.」

「W, we, weeet——」

Emily-chan buried her face on Kousuke's shoulder. Her face when bright red until not only her ears, but even until her neck. And then, the confession that was too much of a straight ball caused Kousuke to forget the hopelessness of his talking partner temporarily and he unconsciously turned red.

「Please don't worry, Kousuke-san. Perhaps I don't look like it, but actually I'm a devoted woman.」

「N, no, even if you appeal at me like that. In the first place, you see, I actually――」

「Tha, that's right! For Kousuke and Vanessa, such thing is……no good! It's absolutely no good!」

Kousuke was about to say「have a lover」, but Emily-chan who was on her absolute limit pulled tightly on Kousuke. She embraced him as though to cover him, or possibly to claim that she wouldn't let him get taken away, while her almond-shaped eyes glared really threateningly.

「Please don't worry, Doctor Grant. I'm completely okay even just as a mistress.」

「Thi, this is not that kind of problem!」

Vanessa-san's freedom was unstoppable. The bureau staffs who were working hard at dealing with the corpses laying all over the place without getting any late night overtime pay already stopped still. They were gazing fixedly at the conversation of Kousuke and co. With bloodshot eyes, and shaking fist, and then, curses that were leaking out unintelligibly.

「E, excuse me. Can I interrupt a little?」

In the middle of the growing pandemonium, a timid voice called at them. Looking toward that voice, Emily's father Carl was staring at Kousuke, Emily, and Vanessa with a really complicated expression feeling unsure of what to say.

「That, Abyssgate-san, should I call you that?」

「It's Kousuke. Are you listening? My name is Kousuke.」

Father Carl's natural mentioning of Abyssgate caused the mini Kousuke inside his heart to vomit out blood. Even while he was plainly eating damage, Kousuke vigorously pressed on to correct Carl. Father Carl nodded obediently at that even while he was feeling creeped out.

「Err, Kousuke-san. First, let me say my gratitude. You are the benefactor of Grant family. If it's something that I can possibly do, then please ask anything from me so I can express my thanks to you. I won't inquire about that mysterious power of yours. Surely there are various circumstances about

that……. But, there is one thing that I want you to tell me no matter what. …… Just what is your relationship with my daughter? You two look really intimate with each other……」

Color of awkwardness was residing inside the gaze of father Carl. That gaze was seeing the figure of his beloved daughter who was hugging Kousuke firmly even now.

There, it seemed that Emily finally noticed how she was clinging all over Kousuke. She raised her voice「Awah!?」while backing away with her hands going banzai. (TN: Like when people yell banzai, they will raise their hands high)

「Aa~, no, it's not, our relationship is not like what Carl-san is thinking. I am just her bodyguard, just a friend.」

「Friend, is it……」

Carl's gaze was directed to his daughter once again. He could see the vision of dark cloud with sound effect *doyoo~n* behind Emily. She was obviously feeling down when she heard "just a friend" said so easily. Even if he wasn't her father, it was completely clear that Emily wasn't thinking of Kousuke as just a mere friend anymore.

Father Carl made a complicated expression at that condition of his beloved daughter. And then the one that threw a stone and caused ripples there, was obviously this person.

「Kousuke-san. The way you are saying that is just too much. Even though Doctor Grant had already offered her precious thing(peeing)……」

「Offering her precious thing!? E, Emily! What is the meaning of this!? Explain it to your father!」

「Yo, you are wrong, father! That, isn't something like that……that was because Kousuke was mean to me, it couldn't be helped at all!」

「Wha-. You are saying that your precious thing was stolen because you got bullied!? Su, such thing……」

Emily's cheeks were dyed red from shame and she turned small. It was her usual style, but right now, in this place, it also could be seen as a girl who

crouched down because she got hurt. Actually even Emily's mama Sophia went「Emily! Aa, you are trembling like this, how pitiful!」and hugged her tightly with tragic expression.

As for Kousuke,「"Being mean" and "bullying" has really different nuance there!」he made a retort inside his heart, but it was the fact that he acted mean and shamed Emily because of that, so he was hesitating of what to say. He absolutely didn't do atrocious thing like what Carl and Sophia were imagining but……. Or rather, it was him who got dirtied that time…….

The gaze of father Carl who was desperately holding down his rage was cornering mini Kousuke inside his heart.

「Abyssgate-san. You are my family's benefactor. My words that I want to repay you with anything that I can possibly do aren't a lie. But, but-, please spare just my daughter! Like this-! Please, I beg you don't shame my daughter more than this-!」(TN: The word shame here can also mean rape or violate in Japanese)

「You are wrong! It's a misunderstanding! I'm telling you I'm not that kind of brute!」

Starting from Chief Magdanese, the bureau staffs were all giving Kousuke cold gaze. It was as though they were looking at a criminal.

After that, the misunderstanding was resolved somehow by Kousuke's desperate justification, and the flustered words of Emily who noticed that an outrageous misunderstanding had been generated.

Although, because of the fault of Danessa who put in timely interruption with mistaken good intentions, the misunderstanding that Japan was overflowing with boys who hungered for "reward" from beautiful girl permeated not just Grant family, but even until the bureau staffs. In the end, Emily's blunder of wetting her pants became known far and wide and her soul embarked on a journey. When Kousuke consoled her, seeing that and thinking that the two would go into a relationship by themselves, Danessa casually added in her mistress application. Kousuke was flustered by himself with「This isn't affair! This isn't an affair at all!」……

Through this and that kind of ruckus, the cleaning up of the site somehow was finished, and finally, really finally the discussion between Kousuke and co with

Chief Magdanese's group could start. It was at that time, one of the bureau staff that was holding a communication device rushed toward Chief Magdanese.

From the condition of that staff who had tense expression on his face, it seemed that some kind of uncommon situation was occurring.

The staff handed over the communication device that seemed to be connected to somewhere, to Chief Magdanese who was looking doubtful.

「Chief. This is the smartphone recovered from Kimberly. ……The caller said to hand it over to you.」

「……I see. The preparation?」

「All okay. But, it's likely the other side is taking countermeasures. Please prolong the talk as much as possible.」

「I know. Everyone, don't make any sound. I'll put it into speaker.」

Chief Magdanese accepted the smartphone that was put on hold and quickly gave instruction. Nervousness spread between the staffs and troops. From the situation, it seemed that the organization behind Kimberly was attempting to contact them. The call was put on speaker so that Kousuke and others could grasp the situation too.

The one at the other side of the call most likely was the organization that was the ringleader of everything. Perhaps they finally contacted the phone because there was no result report from Kimberly or because he failed to make contact regularly.

Emily's expression vanished, Danessa returned into Vanessa, and Kousuke's eyes quietly narrowed.

Inside the back of the car that was loaded with specialized equipment, one of the staffs wearing a headphone made OK sign. Chief Magdanese nodded once and pushed the call button.

「This is Sharon Magdanese, the chief of national security bureau. You are?」

『How do you do, chief-done. Although it's only through a phone, it's an honor that I can talk with a living legend like you. I, let's see……can I ask you to call me Odin?』

「……Pretending to be the chief god of Norse Mythology? It's really painful listening to you trying to match your theme with Berserk's naming like that.」

For some reason Kousuke pressed on his chest. Vanessa's lips grinned broadly just for an instant. But, right now was a serious time, so everyone cordially ignored them.

『How biting. As expected from the iron woman who has shouldered the country's safety for many years until now. Even though I granted Kimberly-kun quite a lot of man power, but as expected it seems that it's too heavy of a burden for him to be your opponent.』

「Enough with the idle talk. Get straight to the point.」

『It's really sad that you are lacking in playfulness……well, I guess it's fine. I only have one demand. Hand over Emily Grant that the security bureau is sheltering.』

Emily's shoulders shook from shock. Seeing that, Carl and Sophie nestled close to her and gave her a hug to support her.

「Do you think, that I'll comply with that demand?」

『You have no choice but to comply. If not, berserkers will raise the first cry of their birth in the middle of city. Just like this』

Right after that,

「a, Ga, aAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA!!」

A shriek resounded in the warehouse district at night. Everyone was startled and their gaze moved toward the source of the roar.

Over there, there was the figure of Kimberly convulsing fiercely with the white of his eyes still exposed. The handcuff restraining his hand on his back was raising creaking sound, displaying how great the pressure that was being put to it.

「Get back! Everyone get back! Take distance and surround him in half-circle!」

The chief's order resounded and the troops moved simultaneously. The staffs were also moving quickly even with uneasy look emerging on their face so that they wouldn't be a hindrance for the special squad.

Everyone understood. The abnormal state of Kimberly was the symptom of him transforming into berserker. But, their expression was overflowing with bewilderment and doubt. That couldn't be helped. Kimberly wasn't seen consuming the drug of【Berserk】. If someone was dashed with the drug, then they would turn into berserker in a matter of seconds. The question was how could Kimberly who was in restrain was now displaying the symptom in this timing.

Kousuke and Vanessa shifted their position to protect Emily and Grant family while taking wait-and-see stance. During that time, Kimberly finally tore off the metallic shackle using his enlarged body and reinforced muscle.

「oOOOOOOOOOOOO!!」

Kimberly whose looks now had overreached a little bit too much from being wild-type, glared at the surrounding with bloodshot eyes. No one understood how Kimberly suddenly turned into berserker, even so it didn't change the situation that there was a threat before them.

Therefore, the captain was about to give the shooting order.

『Kimberly-kun. Thank you for the great demonstration. ……You can die already now.』

「Gih, gah!?」

The voice of the man who introduced himself as Odin streamed out from the phone speaker. It was a death sentence that sounded really light. The next moment, Kimberly who even now was deciding of which prey to attack suddenly twitched and convulsed, and then it began to writhe in agony while raising anguished voice.

While everyone was feeling baffled, white smoke was raising from the whole body of Kimberly and his body was enlarged even further while unpleasant sound *book book* could be heard. And then, the next moment when his body height reached three meter, he dried up and shriveled all at once like a balloon that was leaking out air.

「……This is……Berserk overdose?」

Emily whispered in a daze. The symptom occurring in Kimberly's body was

exactly as Emily diagnosed. It was indeed due to Berserk overdose.

「What, did you do?」

With an expressionless gaze, Chief Magdanese was staring at her former subordinate who was meeting his end in an excessively gruesome fashion while she threw a question at the smartphone she was holding.

『You can guess can't you? It's not something that is especially difficult. A capsule filled with normal dose of Berserk, and another capsule made from concentrated Berserk that is three times the amount for overdose, those capsules were set so they would broke using remote control, then I made Kimberly-kun swallowed them. Even without antidote, I can dispose him using overdose, that's how it is.』

Odin's words caused most people to be speechless. Even calling this man as inhuman still felt lacking. This act should be called as fiendish among the fiendish. But, Odin continued his speech as though to say that there was no need to even pay attention to something like that.

『Now then, I think you understand already, but if you refuse to hand over Emily Grant, perhaps a berserker will suddenly appear in a city somewhere. You know, I have faith that you who is shouldering the safety of this country will not commit any foolish action that will lead to that.』

「No negotiation with terrorist. That is the international practice.」

『Terrorist? Let's not make a joke. I am a businessman. I'm merely doing the best I can for the sake of profit. This is a transaction. I think it's only common sense for the side that makes the proposal to obtain advantage in the negotiation.』

「……」

Chief Magdanese fell silent. This man didn't think of anything about murder. No matter how many sacrifice would result, if it was for his own profit then he would surely discard everything. Her abundant experience told her that Odin's warped and broken sense of values was the real thing.

She felt a slight hesitation. The figure of Kousuke was reflected in Chief Magdanese's quietly opened eyes. He was staring straight back at Chief

Magdanese.

Next, Chief Magdanese looked at Grant family. Carl and Sophia who were hugging Emily close were looking so pale they looked like they could faint anytime, their expression was a grievous one. But, as for the daughter in question Emily,

「……」

「……」

There was no word. For a moment, Emily's gaze moved away from Chief Magdanese toward Kousuke at her side. And then, within a moment, a small smile emerged on her lips. Like that, flame was blazing within the eyes that returned toward Chief Magdanese. It was flame of rage and resolve. That passion was certainly conveyed toward Chief Magdanese.

「Fine. I'll hand over Emily Grant.」

Carl and Sophia were about to protest loudly with despairing expression, but Emily herself stopped them.

『That's a heroic decision, chief-dono.』

Odin's voice turned slightly lively. His superiority complex oozed out from being put on an overwhelmingly dominant position.

After that, Odin told them the delivery place and the method of delivery before cutting off the communication.

「How is it?」

「……I'm sorry. We were led astray by dummy.」

Chief Magdanese returned a brief「I see」to the vexed staff. It seemed she really didn't expect much from that venue. In exchange, her gaze captured Kousuke.

「And? What will you do?」

Kousuke shrugged. He looked back across his shoulder at Emily. No word was exchanged between the two. But, when Kousuke nodded with a grin, Emily smiled softly without even a speck of unease there.

Kousuke who turned toward Chief Magdanese again then smiled fearlessly while saying.

「The other side expressly showed their tail to us. There is no reason to stay quiet isn't it? This is where both sides alternate the offense and defense turn. I am the hunting dog, and they are the prey. It's time to punish them grandly.」

Chief Magdanese sent a brief glance at the shivering Vanessa before making a deep sigh, and then she whispered with a faint smile.

「Hunting dog? Call yourself Fenrir instead. I'm feeling like going along with that god make-believe, just for a bit.」

The troops who seemed to catch that whisper were smiling wryly while nodding. Vanessa-san was sending Chief Magdanese a gaze that seemed to say「Even the chief can also speak a really excellent line huh」.

……For some reason, Chief Magdanese felt like she wanted to go home very much.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Postscript

I also wrote this at my activity report but, the latest chapter of the comic version was updated.

I put the activity report late at night, so just to be sure, I reported it here too.

Kaorin is super heroine, so if you have interest, please try to have a look at Overlap-sama's homepage without fail.

The next update is planned at 6 P.M Saturday too.

Arifureta Chapter 212

Arifureta Extra Compilation – From Abyssgate Lord of The World

Salmon Sandwich is Justice

Part 1

It was the time when the sun was reaching the peak, when warm could be felt even in this chilly air.

It was also the time for afternoon break. Places like café and the likes in the downtown were showing bustling situation as suits the occasion with housewives and company employees.

In one of such café, the wooden building complemented with furniture, table, and chair that were similarly made from wood brought out chic calm atmosphere. It was an old shop that was locally famous. Kousuke was there.

The inside of the café was spacious. Even the second floor was usable, which was rare for an old shop. About a third of the café starting from the entrance was used as atrium, so someone standing near the banister at the second floor could observe well the situation at the first floor. Kousuke and co were sitting around the table near the banister at that second floor.

「Britain has strong image of bad food, but delicious shop is normally delicious isn't it?」

「Kousuke……it's not like I'm saying that it's bad, but what are you doing eating normally like that? Even though this is a place that the enemy designated……」

Kousuke was stuffing his cheeks enthusiastically with salmon sandwich, one of the specialties of this café. Seeing that, Emily made a troubled expression while she took a sip at her own tea that had been mixed with a lot of milk.

「Isn't it fine, Doctor Grant. He doesn't lose his presence of mind in any kind of

time. As expected from Kousuke-san. I'm getting wet.」

「Paradis, please bear the TPO in mind. I'll arrest you for public obscenity.」

Vanessa who in a glance looked serious with her crisp expression ran her mouth saying such obscene thing. Before her partner Emily could make a retort as the straight man, an intensely chilly warning was given. It was Chief Magdanese who was drinking black tea with a composed atmosphere.

Yesterday, after they received contact from the mastermind who introduced himself as Odin, a mail that detailed of the time and place to hand over Emily Grant was sent to the smartphone Kimberly left behind.

It was this place. It was a bit unexpected for the delivery to be done in this café at the afternoon when it was overflowing with people, but when an additional instruction that Chief Magdanese would be the one doing the handing over at that place, this method could be said very clever.

The habitual practice for something like this would be for Emily alone to be present at the designated place, but naturally the enemy would be on guard against tracking measure. And then what they would be worried about the most was in a case that a countermeasure that was beyond mere tracking measure was applied.

Yes, they feared that the security bureau would take step to erase Emily. It was hard to imagine that the security bureau would let go of Emily under their very nose to the hand of the enemy after they knew the value of【Berserk】. In this situation, such last measure had to be kept in mind.

Emily going alone to the designated place where she then got retrieved by the enemy, if here she wasn't attached with tracking measure but explosive instead……. Honestly, that would be unbearable. Even the enemy was a creature that belonged in darkness, that was why they knew about how lacking in mercy Chief Magdanese was.

But, if they designated a place that was crowded like this, and furthermore they made Chief Magdanese to also attend, then as expected even Chief Magdanese wouldn't be able to take that kind of measure without doubt. And then, they would ascertain that Emily really didn't carry anything unnecessary at the scene of the handing over.

By the way, Kousuke and Vanessa attending the handing over were due to Chief Magdanese's instruction. Naturally the enemy instructed for Chief Magdanese to do the handing over alone, but it seemed that she would take a stance of「I brought them by mistake. It can't be helped that they are here right?」.

Kousuke wasn't even hiding himself, but from the perspective of the enemy who was desiring Emily so much that hand could grasp out from their throat, it seemed that they wouldn't be able to do anything other than complaining about instruction violation of this level. Leaving that aside, it was better for Kousuke and Vanessa to be at Emily's side to show that they weren't yes-man, and also as the support Emily's heart.

Although, honestly, putting aside Kousuke, perhaps it was a bit of failure to let Vanessa attend too. That was what Chief Magdanese was thinking.

「And, it's okay that you are entranced by the salmon sandwich but, what about the surrounding's state, Mr. Abyssgate?」

「It's Kousuke. Are you listening? My name is Kousuke, okay, chief-san.」

「Yes, I understand Mr. Abyssgate. And? There isn't any report about something suspicious from the deployed personnel, but I wonder if there is anyone suspicious slipping in the crowd?」

「……The plump middle-aged man in grey suits entering the café just now, and the emaciated middle-aged female arriving right now. It's vague, but they are looking strangely nervous for someone who only arrived for lunch.」

Chief-san didn't change the way she called him no matter how many times he said it. Perhaps she was unexpectedly bearing grudge from getting her prided squad half-destroyed. She gave no damn at the reproachful gaze of Kousuke. While pretending to drink her black tea, using a receiver attached on her arm cuff, she called the attention of the personnel that were standing by without showing even a bit of unnatural sign.

Emily who was smiling faintly seeing that exchange then sighed a bit. It was as though she was unraveling her breathing that she didn't realize was tense. Kousuke who sharply noticed that moved her reproachful gaze from Chief Magdanese toward Emily.

「What's the matter Emily? As I thought, are you feeling scared?」

It seemed Emily was happy that Kousuke noticed the small change in herself. She returned a soft smile at Kousuke's worried gaze. Inside that smile, there was heat that were unmistakably filled with immense trust and an even more immense special feeling that could be peeked on in a glance.

「I'm fine Kousuke. I was a bit tense, but I'm not scared or anything. Because Kousuke is staying at my side. Surely this spot is the safest place in the world.」

「Uh huh.」

Kousuke replied curtly. However that wasn't because he was apathetic, but because he was shy from the trust and good will that a beautiful girl were sending to him without any doubt. His faintly red ears showed that more eloquently than anything.

By the way, the people of Grant family were currently safeguarded in the truest meaning at a facility of the security bureau. The elites of security bureau and Kousuke's clone body were standing on guard there, so it could be said to be completely safe. That too made it so no unease and fear existed in Emily's heart.

「I'm also not scared you know, Kousuke-san. I believe in you. I love you.」

「Wait Vanessa! What are you saying out of nowhere! It's no good if you say something like that so lightly!」

Vanessa-san nonchalantly confessed her love with extremely serious expression. Emily's cheeks turned red while she retorted, or rather she intimidated. The voice of her heart「Get your hand away from my Kousuke!」felt like it was audible somehow.

Kousuke who got good will directed at him from two women was troubled, about should he convey the truth that he couldn't properly say since last night due to the all the mess——that actually he had a beloved lover who his heart had decided on. No, he definitely should tell them about it, but the problem was choosing the timing.

Just what kind of change would occur in Emily's mental state if Rana's existence was shed light on at this series of events that showed no sign of stopping……. It was a matter that ought to be informed to her quickly, but in the

worst case it would bring about bad influence at the situation from here on.

Even while Kousuke kept worrying ‘uu~n’, he saw how the straight (?) confession of Vanessa who knew no shame was causing Emily’s face to turn red before she shook her head with her side-tail shaking left and right, her mind worriedly thinking「Uu, is it better if I properly speak out too? But, that’s really embarrassing!」. That caused him to determine himself that it was better to say it clearly with urgency.

「He, hey, Emily.」

「Whaaat, Kousuke.」

Emily-chan’s cheeks loosened up broadly in a smile, as though she was happy only from getting called. There was a theory that it was easy for man and woman who were sharing dangerous situation to convert the nervousness they felt at that time into emotion of love, but in Emily’s case, it seemed that theory was spot on. As expected from an easy heroine.

Seeing how Emily was like that, Kousuke went「Uuh」with his words got hitched inside his throat. From Emily who was waiting for Kousuke’s words, he could see the vision of dog ears on Emily’s head and a dog tail on Emily’s lower back. Those visions were shaken to left and right so energetically. She looked like a loyal dog that was waiting for her owner’s word.

——Genius girl wearing lab coat, cat eyes, blond hair, side-tail, charisma guard, peeing girl, straight-man attribute, easy heroine. And then, loyal dog attribute toward someone she liked.

Just how many attributes she was planning to increase……

Honestly speaking, the figure of Emily waiting for his words with wide smile was really lovely and charming. But, exactly because of that, that Kousuke resolved himself and opened his mouth.

「Yo, you see, I, actually——」

「They are coming. Stop with the youthful scene there, focus yourself.」

Chief Magdanese’s cool voice interrupted him decisively. Kousuke’s cheeks were twitching. Emily’s expression turned puzzled, but she immediately tensed

her expression.

Chief Magdanese and Vanessa were looking at downstairs. There were three men wrapped in black suit and coat. Their expression couldn't be understood because of the sunglasses they were wearing, but their atmosphere was obviously different from civilian. Those who understood would understand. These three had heavy air coiling around them, air of someone used to immorality and violence.

The three men were slowly looking over inside the café, and then they noticed the gaze of Chief Magdanese looking down at them from the second floor and they lifted the corner of their lips. And then, they climbed the stairs that connected to the second floor.

「Hmph? Chief-san, what is the meaning of this?」

「Is there any problem?」

One of the men stood still and shifted his sunglasses while glaring at *Vanessa.* But, Chief Magdanese calmly replied to the question, and so the man only snorted before sitting down on an empty chair. The other two were sitting on the chair at the neighboring table.

The moment the man sat down, his gaze crawled all over Emily without any reservation. Emily looked aside without even hiding her disgusted look. And then, perhaps because it was his habit, the man snorted again. And then without even asking permission, he took the ginger ale Kousuke ordered and drank the content in one gulp.

「Well, no matter. Our side won't make any complain if you hand over Emily Grant to us. I think you understand, but don't have any stupid idea. Including tracking.」

The man lightly lifted his hand. In response, one of the men took out a small device from his breast pocket. And then, he pointed that device at Emily. It seemed that it was something to search for transmitter.

At the same time, the man took out something square from his breast pocket. It looked like a Zippo lighter which made *kin-* sound when its lid was opened. Inside it wasn't anything like incendiary apparatus, but a button.

「It's interesting isn't it? Just by scattering a bit of bait to cornered people, they will do anything you want. Just with a single cheque, they will believe shady words like being test subject for new nutrients and swallow unknown thing. They will even obediently follow sudden cryptic instruction to go into this café for example.」

The speech of the man who was putting on a warped smile caused Emily to grit her teeth audibly and Vanessa to glare wrathfully. Needless to say, the man meant that people who had taken capsule-type Berserk were inside this café. And then, the detonator that looked like lighter the man was holding could destroy the capsule and transformed those people into berserker that wouldn't be able to go back to normal. In the middle of this crowded café with the sun high in the sky.

The man pretended to tremble at Emily and Vanessa's wrath.

「It doesn't seem like you are that Odin. And then, what are you going to do after taking away Doctor Grant? You will make her create the antidote, cause pandemic of【Berserk】to outbreak, and then make a killing in profit……by that point of time you will be tracked down you know? It will be the same even if you sell it to some organization somewhere in the underworld. Do you think you will be able to get away from the security bureau?」

「Who knows. That's not something that lowly bunch like us will know. That will be boss's decision. Now then, we also cannot keep making pointless talk. How about we excuse ourselves soon?」

The man directed his gaze at the man who was checking for tracking device. The man who seemed to finish already his checking shook his head and reported that he found nothing. The first man nodded in satisfaction hearing that and he put his hand on Emily's shoulder. *twitch*, Emily's body trembled, not from shock or fear, but simply from disgust.

Vanessa was about to reflexively drive off that hand, but then the man showed off the lighter detonator.

He showed——

「Kufuh」

「Puh」

「Fufuh」

Vanessa spontaneously snorted. Emily also averted her face with her shoulders shaking. And in a very rare occasion, even Chief Magdanese had a small smile on her lips.

That couldn't be helped. After all what the man was lifting with expression of contempt that was full of sense of superiority as though to say 'you cannot do anything can't you huh' was……

A salmon sandwich.

Furthermore, it was a remain of one that had been eaten until a size that was about the same with the lighter, a bite-sized salmon sandwich. It was accompanied with a lot of splendid bite mark.

「!?」

The man raised a soundless voice of shock and threw that salmon sandwich to the ground. And then, he stood up while kicking down the chair before taking one, two step away from Chief Magdanese and co.

「You bitches, screwing around with me!」

The man immediately guessed that the detonator had been replaced when he didn't notice, and that the perpetrator must be Vanessa who was attending here for some reason. He was about to take out something from his breast pocket. Most likely it was a spare detonator.

The man quickly took that out and thrust it forward threateningly.

Yes, it was a bite-sized salmon sandwich.

「What the hell!?」

Emily, Vanessa, and Chief Magdanese burst out「pufuh」once again. Hearing that, the man turned beet red from shame and confusion.

「Oi-! Take out the spare! Blow up the first and the second!」

The man ordered the third man. It seemed that the third man was also in possession of the detonator. A spare on top of spare. They were really prepared.

Although, there was no response from the third man toward the first man's order. The reason was

「Oi-. You listening!? Quickly——wait, why the hell you bastard stuffing your mouth with salmon sandwich huh!?」

Yes, the third man had his mouth stuffed full with salmon sandwich. The first man was enraged and he gripped the shoulder of his subordinate who got the sauce of salmon sandwich trickling down from the corner of his mouth, and he pulled him up forcefully.

Then, with a shake the third man fell face-up limply, exposing his face, the white of his eyes were laid bare with salmon sandwich still filling his mouth. The man unconsciously raised his voice「Oo!?」in shock and backed away. *thud* A sound came from behind him and he turned around in reaction.

Over there was,

「You got salmon sandwich too!?」

As expected, there he saw another of his subordinate fainted with salmon sandwich stuffing his mouth and the white of his eyes exposed. In addition, both of his hands were joined together on his chest for some reason, like a corpse that was put inside a coffin.

「What, what is happe——」

「Isn't it simple? The salmon sandwich of this café is just too delicious. So much so that the moment they ate it, they ascended to heaven. That's all.」

「-!?」

Hearing the unknown voice resounding from right behind him, the man twitched while turning around. Over there he saw Kousuke stuffing his mouth elegantly (?) with salmon sandwich. He might be transformed halfway to Lord Abyssgate, because even though his attire was still the same but he was wearing sunglasses.

While the man stiffened seeing the unfamiliar Japanese young man with the strange atmosphere, Kousuke called「Isn't that right?」to a young female waitress stiffening in slight distance away due to the commotion, looking for

agreement.

The waitress who suddenly got attention directed at her shook her head left and right forcefully while strongly denying「Our salmon sandwich is not that delicious!」. Surely she meant to imply that 'No one will want to eat sandwich that send people to heaven!'……

That voice of the waitress that unexpectedly resounded really well reached the first floor. A middle-aged man that seemed to be the shop manager looked up in wonder about what was going on there. Seeing the beautiful vein emerging on that man's head, it seemed that the waitress's implication wasn't conveyed correctly to him. The future of the girl's employment in this café from here on was in doubt.

「Yo, you think you can get away by doing something like this? We are not the only one carrying detonator you know? Even now, this place——」

「Are you talking about the five men who monitor*ed* this place? Or perhaps, about the people who *were* watching the image being sent by the hidden camera set up inside the café? If it's them, then right now they should be heading to a special hotel escorted by the kindly considerate troops I think. Everyone is sound asleep. It seems they cannot stand their everyday exhausting work. Don't you think that your company is too black?」(TN: Black company = a company that exploit its employee too much)

「I, impossible……」

The man tried to take out a communication device from his pocket in panic.

……What came out was a salmon sandwich.

Also, the one that made the enemy observing this café from outside to faint was of course Kousuke. The hidden cameras inside the café were searched around by Kousuke in full invisibility last night, while the bureau staffs traced the communication channel and determined the location of the observers.

During the time Kousuke was searching for hidden camera, the enemy force that was observing the café in case the bureau was setting up something to the building sometimes witnessed black shadow displayed in the camera out of nowhere. They all shrieked in complete chaos yelling things like「Tha, that's

Shadowman! This is the first time I saw it!」or「Lies……even though I shouldn't have any supernatural sense」or「AMEN-, AMEEEN-!」.

Even when Kousuke normally entered their room, they were replaying the recorded video while,

「Don't you think this will be big money if we bring it to TV station?」

「Wa, wait. This is the real Shadowman you know? I, heard something before. That there are dangerous guys researching something like this.」

「Aa, I also heard that from mummy. In this world, there is occultist group who is extremely fond for something like this, so be careful she said. She also said, that even if you see it, just pretend you never saw anything. If not, you are going to get kidnapped somewhere, and turned into sacrifice for black magician.」

「Seriously……it's scary, this underworld organization……」

They said things like that to each other while making a fuss. It went without saying that Kousuke made a retort「No, you color is different, but you guys are also members of underworld organization」.

And then, Kousuke who was suddenly driven up by mischievous heart took how he was unnoticed as a good opportunity and he tried to cause several bizarre phenomenon. For example he made the door to open and close on its own accord, then he made knocking sound from outside the window, and kidnapped them one by one unnoticed, and wrote「next is you」using magic on the monitor while the panicked people didn't notice, and so on, and in the end, he twined steel thread on the legs of one of them, and pulled that person out from the room……

The expression of the remaining people who were witnessing the figure of their comrade screaming while reaching out his hand to them, however, it went in vain and he was pulled by something unseen and disappeared deep in the corridor……those were expression that had trauma completely planted in it.

And then, the bureau staffs that were watching that from the side exploded in laughter all at once. It also went without saying that Chief Magdanese covered her face with both hands while sighing.

All the enemies fell into the bottom of terror, in addition they were perfectly

apprehended. Kousuke who accomplished that was welcomed by all the bureau staffs with high five and「Iyahha—!」. Seeing that, Chief Magdanese whispered「I should just go home already」. It could be seen how tired she was from that.

Now then, putting aside Chief Magdanese who was having a faraway look from remembering the event that gave her headache last night, the man who possessed nothing but salmon sandwich and whose comrades were annihilated without him noticing was drenched with cold sweat while he tried to turn around.

「Well, don't be in such a hurry. I'm thinking of making you as our guide. That's why, it will be troubling if you go home by yourself.」

「Gu, guide you say? To boss's place? Hah, that's pointless. I'm not going to say anything yeah? I know really well boss's scariness. If I betray him, just what kind of hell I'll taste then……it's better to die.」

「I see. You will surely guide us gladly after this. I'm convinced of that. Anyway, we will become nuisance staying here. Let's have a slow talk over there okay?」

Kousuke stood up from his chair and put on a smile on his face. Seeing that, the man yelled「Shit-」while trying to jump out from the terrace of the second floor. Because Kousuke was blocking the stair, he thought that he would be able to escape somehow if it was just from the second floor.

But, there was no way Kousuke could be taken by surprise just from that much,

「Abyss-style Martial Art's Secret Technique——"Inconsiderable Banquet of Gluttony(Salmon Sandwich Got No Match!)"」

「Mugah!?」

Kousuke that circled behind the man instantly stuffed his mouth full with salmon sandwich. The writhing man was completely pinioned from behind with his mouth being pressed down, unable to run away or spit out the sandwich.

The man became half-panicked and for a while he kept struggling and kicking around, but before long his eyes rolled up and exposed the white of his eyes, and he fainted powerlessly. A scrap of salmon slipped out from the mouth of the limply falling man.

「Yep, as I thought, the salmon sandwich of this café is amazing. It instantly send people to heaven.」

Kousuke nodded in satisfaction while looking at the fainting man. Everyone inside the café thought this. 「No, you just made him suffocate normally there」. But they didn't say it out loud. Because, it was scary.

Chief Magdanese whose sigh remarkably increased in number these few days was sighing even deeper while sending sign to her subordinates. The rushing subordinates quickly apprehended the three men and furthermore they also politely led away several of the guests that seemed to have【Berserk】administered into them.

The café fell into uproar from the sudden arrest. In the middle of that Emily was making a complicated expression while asking Kousuke who was going to leave the café following behind Chief Magdanese.

「Hey, Kousuke. Why are you so fixated with salmon sandwich like that? Do you love it?」

「Yep, I love it.」

「I, is that so……」

Of course, Kousuke answered that he loved salmon sandwich. But, Emily's face turned red from seeing Kousuke saying 'love' with a serious face that was staring straight at her. With a glance at Emily who was like that, Kousuke climbed down the stairs while he started to explain with exposition that was at the same level like a certain gourmet reporter whose catchphrase was 'jewel box of taste ya~', about just how amazing the salmon sandwich of this store was. (TN: In Japan there is this famous gourmet reporter named Hikomaru, with a catch phrase of 'jewel box of (insert food name here) ya~'. It seems this guy's cheerful personality and impactful comment made him the face of the present era gourmet program)

After Kousuke left the café, it went without saying that the sale of this café's salmon sandwich increased explosively.

Part 2

That night the moon was completely hidden by the cloud. In this dark world without light from the night sky, there was a high-rise building illuminated brilliantly by artificial light. For a normal company, at this time most of the employees would be home already and there would be few lighting, but it was only this building that was leaking out light from all of its floors.

The entrance of that high-rise building and the outer wall near the highest floor were drawn with the company name and emblem. The company name was【Gamma Pharmaceutical】.

A car's headlight was illuminating the back road of that【Gamma Pharmaceutical】. The car was stopped once by the guard in front of the gate of iron bars. The man behind the car's steering wheel showed his face to that guard and also his identification card.

It seemed that the guard knew the face of the driver. The guard showed a wry smile while giving words of appreciation「Must be hard work to come at this kind of time even though you aren't even a researcher」. He then took the identification card to the guard room and used a card reader to read the card to open the gate.

The man behind the driving seat shrugged his shoulders and said「It's the superior's command. I cannot go against it」while receiving back his identification card. At that time, the guard saw the person sitting at the backseat and he raised his eyebrows questioningly.

When the driver told the guard「This person is a genius doctor even if she look like this. It seems she will be our company's hidden ace you know」, it seemed the person in the backseat noticed that they were talking about her. The girl wearing lab coat with her hair tied into side-tail then faced toward the guard and smiled friendlily.

Being smiled at by an amiable beautiful girl, the middle-aged guard slackened

down and he smiled broadly. And then he said「Even though you are still young, you mustn't force yourself too hard to work until this kind of time you know」while drawing back.

The car then passed through the gate and kept running until its figure vanished into a rear entrance for the underground parking area.

The car parked on a corner of the underground parking area before the driver and girl in lab coat——Emily got down.

「Is this place really where the mastermind is staying? This is a large company that can be counted in one hand even at Britain.」

「So you doesn't believe it Miss? I said already that I am the direct subordinate of this place's president——Kaysis Wentworks.」

「Shut up. I won't talk to you.」

「……Ou.」

The man who received that really piercing reply got sullen. Even so he obediently backed down. He, the man who fainted after eating Kousuke's secret technique——Woody urged Emily to move with a pouting face.

Following Woody's guidance, they rode an exclusive elevator that would only move using employee ID card. This high-rise building had 66 floors in total with a height that surpassed 200 meters. They could see the night view of the city from the high-speed elevator that was attached on the outside. The higher the elevator got, the wider the view that could be seen.

「It's beautiful……」

「Yeah, this scenery——」

「I'm not talking to you.」

「……Got it.」

Woody's feeling was hurt from that second piercing reply. A beautiful girl with sparkling eyes clinging at the scenery outside, and a tough man exposing pouting face beside her. The scene was really surreal.

Before long, *ting* along with such sound, the elevator's floor display showed

they were at the highest floor. Emily who came back to her senses from that sound turned around and followed behind Woody who had exited the elevator first. They passed over several corners and rooms, through several electronic locks, and in the end reached a heavy door that was engraved with the company's emblem.

Woody walked toward the display installed beside the two-leaf door and pressed a button.

「Boss, this is Woody. Just as my message, I arrived just now. I'm bringing Doctor Grant.」

『Finally. I'm opening the door now.』

The door of the president's office was constructed so it could only be opened from inside. Because of that, Woody and Emily waited for the room's owner Kaysis to open the door.

pushu With the sound of air spurting out, the two-leaf door opened. The two of them entered with Woody in the lead. The door immediately closed behind them. Emily looked at that across her shoulder and inside her heart she evaluated that the enemy was really cautious.

When her gaze returned to the front, she saw a man at his early thirty sitting deeply on a luxurious chair. He was a slender and blond man. His narrow eyes that looked like fox and his loose and slovenly smile gave a frivolous impression that didn't suit a president of a large company.

But, the moment that man saw the figure of Emily behind Woody, Emily saw inside the man's slightly opened eyes and unconsciously felt gooseflesh in her spine.

She thought that this man was like a snake. His gaze was that of a snake catching sight of a mouse that would be the prey. She must not be deceived by this man's external frivolous impression. Cunning and malice were compressed inside this man. Yes, detestable aura that made her unconditionally believed that was expressed in this man's eyes.

Emily unconsciously stopped walking all of a sudden. Seeing that caused Kaysis's smile to deepen further. His evil smile that gave no hint of humanity

made Emily to spontaneously gulp loudly. Even Woody that was slightly in front of her also gulped loudly like her. Surely he understood just how evil that smile was.

「Hey, Emily-chan. Nice of you to come. My company welcomes you with open arms.」

Kaysis stood up and detoured around his large desk while spreading his hands open in a welcoming gesture. Emily almost shrank back from the approaching mass of malice, however, she suddenly noticed what she was about to do and she gritted her teeth.

And then, she returned her drawing back foot to its former spot and glared back threateningly with piercing cat-eyes.

Kaysis displayed emotion of surprise for a moment, but he soon started to stare with a gaze of unconcealed sadism.

「How nice, that arouse me. A girl making that kind of eye is just my favorite. How about it Emily-chan? Won't you become mine instead of just being a researcher in my company? You will be able to obtain anything you wish by doing that you know?」

「And, you will torment me who naturally is going to refuse, and then want to make me say that with my own mouth isn't that right? Anyway, go through plastic surgery first. The vulgarity of your character is coming out on your face you know?」

Even while Emily was still shaking a bit, but she threw back a scathing reply boldly. Woody looked back to her with a slightly shocked expression. Kaysis's expression was increasingly changing as though there was a delicious fruit put in front of him.

「That's a hurtful way of speaking. But, it arouses me instead. Just how long you can continue with that kind of attitude, aa, I'm really looking forward to it more and more.」

「Your disgusting behavior doesn't matter. Rather than that, are you Odin?」

While nodding, Kaysis approached until he was in short distance from Emily who was asking that to him with undisguised revulsion.

「Indeed, that's correct. I am Odin. Well, that name is just for a jest though. My real name is Kaysis Wentworks.」

「You were……the one that stole【Berserk】? The one that released the infected person in the middle of city?」

Kaysis's fingertip stroked Emily's cheek. Even while feeling nausea from that touch, Emily asked for confirmation to him. She wanted to confirm, 'are you the main culprit of everything?', like that.

「You can say that, but you can also say that it's not so.」

「What do you mean? Answer me!」

「Fufu, you are really strong-willed. Just like a cute cat.」

Kaysis dodged Emily's questioning noncommittally. His snake-like eyes shined while his hand touched Emily's slender neck. Of course, just with that it would be impossible to choke the neck and kill a person. But, most likely he just wanted to see Emily's suffering face for fun.

Emily's face slightly grimaced when that hand jerked with strength. Kaysis's expression was increasingly filled with joy by that but……

「……What are you doing?」

「I cannot just stay quiet watching more than this. Can I ask you to take off that hand from the miss?」

The one that grasped Kaysis's hand and forcefully jerked it away from Emily's neck was the man at her side——Woody. Kaysis sent him a dangerous gaze. Kaysis's eyes were tinged with dangerous light from how his subordinate showed an unforeseen rebellious attitude, and from how he called Emily as「miss」.

「I wonder if you understand just who are you opening your mouth to. Or else, don't tell me you are cajoled by this child? No matter how unlikely I think that is.」

「No way, such thing is unimaginable to happen between me and miss. Besides, I'm doing this with full preparedness for everything.」

Kaysis shook off Woody's arm roughly, then he took out a handgun offhandedly from his breast pocket and pointed it at Woody. At the same time,

he snapped his finger *pachin* and armed men appeared from hidden doors set up everywhere inside the room. They pointed their gun muzzle toward Woody.

However, Woody who knew about the existence of the guards standing by inside the room naturally wasn't perturbed.

「Full preparedness? I really don't get you. Just what in the world happened?」

「Nothing special. If I'm forced to say, then it's because I found a place with better employment term than here I guess. Any humble salary man will change their job to a place with better condition right?」

「Hou. I see, so you are cajoled by the security bureau. Just how much you can receive from them? Aa, just to be clear, I'm not planning to ask you to come back by offering you more than their offer. Your fate is decided already here.」

「Even if you told me to come back, I absolutely won't. After all, it's remuneration that you cannot possibly prepare.」

「……It's that much money? Answer, how much that you got?」

So much remuneration to the degree that a president of a large company that was in the top five of Britain couldn't match it. Kaysis's expression was slightly colored with interest when he was told something like that. He was wondering, just what kind of world the security bureau used to steal his subordinate.

Seeing Kaysis like that, the corner of Woody's lips rose up in a wide grin. And then with a boastful, elated, and joyful expression that couldn't be suppressed!!, he spoke the detail of the remuneration he obtained.

「Kukuh, listen and be astonished! My reward iiis, the finest quality of salmon sandwich, FOR A YEARRRR-!」

「……hm?」

Kaysis-san was confused. His heinous air was unconsciously scattered apart and he tilted his head plainly thinking「Am I mishearing?」. The other guards were also the same like that.

Amidst such confusion, Emily who knew about the circumstance made a complicated expression as expected. And then, for the second time she asked the same question like before in the café.

「Hey, Kousuke. Why is it salmon sandwich? Do you like it that much?」

Hearing Emily calling a name of a person he had never heard before, Kaysis sent a suspicious gaze at her.

But, at the next moment, he turned around in shock.

「Aa, yeah. Honestly, even I myself am thinking, perhaps this hypnotist is wrong.」

The guards also turned around.

Over there, before anyone knew it, a young man in black clothes was sitting on the president chair while scratching on his cheek with a wry smile.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

About the salmon sandwich pressuring of this chapter.

If I have to say why, that's because the author is getting fixated with it.

Salmon sandwich that is unexpectedly off-the-shelf.

If I made a handmade one, it was doubtful the chapter posting would make it in time……

I'm sorry.

The next update is planned at 6 P.M Saturday too.

Arifureta Chapter 213

Arifureta Extra Compilation – From Abyssgate Lord of The World

Become……A Splendid Villager

Part 1

With magnificent night sky as the background, a young man in black clothes was sitting on the president chair.

Such a sight made even Kaysis to be struck dumb and lost for word. The guards at the surrounding too, they were guards that were under the direct control of the president, usually no matter what the situation was they wouldn't be shaken and able to react swiftly, but it was only at this time that they exposed a stupid expression without being able to aim their gun.

「Emily, over here.」

「Yes!」

Kousuke beckoned with his hand and Emily rushed toward him with an excited voice. Even though her external appearance was like a haughty cat, but dog ears and dog tail could be hallucinated to be attached on her. That energetically shaking ears and tail truly made her fit to be doggy Emily-chan……

Emily circled around the large desk with cute sound of footsteps *pata-pata* and without stopping she stopped still right beside Kousuke.

After that, 'Don't leave me behind!' with such feel, Woody followed behind in hurry while his footsteps were loudly resounding. And then he came to a stop at the opposite side of Emily and slightly behind.

……Someone sitting snugly on the president chair, waited on by a beautiful girl beside him and a scary-looking man standing by behind him.

No matter how anyone looked, it was Kousuke that looked like a mastermind. Perhaps it should be said that it was just as expected from the right-hand man of the demon king.

「……What are you? Where did you enter from?」

Kaysis recovered quickly from his agitation, and then he asked toward Kousuke who was sitting on his chair while staring angrily.

That question was only natural to be asked. The elevator that Emily and Woody were riding was the only route that could lead to this president office. Naturally that elevator was installed with security cameras which could be watched from the president office. There were countless security cameras existing between the elevator until the president office, and naturally there was also a security camera in front of the door of the president office.

Naturally Kaysis himself checked on all those cameras, and the guards who now finally moved their gun muzzle, they should have also checked the monitors at the observation room located at the other side of the hidden door of the president room.

But, there wasn't even a single one among them who detected Kousuke's existence.

To enter this room located at the highest floor, it could only by getting through the front door that could only be opened by Kaysis from inside. If that door was closed, the room would completely become a closed room. The air duct's size couldn't be entered by human and it would be absurd for someone to enter from the window.

From the point of view of Kaysis and others, in this situation there was no other way to describe it other than this young man suddenly appearing out of nowhere.

Although, the answer of Kousuke was simple.

「Even if you ask me from where, wasn't it you who invited me in? From that door over there.」

「Impossible. I don't know someone like you……」

「Well, that's because I'm just a little bit inconspicuous. I won't be bothered even if you overlooked me, not at all. I'm speaking the truth you know?」

Kousuke shrugged. This time he was following Emily from behind using full power invisibility while making use of the blind spot of the security cameras, so it was justified that they didn't notice him, and he was also really not bothered by it. It was his habit, of making excuse「I'm not bothered okay? I'm really not hurt okay?」when other people couldn't notice him.

Kaysis naturally couldn't believe Kousuke's answer, and he guessed that Kousuke didn't plan to disclose the trick. So he straightened up his collar and took a pompous attitude before changing the topic.

「……Well, no matter. By the way, you, the one sitting there in my chair as though it is your own. Who are you? You seem to be Japanese, and I cannot believe that you are from security bureau but……even so, you infiltrate to this place by yourself. By any chance, there is even a Japanese young man among the agents of "JD Agency"?」

Kaysis's expression was clearly displeased seeing his chair occupied by someone else while he spoke his prediction. But indeed, that prediction was the most possible one.

「Hee, that JD Agency is supposed to be a "non-existent organization" but…… it's normally known like this.」

「It's not normally known. But, that's a common knowledge among the highly positioned people of this side of the world. They are paying the maximum caution to the security bureau chief and intelligent department chief, and toward the "erasure organization" these two are leading.」

「Well, if you are the top of underworld organization, I guess you would have them getting in your way many times and dealt you a hard blow. That kind of people should be able to grasp their existence from the piling up facts……but, won't it be a problem that the name of the organization is exposed?」

Chief Magdanese was grasping the situation at this place through a device that was attached on Kousuke. She was shrugging inside a surveillance car that was slight distance away from the building.

『This is what you called an open secret. Having it be known to a certain degree will also become a deterrence.』

Kousuke nodded「I see」to the words transmitted to him through the device. Kaysis guessed from that, that Kousuke was communicating with outside and he became convinced that Kousuke was a member of security bureau.

Though in truth he was the vanguard of a more dangerous group……

「Fumu, should I say that it's just as expected from the chief of the security bureau. To be able to subvert an enemy at that kind of situation and then sending in a skilled agent……. Yet, I cannot help but say that you are a little bit too rash.」

Kaysis said that and took out a smartphone from his breast pocket. Then his finger suddenly slid through its display.

「Aa, that again. That's a switch for【Berserk】activation right?」

「Fufu, so you understand. Once I pushed this button, a lot of berserkers would rampage at the middle of several dozen cities. Aah, let me correct one thing. This is certainly an "activation" button, but this smartphone is originally used for "cancellation".」

「……I see. I had been thinking about it even before entering this room, but you are really a wary person huh. If a password isn't entered into that smartphone in regular interval to cancel the activation state, then the drug will activate on their own accord. Is it something like that?」

「You have a good understanding. Exactly. Therefore, even if you steal this from me, even if you kill me, it would be meaningless. Rather, that will become the opening curtain of an unprecedented disaster. It's not something that can be risked by you people who are shouldering the security of this country isn't it?」

Kaysis talked with a broad grin and snake-like gaze. Surely the cancellation password wasn't known by anyone except Kaysis. And it didn't seem like he would talk even if he was captured, and if he was killed then a great disaster would definitely occur.

Kaysis believed without doubt that he was in an overwhelmingly superior position. It seemed his selling point was this craftiness of him. He lifted the

smartphone that was his lifeline in one hand while his other hand moved forward in inviting gesture.

「Now then, Emily. Come to my side. That is if you don't want a great number of sacrifice to be created in this country because of something that you created.」

「-, this low-life」

Emily's skin felt goosebumps from the gaze of Kaysis who was immersed in joy. She cursed him without even hiding her feeling of disgust. But Kaysis's smile was deepening. It seemed that even that disgust felt pleasant for him.

「That's right. It's already inevitable that you will become mine, but a punishment is needed after you dragged this uninvited person here isn't it? How about you give me a kiss of oath after you come here.」

「Wha, what are——」

「Fufu, it seems that young agent-kun over there is a special existence for you. Then, it will be a lovely punishment if I make you offer that body to other man in front of his eyes as the proof of parting. Don't you think so?」

Surely when someone talked about the height of low-life, it would refer to a person like this. Making other people submit, and smeared them with humiliation and shame were the greatest happiness for this man. The unhappiness of other people was exactly the nourishment for his life. His smoothly moving tongue moved even smoother from imagining the future that was smeared with unhappiness.

「Aa, while we are at it, perhaps it will also be good to torture him in front of you who are crying pleadingly. And then, after he become unable to endure the pain, I will make him say this. ——『Please, just do whatever you like to Emily, spare me already』like that. When I imagine the face of Emily at that time——」

「So it's true that a third-class villain like to prattle on and on.」

A calm voice reached Kaysis who was continuing to talk with expression of ecstasy. That voice sounded exasperated, as though it was directed to a worthless existence, an apathetic voice that was really lacking in emotion.

Kaysis stared suspiciously at Kousuke who wasn't showing even a speck of unease at this situation.

「You are saying, that I'm a third-class villain?」

「Yeah. I don't know if it's because you have prepared an absolute superiority(trump card) or because you are like this from the start, but you who can play around in *this situation,* is without a doubt a third-class.」

「……」

Kaysis fell silent. He wracked his brain and reconfirmed whether there was anything that could shake his superiority, but he was holding a switch that could instantly open the curtain of tragedy if it was pressed, and if something happened to him then the tragedy would act on its own anyway in less than an hour. Such card was something that wouldn't become a worthless card that easily.

Kaysis reached a conclusion that this might be a bluff. But Kousuke suddenly stood up while speaking.

「According to the demon king, it seems that what is called a trump card is something mass produced……what about you I wonder?」

「What? Demon king? Just what are you talking a——」

Kaysis talked in suspicion, but instantly, he opened wide his eyes and his word cut off.

That was because without any advance sign, Kousuke was right in front of him.

Kaysis immediately tried to draw back his body, but the next moment, his field of vision was reversed and he was falling into confusion. But, he immediately felt an intense impact hitting his back and his voice got caught in his throat.

His gaze was wandering while he was filled with pain and confusion of what in the world had happened to him. And then what entered his sight was only the ceiling and the LED lighting. From that he understood that he had been thrown on the floor.

「Yo, you bastard, do you not care, what will happen to the city——」

「Well, that will be for later.」

His mind was flooded with pain, however Kaysis made use of his astonishment to wring out words from his mouth. But the reply he got was a casual sentence along with the back of a shoe that filled his field of vision. Simultaneously an intense impact assaulted him and his consciousness was cut off with a snap.

Inside his hearing that was rapidly getting farther away, he felt like he could hear gunshots and angry yells, and also screams……but Kaysis was swallowed by darkness without even being able to process that.

Part 2

「Bubeh!? Hah, wha, what!? What happe——hih!?」

The pain and impact suddenly running on his cheek made Kaysis woke up. His face grimaced from the dull pain he felt on his back and forehead, but even in such state he tried to rally his confused mind somehow.

However, the moment his hazy visual field became clear, he raised a shriek that he had never made until now.

Although, no one would be able to laugh at him from doing such thing. After all the cause that made Kaysis scream was a sight that was just that bizarre.

「Wha, what!? You guys, just what the hell you are doing!?」

Kaysis called out with an obviously shocked voice. Ahead of his gaze, there were his subordinates that he was familiar with.

……However, each of his subordinate was perfectly making chuni pose.

They were the guards under Kaysis's direct supervision who were inside the room with him just now. One of them had a pose where one of his legs was lifted with both his hands extended straight to both sides. It was a magnificent pose, as though he was a savage eagle that would fly away anytime.

Another person was standing in low stance with his legs spread apart widely, one of his hands was on his hip while his other hand was held crossing his chest diagonally. That pose looked as though the man was going to transform into a masked warrior in any second now.

And another pose was taking pose where his body tilted slightly forward while his right shoulder was lifted slightly, his right arm extended to below and his left hand was covering his face with his five fingers spread wide open. The angle of his waist was extremely sexy. That pose looked as though something would come out anytime now from his back.

The other too, the guards who were inside the room just before Kaysis lost

consciousness, all of them were lined up with everyone taking some kind of chuuni pose. So to speak it was like a museum of posing statue. The gallery was using the whole spacious president office.

Those people didn't answer even when Kaysis was yelling in extreme panic. Everyone of them was wearing sunglasses so their eyes couldn't be seen, but perhaps they were unconscious seeing how they weren't reacting at all. When Kaysis strained his eyes to the limit, those posing guards had their body and four limbs entangled in very fine strings, and he could see that they were being hung up like marionettes.

At the same time, Kaysis noticed that he was being restrained on his chair. His four limbs were being restrained by a similar super-fine string.

「Hey, Kousuke. Is it necessary to do this?」

「……If you ask whether there is any necessity, then the answer is definitely negative. This is bad, the damned Lord Abyssgate is easily showing out his face. Perhaps, it's hopeless already for me.」

Hearing that casual conversation in this bizarre space caused Kaysis to return to his sense in surprise. When he turned his gaze toward the voices' direction, he confirmed that there were several people right beside him.

Three of them were Kousuke, Emily, and Woody who were inside the room before this. But, in addition of them, there were further three more people.

「As expected from Kousuke-san. You don't forget this thing called "beauty" even in the middle of battle. I have underestimated you.」

「……Indeed, you suppressed the enemies in less than a minute, and during just the few minutes from you contacting us, you created this kind of artwork. This can be said as terrific. Though now I'm completely filled with the desire to go home.」

「Ahahaha, it's great that I can move now after having something unknown done to me but……this case that made even the chief to be haggard is really a heavy burden huh. I wish I could keep losing consciousness without waking up……」

Vanessa who for some reason looked dejected even though her expression was

enraptured, praised Kousuke. Chief Magdanese was having a faraway look while his gaze wouldn't move toward the posing men no matter what. And then, Allen who was made to drink restorative medicine made in another world and healed until a point where he could at least move.

In Allen's case, Emily wished that he would exit the stage with his face still disfigured like before, but Chief Magdanese said「This idiot who kept making mistake cannot be allowed to rest more than this. He has to be made to work like a cart-horse」. And so without any other choice, he was healed.

Even so, he was still far from being fully healed, for the time being his swelling was suppressed and his broken jaw repaired so he could talk. His broken teeth and lacerated nose and cheek were left alone. His face was wrapped with bandage all over like a mummy, making Allen's figure looked really painful, but there wasn't anyone who cared about that.

By the way, regarding the restorative medicine made in another world that healed Allen (the highest class of product sold for the general public), Kousuke skillfully hid it and explained that Allen was healed using his ability, so it was currently ignored by everyone thinking that Kousuke also had that kind of power.

Though it seemed that Emily was really bothered with a power that could heal bone fracture in the blink of eye but……. Naturally there was no power that could heal people turned into berserker, so Kousuke told her that while saying that he would explain to her later. Hearing that caused Emily to obediently withdraw.

「……My word, for the chief-sama of the state security bureau to be personally here. What an honor. However, you have made an extremely poor move. As expected, even a living legend has finally gone senile hasn't it?」

Kaysis implicitly conveyed that at this rate berserkers would be released in the middle of city with his sarcastic and obstinate words. His expression was also sneering at Chief Magdanese.

In a glance he looked composed, but if observed carefully, it could be seen that his eyes were twitching faintly and his voice was slightly shaking. The cause of that went without saying.

Because, there were his subordinates making chuuni pose within his view after all!

「Mister Abyssgate. I'll leave this to you..」

「That's why I told you that my name is Kousuke」

Chief Magdanese didn't show any particular concern to Kaysis's words and her gaze moved at Kousuke. Kousuke punctually said his request for correction before sighing. Then he put down a chair in front of Kaysis roughly.

Kousuke put the chair so the back of the chair was facing Kaysis and he sat down on it. He put his arms on the top of the chair's back and he gazed straight at Kaysis.

「Mister Abyssgate……. So that's your codename inside the agency. Fufu, I'll remember that. I will surely investigate your background. And then, your important people will——UBAoAa!?」

「Just who do you think you are talking to? Hold down that tongue.」

Right in the middle of Kaysis's curse toward Kousuke, immediately after that, he directly received a kick on his crotch from Vanessa who had been reduced into a believer of Lord Abyssgate, and he raised a weird scream. Actually he wanted to writhe around, but he couldn't do so because he was tied on the chair and he could only twitch repeatedly while desperately enduring the pain.

「Aa~, Vanessa. Let me do it, okay?」

「Forgive me. Against my better judgment, it annoyed me seeing his attitude that is making light of Kousuke-san.」

Just where had the Vanessa-san who was always calm, cool, and collected gone at? Even though she absolutely wasn't someone who would instantly make 'Direct Attack!' to the crotch because of provocation……

Allen and Woody similarly turned pigeon-toed while drawing away from being creeped out. Kousuke faced toward the writhing Kaysis once more while they were like that.

「Now then, Kaysis. I'll have you spit out everything. Not just the cancellation code, but also how this case started, your plan from here on, and then the location of all the【Berserk】that you stole.」

「Do, do you seriously believe, I'll talk——」

「You will. I said it right? The one who doesn't understand the situation is you. Why do you think you who is holding the trump card is getting captured like this without question? Why did Woody change side? Didn't you think about that?」

「That's……」

Of course Kaysis noticed about those abnormalities. No matter how, it was unthinkable that his subordinate would get lured away by salmon sandwich, he didn't want to think about it. Also, it was unthinkable that the security bureau would make a gamble that could involve a lot of people's life using a baseless method like torture, because there was no way he would easily confess just from that.

But, even so, there should be nothing that could shake his absolutely superior position with him taking hostage of this country's people, as long as he didn't confess anything, then there was nothing the security bureau could do except doing whatever Kaysis told them. It was undeniable that such believe was curbing down his feeling of danger toward the abnormalities. It was when he was thinking like that,

「I also told you this didn't I? That's why you are a third-rate. Honestly, regarding the mastermind of this case, well, I have no doubt that it's really you but, I think there is high possibility that there is still another existence behind you. The existence that granted you the seat as president of this large company……something like that.」

Kaysis's expression didn't change. There wasn't even any turmoil inside his eyes. His breathing was also not shaken at all. But, there also wasn't any sarcasm coming from him right away. Kousuke was convinced just from that.

Surely there was another person that knew about the existence of【Berserk】and stole it the very first. After all an impetus was necessary for Kaysis to know about the existence of【Berserk】.

At the same time, there was no doubt that this man was cunning, merciless, and excellent, but, no matter how, Kousuke couldn't believe that Kaysis had the status that counterbalanced with the organizational power Kousuke expected, so surely his conjecture that this【Gamma Pharmaceutical】wasn't at the deepest bottom of everything was correct.

While thinking so, Kousuke suddenly took out from his breast pocket a string that was attached with something that looked like five-yen coin. The size was about the same with five-yen coin, but the material looked like an amber crystal. There was a round hole at the center, and the string was tied there.

Once Chief Magdanese and others saw that item, they made a really complicated expression.

「……I don't know what you are planning to do, but if you don't release me, a lot of people will die you know? After all no matter what you are going to do to me, I absolutely won't speak.」

「You know, the world is overflowing with irrationality. Do you forget that just because you are at the side that is scattering around irrationality?」

Saying that, Kousuke then dangled the string. The crystal shaped like a five-yen coin swung back and forth in front of Kaysis's eye.

Kousuke coughed once *gohon* for a moment and he straightened up his sitting posture, before he suddenly opened his mouth.

「You are gradually becoming stra~ngee~, you are gradually becoming straa~ngee~」

「??? Just what are you saying……. Is your head having a screw looseee-hee~」

The crystal five-yen coin systematically swaying like a pendulum in front of Kaysis's eyes. At the other side of the coin was a suspicious incantation (?) that sounded strangely stupid. Kaysis's was doubting Kousuke's sanity that matched Kousuke's expression that looked complicatedly embarrassed.

But, right after that, the end of Kaysis's sentence crumbled. Light slipped off from his eyes, and his snake-like atmosphere dispersed as though it was just a lie, where now he seemed like a mere simple man.

「You are gradually wanting to taa~lkk~. You want to talk about everything, everyy~thii~ng」

「I, I want to taa~lkk~. I want to talk about everything, everyy~thii~ng」

「If you are asked you will want to anss~werr~. You will be unable to not anss~werr~」

「I will want to anss~werr~. I become unable to not anss~werr~」

「You will be happy by telll~ingg~. You will be wanting to tell everyy~thii~ng」

「Will will wiilll~」

The slow and stupid voices resounded inside the room. Kaysis was completely transformed into a repeating machine. At the same time, light of expectation was starting to grow inside those eyes. His atmosphere was like a Villager A who was called out by a hero party, who for some reason knew about a local legend and would tell it to the hero party without leaving anything out.

——Soul magic enchanted-type brainwashing artifact “Staking the Pride of a Villager”

The villager in RPG would tell everything they knew if they were talked to. If they were addressed by hero party, ordinarily they would obediently listen. They also wouldn’t say even a single complain when their house was entered by a hero party as they pleased, and even if their home was rummaged and in the end their possession got taken away without permission.

This artifact would turn the targeted human into such lovely villager. This was an artifact for dealing with the aftermath of an incident, bestowed by the demon king to the abyss lord for his personal use.

A minute later, the president of a large company that could be counted as one of the top five even in Britain finished his job-change into a splendid Villager A. He happily spouted out everything that he knew.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Thank you very much for the festival of salmon sandwich’s review column.

It’s a happy feeling that something I liked is shared by other people!

Now then, the end of this extra compilation too is gradually coming into view.

I think it will be 2, 3 more chapters.

But even though I said that, even Shirakome don’t know how this tale without

any plot or anything will roll in the future.

When it’s over what will I write then I wonder.

The next update is planned to be at 6 P.M. Saturday too.

Arifureta Chapter 214

Arifureta Extra Compilation – From Abyssgate Lord of The World

DAS

Part 1

「Welcome, this is【Gamma Pharmaceutical】desu. Welcome, this is【Gamma Pharmaceutical】desu. Welcome, this is【Gamma Pharmaceutical】desu. Welco——」

「Yosh, it's a success.」

Kousuke nodded in satisfaction seeing Kaysis who was continuously saying the same line like a broken recorder with a friendly smile.

Chief Magdanese and Allen who was watching the happening from behind were making twitchy eyes as though they had seen something repulsive.

Both of them were people that had been fighting in the underworld where it was a vortex of scheme and violence, rather it wouldn't be an exaggeration to call them as a residence of underworld, yet even the two of them were creeped out by the brainwashing technique that was bestowed directly from the demon king……. And then, seeing Kousuke who was making a satisfied smile from seeing the result…….

Both of them were honestly thinking this.「Returnee group……they are seriously, bad news」like that.

Kousuke firmly ignored the gaze of the security bureau duo that pierced the back of his head. He put away the artifact "Staking the Pride of a Villager", and began the interrogation——or rather the inquiry.

「Now then, Kaysis. First, tell us your plan, just what are you going to do by using Berserk?」

「Welcome! This is【Gamma Pharmaceutical】desu!」

「……No, not that, your plan——」

「Welcome. This is【Gamma Pharmaceutical】desu-」

「No, that's why your plan——」

「Welcomee! This is【Gamma Pharmaceutical】desuu!」

「……」

Kaysis was already a splendid villager. Most likely he was a high-class villager even among all the villagers, the one without any particular meaning, the one that wasn't doing anything even in the afternoon, the jobless villager loitering around near the village entrance——Kaysis had job-changed into "the villager of the beginning".

「……Hey, Kousuke. Could it be, you have overdone it?」

「N, no, such thing should not be……」

Kousuke scratched on his cheek while denying Emily's words. However, in reality they couldn't question Kaysis because he was transformed into "the villager of beginning". Seeing no other way, Kousuke's hand entered his pocket to take out "Staking the Pride of a Villager" once more.

However, Vanessa stopped Kousuke from the side. Or rather, her shocking action stopped him from moving.

「Do it seriously.」

After saying such thing, Vanessa suddenly dropped her elbow at Kaysis's head. *boguu* A raw sound that mustn't be made by a living thing resounded. Emily raised a cute scream「Hya!?」.

「A problematic machine can be fixed by hitting it.」

「Jelgome-. Ghighis is-, Janma Khalpageudical, -, desu!」

「Wai-, wait Vanessa! Human is not machine, this person become all the more stranger see!」

Kaysis-san was moving ominously *kaku-kaku* while starting to making sound 'gyogyogyo! gyogyogyo!'. Emily was pointing her finger while making retort.

「How strange? In Armageon, the Russian astronaut used Wrench Attack to fix the shuttle engine though……. Perhaps my angle was bad.」(TN: Armageddon movie)

「No, wai-, Vanessa. Wa——」

Kousuke tried to stop Vanessa, but before he could, Vanessa's pointlessly refined beautiful left hook captured Kaysis's temple. *ZUPAN-!* A beautiful sound also resounded from that. At the same time, Kaysis's head was snapped away to the right as though it got blown away.

「△☆け○どが×jtこそ♡じょばばば～」

「Muh. Is it not a problem of angle, but power?」

Kaysis-san's head was blown away to the left this time. Vanessa's backhand that could even be said as artistic captured the right side of the head, filled with the centrifugal force of a body rotation.

However, Kaysis-san was only discharging broken words and face expression that was increasingly turning into a person in strait jacket, he wasn't returning any proper answer.

Vanessa looked dubious, even so after that she attempted various things like「The spin is not enough?」, or「Should I use combo?」or「Perhaps I should use shake rather than impact」m or「Neko Damashi!」…… (TN: Neko Damashi, the signature move of Nagissa from Ansatsu Kyoushitsu)

Finally Kousuke went「Stop iit! Just stop it alreadyy!」and pinioned Vanessa from behind while dragging her back. With that the curtain of the short torture scene was finally closed. Chief Magdanese was sending Vanessa a gaze that was filled with a smidgen of admiration, was that originated from the mercilessness or something else?

「Aa, geez. This looks like it will be bad without healing……. First thing first, let's examine him before using the artifact one more time——」

「Nice to meet you honored guest. I am Kaysis. The president of this【Gamma Pharmaceutical】. And, do you perchance have any business with me?」

「He get well somehow!? It feels a little strange though!」

Kaysis recovered his sanity (?). As expected, it seemed that something that almost broke really could be fixed by hitting it. Light of intelligence was shining from his eyes, and a dignity that was like a village chief could be felt from his tone. ……Although he got nosebleed that was pouring like river, his front teeth were gone, and the area around his eyes was bruised like panda.

While feeling a little irritation at the triumphant look of Vanessa beside him, Kousuke cleared his throat once and asked about Kaysis's plan once more.

「Fumu, so about my plan. Where should I start I wonder……」

「First tell us the outline.」

「I guess. Speaking simply, I plan to turn the people all over the world into latent berserker, where they have to drink the suppression medicine daily, and obtained profit from that. Like that my position within the organization will become firm, and with the organization power and Berserk, I will become the one leader that manipulate the world from behind……something like that.」

The plan was told promptly, but the detail was absurdly demonical. This man didn't think of human as human, he only saw them as pawn that produced profit, this repulsive plan laid bare the nature of Kaysis Wentworks.

Emily unconsciously gulped, while Vanessa's gaze turned grave. It was only those like Kousuke and Chief Magdanese who looked unperturbed, even the smile was disappearing from inside Allen's eyes.

「Transformation into latent berserker, and then the suppression medicine, what do you mean by that? Something like capsule attached with detonator would surely be ejected out of the body eventually, what you mean is something different from that isn't it?」

「Correct. What I mean isn't physical means like that, but by using an improved drug of Berserk. Right after Berserk was created by accident, we performed repeated experiment using the data and product that were brought to us by our cooperator.」

Kaysis continued his talk after saying that. If summarized, it would be something like this.

Berserk was a drug that abnormally vitalized the cell of the consumer. That

overly rapid vitalization would repeat self-destruction and restoration forcefully, creating that kind of enlargement and superhumanization ability.

But, just like how the extent of the vitalization would be in proportion of the consumed amount of the drug, the vitalization rate of Berserk could be controlled to a certain degree. It seemed that they had already gathered the data regarding the effect and time limit of Berserk transformation and the necessary dose after going through many human experiments.

Even so, no matter what they did, they couldn't go as far as controlling the vitalization and transformation right after the consummation of the drug. That was the reason they used cheap trick like using capsule attached with detonator……

But the story would be different if they had Emily who was the drug developer.

What Kaysis and his group wished from Emily was the development of the improved drug with delayed vitalization rate——in short, a drug where after consuming it, there would be a time delay before the vitalization could reach a stage where transformation occurred. At the same time, they also wished Emily to develop not the antidote that could give complete recovery, but a suppression drug that would only suppress the vitalization as long as it was consumed continuously.

In such case, the people would have to drink the suppression drug created by【Gamma Pharmaceutical】every day if they didn't want to become a monster that lost all reason.

「However, how are you planning to turn the people all over the world into latent berserker? If they understand that it would affect their life, people will stop buying even the cold medicine sold in the market.」

「You're right. But, if it's mixed into something that human has to drink every day, they will not be able to avoid consuming it.」

「Every day? ……Don't tell me」

「Yes, it's just like what you are imagining right now. It's water.」

The cultivation of Berserk could be done as much as anyone wanted as long as they just had the data. Kaysis planned to use them to pollute the waterworks,

and not just that, but dam, river, water purification plant, and so on, all the places that supplied water.

There wasn't any antidote for Berserk. Once water was polluted by it, there wouldn't be any method to purify it. There would be no way other than evaporating the polluted water, or draining it to the sea. It seemed that Kaysis was planning to pollute even the rain water and seawater with Berserk eventually.

「Such thing……you are insane.」

「As expected, this isn't a laughing matter. Originally, erasing this kind of fellow is my role though.」

Vanessa didn't even hide her disgust and glared at Kaysis, while Allen, understanding that they had fallen behind in front of this danger that threatened the world, he said something like that as though spitting it out.

Emily's face was pale. But, there wasn't any despair in her cat-eyes. She glared even more to Kaysis while her eyes were shining with the color of strong determination.

「I see. In such situation, even if you are exposed by the government as the mastermind, it wouldn't be any problem then. After all the government people would be in the same danger of turning berserk too. As long as they are unable to secure the formula of the suppression medicine, they won't lay their hand on you at all. After all even if they try to do anything, the world might end.」

Chief Magdanese sighed deeply with her gaze still looking severe. And then, she asked one more thing about Kaysis's remark that caught her attention.

「Tell us about the "organization" that you mentioned.」

「Information regarding the "organization" is it? Let's see……perhaps I should say, that it's a gathering of old codgers captured in fanatical ideology and deep-rooted delusion. It has ancient history, its members are also in unknown number, and it possesses political power, economic power, and raw power en masse. Yet despite so, it's a gathering of brainless idiots that is doing nothing except secretly chasing after occult.」

Even though it was the organization that he belonged to, Kaysis was expressing

a really piercing evaluation about it. When Chief Magdanese wordlessly urged him to continue, Kaysis who just for a moment returned from being a village chief into a snake-like company president then spoke the name of that organization.

「The underworld organization that has been continuously searching for genuine mystic since the far in the ancient time. Its name, is “Hydra”. If it’s you chief-sama, then you should at least know that name aren’t you?」

「Is that so……that “Hydra”. They are a stereotypical occultist fanatic group. Supposedly they have been crushed on countless occasions, however, sometimes they would show a glimpse of their face in some kind of case, an organization that is difficult to eradicate.」

Chief Magdanese who seemed to know the name of that organization showed an expression as though she had swallowed something bitter that she rarely showed. From her words, it seemed that in the past she might have confronted them several times. It seemed that Allen also know at least the name, his expression was half-surprised and half-understanding that this name could come out here.

On the other hand, Emily and Vanessa had “?” mark floating above their head, while beside them Kousuke was looking up to the sky with「Aa~」. It was an organization name that he was awfully familiar with.

「It’s a multi-headed monster that come out in Greek mythology. No matter how many of their heads that is crushed, it will revive if there is just one head remaining……so they came out here once more. However, you are talking really bitterly about them. Do you have dissatisfaction against your organization?」

「Yes, yes, if it’s dissatisfaction then I have it. Prattling about things like mystic or supernatural phenomenon in this modern time, they can only be called as insane. Even though they can stand in even more superior position against the world if using the power of an organization of that scale, when it come to those old codgers, they are making light of the power of science too much. What do they mean by contradicting the ideal of the organization, huh. It’s because they are obsessed with something like mystic that is unclear whether it exist or not, that the organization is still a social outcast even now.」

Kaysis talked as though he was spitting out. It seemed that Kaysis had a way of thinking that if they obtained a power that could interfere with the world using power of science, then it was fine to use that. In contrast the leadership of Hydra was searching for mystic to the end, their objective was to interfere with the world using that mystic and they wouldn't recognize any means other than that. That seemed to be their way of thinking.

Because the origin of the organization establishment was to obtain mystic into their hand, then indeed, Kaysis's way of thinking was contrary to the organization's founding ideal. Kaysis perceived the organization not as a gathering of researcher, but as mere "power", in a sense his nature was the exact opposite as the organization member——he was a realist.

「I will change the world using Berserk——if so, as expected even they surely won't be able to disregard me as a greenhorn. Fufufuh, even that guy, Jefferson Allgrey who is always looking down at me thinking he is the superior one, making fun of me, he will kneel in front of me, begging for forgiveness. I'll carve into his flesh and bones, just who is actually the superior one! ……That's how it should be」

Kaysis whose ambition had fallen apart dropped his shoulders in dejection.

On the other hand, Chief Magdanese reflexively stepped forward in excitement and grabbed both of Kaysis's shoulders. She then began to shake him back and forth.

「Just now, did you say Jefferson Allgrey? That real estate king and also politician?」

「Ye, yeah. That Allgrey.」

「Who else! Who else is a member of Hydra that you know about!? Tell me!」

「Go, got it. The other in the leadership is——」

The names that were spoken after Kaysis said that was an unimaginable luxury. Several of the names were people that even the security bureau were suspecting, there were also names that were under secret investigation, but even so it was tremendous for these big names of leadership of a listed up occultist fanatic group to be exposed like this.

When Kaysis finished telling the names of the leadership that he knew about, Chief Magdanese confirmed with her gaze that Allen had recorded the names before her face turned toward Kousuke.

「Mister Abyssgate. I'm grateful. These bunches are people whose real form we cannot get a hold of despite the dark rumor about them. With this perhaps we can perform their funeral.」

「Aa~, yep. I see……」

Kousuke's reply was really evasive. Kousuke's gaze wandered around for a while before he asked Chief Magdanese timidly.

「Err, chief-san. That Mr. Allgrey or something, as expected you are going to arrest him?」

「What are you saying? Obviously we will. Even though he isn't related with the case this time, there is a mountain of cases that are thought to be related with Hydra. Each time, we only treated up the case as unresolved, or we ended up capturing the underlings, as though they are a lizard that cut off their tail to escape. And now we might be able to finish them all at once.」

「Ye, ye~ah. That's, how it is huuh~」

As expected, it seemed that Chief Magdanese sense the strangeness in Kousuke's attitude. She looked suspiciously while speaking out the question whether there was any problem.

But, at that time, a shocked voice「Eh!?」resounded from behind her. When she looked there, she saw the figure of Allen, his eyes opened wide obviously shocked, his gaze fixated on the tablet in his hand.

「? Allen?」

「A, aa~, chief. Just now I was pulling out information about Allgrey and his cohorts but……this」

Saying that, Allen showed his tablet with a troubled expression. Chief Magdanese received it, and after her, Vanessa and Emily also turned their stare to peek at the tablet's display.

There,

『Then, you are saying that the donation like this time will continue in the future too?』

『Correct, it's just as you say. It feels like the me before this had been wandering inside nightmare all the time. I was clinging obsessively on my current position, and in collecting money and influence. But, just how much value those things actually have! It's smile. The children's smile is where exactly value can be found. The future where children can live with a smile on their face, that is exactly something with value that is worthy for me to devote my life to!』

Of all things, in the display there was the real estate king-san giving a powerful speech.

Chief Magdanese went「WHYY!?」in a voice that had never been heard from her before, her eyes looked like they almost flew out from their socket. She was the chief of security bureau, that was why she knew painfully well about the dark rumors regarding Mr. Allgrey. Therefore, seeing his radiant smile and his speech that was overflowing with kindness and sincerity was honestly a nightmare for her instead.

The interview toward Mr. Allgrey in what seemed to be a special television programme was continuing inside the display.

『That is a wonderful thinking Mr. Allgrey. I also heard that there are a great number of people who are in agreement with your thinking, can you tell us more about that?』

『That is a true fact. They are my personal friend, my comrades. From here on, I together with my comrades are wishing to act by exerting our best, in order to make this world become better even for just a little!』

『I see. And as the symbol of that resolution, you are founding this charity organization "Staking the Pride of a Villager" isn't it?』

『Exactly. Perhaps it is a single hero who is moving this world. But, what is supporting the world is every single one of the villager. I am not a special human. But I wish to support the world as a single villager even with my meager strength!』

Hearing that emotionally moving speech, the audiences in the studio all stood

up in unison and gave a thunderous applause. At the same time, a scrolling caption appeared on the screen. The names of the people supporting Mr. Allgrey were scrolling there. ……All the names, were the names that were spoken by Kaysis just now.

Chief Magdanese and everyone else were petrified. Among them, it was Emily who came alive before others. With a twitching expression, she asked toward Kousuke whose gaze was staring toward the day after tomorrow.

「Hey, Kousuke. The name of the charity organization is “Staking the Pride of a Villager” the news said……」

「Is. Is that so……」

「Hey, Kousuke. The name of Kousuke’s tool that can hypnotize other people, what is its name again?」

「……”Staking the Pride of a Villager”, I guess.」

Right after that, Chief Magdanese threw away the tablet. Allen raised a strange voice「Howah」while performing a diving-catch.

Chief Magdanese power walked with a loud footsteps and this time she grabbed Kousuke’s shoulders.

「Explain, Mister Abyssgate. Concisely and swiftly.」

「YE, YES, MA’AM! In, in the first place, I came to this country is in order to crush those guys! After crushing them, I brainwashed them at once! They became compassionate villagers! End of report, ma’am!」

Kousuke who was being demanded to explain with bloodshot eyes and stifled voice reflexively saluted while answering toward Chief Magdanese’s overwhelming intensity. Vanessa and Allen nodded deeply, understanding how he felt.

Chief Magdanese gazed fixedly for a while at Kousuke who was drenched in cold sweats that were like waterfall, and then she sighed deeply and drew back. While she was at it, she covered her eyes with one hand and looked up to the sky.

Seeing the figure of the chief that was like that, Vanessa said a brief comment.

「As expected from Kousuke-san. It feels like the saying “Everything is Abyssgate’s fault” will spread far and wide sooner or later.」(TN: ‘Everything is Abyssgate’s fault’, in Japanese it’s translated as ‘Daitai Abyssgate no sei’, which can be abbreviated as ‘DAS’)

For some reason, Kousuke was unable to make the retort ‘You’re noisy’ to Vanessa.

Surely from here on, Mr. Allgrey and his cohorts would use their fortune for charity work without sparing anything. Naturally, because of Mr. Allgrey’s reputation as politician, at first he would also be ridiculed that this was only a bid for popularity, but it wouldn’t take that long for his fame to soar through the roof.

Sure enough, what would the society think if he was then arrested when he had saved a lot of people and obtained the trust of the mass……. Of course, it wouldn’t be a problem if there was a definite proof, but even so surely there would still be a problem. It was not difficult to imagine the heartache level of Chief Magdanese going up.

kohon- Kousuke cleared his throat. He faced back toward Kaysis who was looking on blankly and then he questioned him in order to clear away the complicated atmosphere.

「So, Kaysis. The data and drug of Berserk, are all of those in this place?」

「No. Naturally I decentralized it. If it’s the list of the laboratories that is in charge of safekeeping the data and drug, it is saved in the flashdisk inside the drawer. You can confirm it there.」

Chief Magdanese somehow pulled back her mind to normal and sent her gaze to Allen. Allen who received that gaze moved to investigate the drawer. Like that, when he checked the flashdisk he discovered, certainly there was the data of the storage areas, and not only that, it was also filled with the detail of the plan steps and so on.

With this, they now understood most of what should be known. If they destroyed all the data and drug next, the threat of Berserk would vanish. Emily wouldn’t be drowning in guilt for more than this, and the regret of her important people who became sacrifice would also clear up a little.

That was why, perhaps now there wasn’t any need to know, about the answer to the question that Kousuke was putting off from asking, the question that until the end she was hesitating whether she should ask it or not.

However, right now the one who was here was a strong girl who by her own will had resolved to face the great evil and the truth. She was a coward and often turned small, but even so, she was a girl who wouldn’t stop advancing forward.

That was why,

「The last thing. Tell us. ……The one who told you the existence of Berserk…… who it is?」

「Fumu, that’s——」

Emily, knew the truth.

Part 2

The time had entered the period of late night a long time ago. There wasn't any star in the sky, there was also no moonlight. The night sky was covered by cloudy weather, making gloomy atmosphere to hang in the air.

The night view of the city could be seen from the veranda of the hotel that was prepared for them by the security bureau. Regardless that it was the dead of night, what was called as the city center knew no sleep, therefore the stars on the ground illuminated the dark night radiantly, granting comfort to the spectator of the view for just a little.

「……Emily. You cannot sleep?」

「Kousuke……yes. Just a little.」

Emily was on a veranda, both her arms leaned on the handrail while she was staring at the night view for some reason or another. A voice called at her from the neighboring veranda.

「You aren't cold?」

Emily was wearing a night gown. Although it was created from thick fabric for use in winter, but it was only a piece of clothing. Kousuke knitted his eyebrows seeing that. Emily smiled wryly while shaking her head.

「I see. Well, certainly the air of night in winter feels pleasant.」

Saying that, Kousuke copied Emily by using both his arms to lean on the handrail of the veranda beside Emily's and he stared at the night view.

Both of them didn't say anything for a while. They were merely looking quietly at far away. Emily couldn't express into words, the reason she was unable to sleep. After all it was something obvious. Also, because right now there wasn't anything that had to be said regarding tomorrow.

That was why, Kousuke only muttered a brief sentence.

「Just a bit more. Let's do our best, together.」

「-……yes. Yes-」

Emily casted her eyes down, as though she was reflecting upon something. But, her voice that replied to him was reverberating really well in the chilly air.

Silence visited the place once more. It was unknown how long they were like that. Suddenly, Emily asked Kousuke.

「Hey, Kousuke. When this matter is over, what will Kousuke do?」

「Hm? That's, I'll return to Japan. I said it right? I'm a student yeah? Even though this is still winter holiday, I'm skipping through winter short course here. I've got to return quickly and participate in it.」

Emily was looking blankly for a moment after hearing that reply, but right after that, she burst into laughter as though she was unable to hold it in.

「Fu, fufu……the person that toyed with not just the underworld organization, but even with the security bureau, need to join a short course……kufuh, fufufufuh」

「O, oi, don't laugh. Just between you and me, even the demon king is living as a normal student, you know. It's not strange at all that I'm a student, right?」

「Bu, but. A person that introduced himself as Abyssgate something, fighting against armed men, someone like that is going through lesson normally……ahah, no good, it's too surreal when I imagine it I cannot hold my laugh. Ahahahah」

「Gufuh. Do, don't say Abyssgate……」

Seeing Kousuke hanging his head down while his hand was pressing on his chest, Emily's laugh was increasingly sounding more amused.

She had never laugh like this since the chain of incidents was starting.

Surely tomorrow would be the day where everything was settled. Nervousness, uneasiness, and pain that was the truth inside her heart. Actually, it was something that she was vaguely aware of. It was something she desperately averted her eyes from. The result was that all those were thrust before Emily now.

——If I am alone, could I endure it?

Thinking that, Emily shook her head inside her heart.

——Could I come this far, only with me and Vanessa?

As expected, she shook her head in her heart.

——In this time that is cruel, uneasy, painful, and difficult, even so would I be able to laugh just like this?

There was no way she would be able.

Emily glanced at the sullen Kousuke beside her, and then she smiled softly while wiping the tear gathering at the corner of her eye with her finger.

「Kousuke, thank you.」

「It's still too fast for you to say that. Say it after everything is over tomorrow.」

Kousuke's words were blunt and slightly filled with sulkiness that hadn't disappeared. But, for Emily, those words felt ticklish somehow.

Emily stared fixedly at the side profile of Kousuke who was looking at far away with his chin resting on his hand. Kousuke seemed to notice her gaze and he looked slightly uncomfortable.

Emily was thinking 'my body will get chilly soon' while she resolutely made a request to Kousuke.

「Say, Kousuke.」

「Hm?」

「You see, tomorrow, when everything is over……I want Kousuke, to tell me about yourself.」

「About myself?」

Kousuke raised his eyebrow and turned his gaze toward Emily. Emily nodded to his gaze while her cheeks reddened slightly.

「Yes. Like, how come you are able to use that kind of mysterious power. Like, just what are the returnees. Those kind of things, various things about Kousuke.」

「……」

「Uh. I, I understand that it's a secret matter you know? But, I absolutely will protect the secret. I'm serious, okay? Besides, next time something happen, perhaps I will be able to become Kousuke's strength then, besides, err, besides……」

Seeing Kousuke who spontaneously fell silent, Emily added on her words with a little bit of fluster.

For Kousuke, he didn't have any particular problem teaching her about the returnees. In the first place, they had honestly talked to the media, that they had been fighting the army of an evil god at another world. It depended on the other party whether they would believe it or not.

Emily had witnessed Kousuke's power, so naturally she would believe and accept it. Therefore, it wasn't anything that particularly needed to be hidden from her.

As expected, if it was known by the whole higher-ups of the government, it would cause hindrance to their private life and it would be putting the cart before the horse, so in that case, a large scale countermeasure like pulling out the brainwashing technique of the demon king (especially his wife) would be necessary, but doing something like telling individual like Emily, or Chief Magdanese who knew about the scariness of the returnees like Kousuke and wouldn't easily act against them, there wouldn't be any problem.

Then, if it was asked the reason why Kousuke was falling silent, that was of course because he was told something like「I want to know more about you!」by a beautiful girl. While that girl's cheeks were reddening.

Sure enough, for someone with a lover, it wasn't good for him to step further than this. He was deeply lamenting of why he didn't immediately tell her about the existence of his lover. Thinking back, he wouldn't be lying if he said that there was no timing to tell the truth. But, as expected it would be bad if he told the truth now. If asked what would be bad, of course it was about the possibility that Emily's mind would turn into ash.

Kousuke instantly ended the mini Kousuke meeting inside his heart, and then he replied toward Emily who was still speaking in fluster.

「No, I don't mind, doing just that——」

「Really!?」

「O, ou」

Emily's body leaned forward from the veranda, with her sparkling gaze capturing Kousuke. Kousuke was thinking that if Emily wanted to know about himself, then he would inform her about how he had a lover at that time, but……

Seeing Emily whose whole body was radiating「I'm, happy!」, the mini Kousuke inside his heart was rolling around from guilt and various other emotions.

Emily noticed how because she was leaning forward, her distance with Kousuke was so close they were almost touching. She became flustered from shyness while pulling back her body.

And then, Emily was showing quite the sly cuteness from her act of sending Kousuke glances to confirm that he wasn't creeped from her getting too close like that. The song of Rolli○ Girl (from a certain smiling video) was playing out inside Kousuke's heart. (TN: Rolling Girl. Also a certain smiling video refer to Niconico Douga. Shirakome disguised niconico as nikoniko here, which mean smilingly in Japanese)

「I'm looking forward to it Kousuke. Ah, but, that, can I, ask just one thing right now?」

「Wha, what is it?」

Emily fidgeted, her finger played around with her untied hair, twining the hair around while her cheeks reddened so much it felt like the chilly air would be warmed from it. Kousuke put up his guard, but the question Emily released still hit him like a body blow.

「You see, I'm asking this only out of curiosity, nothing else, but……what kind of girl, that Kousuke prefer?」

Seeing that kind of transparent attitude, the mini Kousuke was shouting「What do you mean just out of curiosity!? Sly! As expected from Emily-chan! That's sly!」while tumbling down the hill road inside his heart.

The unblinking gaze from Emily caused Kousuke's gaze to wander restlessly, and then he answered honestly.

「Rabbit-eared onee-san.」

「……Eh?」

A counterstrike at Emily. Emily's eyes turned into dot and she lost for words. The figure of herself wearing bunny girl costume seducing Kousuke with bewitching air was emerging at the back of her mind.

Emily instantly became a completely ripe tomato, so much that it almost felt like a sound of *puff* could be heard. She went 'awawa-, awawa-* in panic, looking left and right, and in the end,

「Ko, Kousuke you pervert!」

She said such thing while rushing inside her room.

「……When everything is over, I should make a phone call to Nagumo before talking to Emily.」

Kousuke decided in his heart to consult with his friend, his senior who had gone far ahead in the road about understanding this and that of girl.

Although, him noticing that this choice of his was mistaken……it was a story of a bit later.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Thinking back, it feels like the first smiling video Shirakome first saw was Rolong Girl.

I forgot what became the impetus for me to saw it, but it was impactful.

The next update is planned to be at 6 P.M. Saturday too.

Arifureta Chapter 215

Arifureta Extra Compilation – From Abyssgate Lord of The World

YES-, ABYSSGATE-!!

bara-bara-bara-bara- The peculiar sound of rotor was reverberating.

Under the cloudy sky of early morning, the things that were spreading such noise were three large helicopters. The three were forming a triangle formation and pushed on through the cloudy sky in a straight line.

Each of those helicopters was boarded by a fully armed special forces of the security bureau, in addition Kousuke, Emily, Vanessa, and Allen who was wafting off a pathetic aura were boarding one of the helicopters.

「O, oi, Allen. Are you okay?」

Riding on the same helicopter was the commander of the special force who was also the captain of Alpha squad, Bernard Pays. He asked Allen with some hesitation. He belonged under security bureau's assault section, so he was quite acquainted with Allen who was working as analyst in the surface where they often shared information.

Even though they weren't quite friend, but their relationship with each other was at the level of close coworker at least. Therefore, when he saw Allen who was usually acting flippant with light atmosphere was now sitting on the bench in a style as though he was a certain boxer who had burned out into pure white, he couldn't help but called out to him.

「Aa, Pays-san. Thanks for your concern. If I have to say whether I'm fine or not, I'm not fine, so it's fine.」

「No, that reply is already not fine there.」

Bernard made an expression that didn't know what to say at Allen whose face was still changed into mummy man.

「You see, Pays-san. I'm specialized in killing secretly. My job is to stealthily and quietly go 'pshuu'. Yet despite so, I was told to steal, spurred on to become

bodyguard, made to beaten viciously by a demonic young man, sentenced with the caving in of my face by a beautiful girl, and on top of all that, I was told 'go fight a war against monsters' you know? Even though this is the order from the chief that I respected so much, I'll still feel tired from it. I'm just a step away from getting burned out. It's nice isn't it, for Pays-san and others. All of you received healing. As for me, my molars or inside my nose are still feeling throbbing with pain……head-on fighting isn't my territory you know? Yet despite so, I'm being sent out in this state, I'll die for sure this time.」

'Heheh' Allen chuckled while his gaze was getting distant and his mutter getting sluggish. Bernard's cheeks couldn't stop twitching seeing such an Allen. Inside his heart he was thinking.「This is bad. This guy, he is seriously getting cornered」, like that.

Allen's figure was like a salary man who had become worn-out from continuously working in a black company, sitting melancholically on a bench of a public park while visioning an impossible dream of changing job. The final blow was dealt on Allen who was exposing such appearance.

「That's depressing, Mr. K (lol). Even though it will be the final decisive battle after this, what are you doing getting low spirits like that. I'll gouge you out you know?」

「Scary-. What do you mean gouging!? Where are you going to gouge!? Or rather, what did you add just now when you said Mr. K?」

The cold words that came from Vanessa who was sitting beside Allen had gone passed being sharp and inspired terror instead. Allen was shivering while talking back.

「Please read the mood a little. Right now is a serious time. A lot of lives are hanging on this, and we have to fight an army of berserker after this you know? Please don't make that kind of funny face and act seriously.」

「The one turning my face into funny one like this is particularly because of the fault of you guys though! Besides, I don't want to be told to act seriously by Vanessa——」

「Oi, who said you can call my name casually like that. You want me to turn your face into something that will inevitably invite roar of laughter?」

「I, I'm sorry. But, even if you aren't so angry that your tone change……a, it hurts-. It really hurts I said! Please don't grind on my injury! Please forgive me, Paradis-san.」

When Allen casually called Vanessa's name, he was given back with indignation that surpassed the imagination. His injury was getting grinded from above the bandage which caused Allen to scream while writhing around.

Certainly, Allen was the perpetrator that scattered around Berserk in the research building. But, in the first place it was the chief that ordered the theft, then unexpected situation happened on top of another unexpected situation, so to speak what happened was something like an accident.

Allen too pretty much felt guilt about the tragedy that occurred at the research building, and he was also feeling apologetic toward Emily, but because his habitual frivolous attitude was ingrained deeply in his self, he didn't look like he was reflecting in a glance which invited biting attitude from other no matter what he did.

A situation that could only be said as tough luck, and behavior that didn't convey the inside of his heart. If it was said that it was him sowing what he sow then that would be the end of it but……

Starting with Bernard, the squad members boarding the same helicopter couldn't help but sending gaze of sympathy toward Allen who was still screaming while his face was getting grinded by Vanessa.

Vanessa and others were unfolding a scene that could be seen as comedic in a sense. The one who was seeing them acting like that with a faint smile on her face was Emily. But, there was a gloom in that smile.

Vanessa stole a glance at Emily while grinding on Allen. From that it could be understood that the dialogue to some extent was also to clear up Emily's feeling.

「Emily. Are you okay……I won't ask you that. There is no way you are okay. It's just like what Vanessa said, right now is the critical moment that will be the turning point. That's why, keep standing firm. We are with you.」

「……Yes. Thank you Kousuke. Also Vanessa too. I was saying selfish thing to come along with you all. So I won't run away with tail between my legs in the

middle.」

There wasn't any change with the gloom in her smile, but the strength dwelling in her eyes wasn't withering. Kousuke nodded at Emily before quietly peeking outside from the window.

At the outside, there was cloudy sky spreading looking as though rain might pour anytime. While thinking that the sky currently was like Emily's heart, Kousuke put his mind in order about the operation that was currently unfolding.

After destroying all the data and drug of Berserk they found in【Gamma Pharmaceutical】, Kousuke and others scrutinized the flashdisk they confiscated from Kaysis once more. Inside that flashdisk, the data that listed the multiple research facilities where Berserk's data were transferred to was saved in it.

Most of them were research facilities inside a corporation that was unrelated with typical medicine manufacture, but there were several places among them that couldn't be ignored. Those places were dam or water purification plant. Every one of those places was facility that was related to Hydra in some kind of shape, and it seemed there was also a research facility inside them.

It was a terrifying story after they knew about Kaysis's plan.

Naturally, for the security bureau it was urgent to suppress those irrigation-related facilities. Improved version of Berserk still didn't exist, but in the small chance that the existing Berserk was spilled, it would create a tragedy that would be unbearable to witness.

And so, because the number of facilities was a lot, it was insufficient with just the manpower of the security bureau, they also cooperated with the army and currently a simultaneous suppression operation was currently unfolding toward those multiple research facilities.

「O, oi, Paradis. Don't go further than that. Even like this, he is more or less a precious fighting strength. We really aren't planning to lose, but the opponent is an army of berserker. We had prepared the best equipment, but it's still an unfavorable comparison compared to the army.」

「Muh. I can only draw back if Captain Pays told me that. Mr. K, you narrowly escaped death.」

「U, uu. Is there, any girl that will be gentle to me somewhere in this world……」

Allen broke down crying as though he had been assaulted by a hoodlum. Gazes of sympathy were focused toward him. Bernard was sighing deeply toward that state of Allen before he moved his gaze toward Kousuke.

Inside Kaysis's flashdisk, it included the list of the many people that were transferred to the research facilities. There were many people who were unrelated with research work in it……there was no way they wouldn't understand what was the meaning of that. Most likely, they were for human experiment, and also to be put around as *senseless fighting strength* in addition.

A group of berserker that would continue to fight without knowing pain and fear, and they would recover instantly as long as their head wasn't destroyed…… putting it bluntly, this was completely outside of the security bureau's domain. This was obviously a scene where the army should move out.

But, it was undesirable for both Chief Magdanese and also Kousuke to have Kousuke's true identity became exposed to a group that didn't belong under security bureau. Therefore, the special forces of the army were heading to other facilities, but the facility that they were currently heading toward had to be dealt somehow with only the special force of the security bureau and Kousuke and co.

Bernard had the resolve. He wouldn't hesitate to offer his life anytime if it was for the country's safety. But, even so, he couldn't avoid from his hand getting sweaty. He was planning to be meticulous in putting countermeasure and vigilance, but depending on the situation, there was also the possibility that he would have to shoot his comrade that was turned into berserker.

No matter how he was a veteran leader of the assault section and someone that was appointed as the captain of the special force, it still couldn't be helped that he would unconsciously send gaze of expectation and prayer toward the being(Kousuke) that wielded supernatural power.

Perhaps noticing the gaze of such Bernard, Kousuke who was gazing outside through a small window suddenly returned his gaze and looked at Bernard.

「What's the matter, captain-san?」

Bernard reflexively smiled wryly seeing that light attitude where he couldn't

feel any particular fervor from it.

「No, I'm thinking that you are really calm there. I think there is nothing as terrifying as you as an enemy, but when I think that you are fighting together with us as ally, there is nothing as reliable as this.」

「Well, even though you said that they are lying in wait for us, but they are just a muscle-brain group after all. I feel regretful for the people who were simply tricked and turned into berserker, but based from the data, it seems that the majority is underworld people, so I don't feel that much guilt. They also have a clear weak point. Even if it's just captain-san and others, I think if you fight calmly, you will manage it somehow you know?」

「You are saying that really lightly. It's like you are a warrior that has gone through many bloodshed even more than me. Do you have experience fighting similar thing like this?」

Bernard's wry smile was increasingly getting deeper from hearing Kousuke's light tone. He suddenly asked something like that. The other squad members were directing their gaze at Kousuke with deep curiosity. It seemed that they were thinking that it might be a reference for the battle after this depending on the situation. But more than half of that interest was just out of curiosity though.

Kousuke returned a wry smile at Bernard's question. When Emily and Vanessa were also directing gaze of deep interest at Kousuke, Kousuke answered while getting a faraway look.

「Well, I actually have, if it's a battle against warriors of god. Although, those guys weren't cute bunches like berserker.」

「Ber, berserker is cute?」

「That's right. Their face was super beautiful, but their fighting ability was bad news on top of bad news. They were moving so fast they didn't even leave behind afterimage, flying freely in the sky, disintegrated everything while ignoring something like defensive power, they neutralized all attack using twin swords and wings, furthermore they were gushing out like cockroaches……I made do somehow by dealing one hit kill from behind invisibility, but if I fought them right from the front, honestly, whether I can survive or not is……yep,

thinking back, it’s a miracle we could survive.」

「「「「「……」」」」」

The troops including Bernard turned wordless hearing Kousuke’s reminiscence that was said with a bitter smile. Inside their heart, all of them were fiercely retorting「What is that joke-like existence!? It’s a joke right? Right?」, but no one said it out loud.

At the same time, a faint confidence「Compared to that, we can win can’t we?」was welling up inside them. Unexpectedly, it seemed that their morale was raising from the question of Bernard who was wondering of how to encourage the troops.

「We will arrive at the point soon! Start preparing!」

The helicopter pilot gave his report. Bernard nodded to that and gave instruction to the troops. The expression of Emily and Vanessa was also containing nervousness.

The place where they would land at was a lumber storehouse that was slightly distanced from the water purification plant. The water purification plant was in a riverside that was surrounded by forest. It seemed that the research facility was jointly established with that water purification plant.

As for their plan, they would land at a lumber storehouse that was slightly far from the water purification plant, and from there they would advance through land route and suppressed the facility while the enemy wasn’t aware of their presence. The biggest point was to raid them with full secrecy and made the related research facility to not realize the attack.

They would silently and swiftly suppress the area without even giving the enemy the chance to activate Berserk. That was their greatest objective ideally.

They would attempt to land at a vacant land that was a temporary storage site for lumber that was lumbered from the forest, then approached the water purification plant from an angle that was completely the opposite side. Even if they couldn’t land, there would be no problem if the helicopter descended down until a height where they could drop down using rope.

But, it seemed that the matter couldn’t progress that easily……

「-, wait a second pilot-san! There are people inside the forest! There are more than ten!」

「Wha-. Don't tell me」

Kousuke threw a warning at the pilot who was making the helicopter descending for the landing. Bernard rushed toward the cockpit and Kousuke's side.

「Mister Abyssgate. You don't think those people are worker of the lumbering site?」

「It's Kousuke. Certainly there is possibility that they are lumbering worker. But, even though a helicopter is approaching, they are moving inside the forest *as though to surround the lumbering site*……do you think that lumbering worker will surround the landing point when they see helicopter?」

「……I see. I don't want to see that kind of woodcutter.」

Bernard's expression turned bitter from the information he was given. Obviously the enemy was on guard against an approach from the lumbering site and placed their personnel here. Inside the list, there were also people who were formerly police or member of a violent organization, Every single one of them was criminal that had dirtied their hand thickly in crime and backed into corner. They were useful resources to be ordered to act like this.

Most likely they themselves didn't even imagine that they could be changed into monster. However, they were undoubtedly lured by money and told to eliminate approaching enemy.

「Most likely they have reported our approach too……」

「That's likely. The plan to silently suppress them is meaningless already now.」

「Aa, we can only assault them hard.」

When the grim-faced Bernard instructed the pilot, the pilot made the helicopter climbed back to head directly toward the water purification plant. The next moment, one of the troops who was looking at the situation below from a window made a report that sounded like a shout.

「Missile-! Evade!」

「-, Bastard-」

The pilot cursed while tilting the helicopter greatly to the side. Emily screamed from the radical motion while a portable surface-to-air missile was flying out from inside the forest and approached them in a straight line. The pilot's reaction was splendid, but in the end it was doubtful whether they would be able to evade or not.

The color of resolution dyed the face of Bernard and the troops, in the middle of that,

「——"Black Vortex"」

The moment Kousuke muttered those words with one of his hand on the floor, the helicopter lowered its altitude drastically with a jerk. It was unnatural as though something grasped it from below and dragged it down.

——Gravity magic "Black Vortex"

It was the gravitational field generation magic that Kousuke specialized the most at. If a gravitational field was generated at the selected spot, then he could stand on the ceiling or perform pseudo flight in the sky by "falling". It was a technique that could be said as the basic of the basic of gravitation magic, a magic that could be used without chant right from the start by someone like Yue.

Due to the gravitational field that was suddenly generated, the helicopter received gravity that was several times the normal and it descended down drastically. In a moment, the missile was passing through above the helicopter.

「Wha, what!? Just now, what happened!?」

The pilot raised a bewildered voice, but surely it was the group on the ground that was looking at the situation who wanted to say that. After all, the helicopter shifted with a jerk to below just before the missile hit and it was in the middle of swiveling widely. That maneuver could only be said as abnormal.

「I won't let you fire that for the second time.」

Kousuke unraveled the gravitational field and took a glance at the pilot who was recovering the helicopter control while he muttered so with his hand

forming seal. He formed a seal even though it had no meaning!

Right after that, with a *poof* a clone body of Kousuke popped out outside the cockpit screen. The clone could be called out within the radius of three meter with the real body as the center, so it was possible to perform pseudo wall slip by using that.

The pilot was busy screaming from seeing a person materializing outside the window. The troops also went「It, it came ouutt!」, they were screaming as though they had encountered a ghost. It seemed that multiple Kousuke had became a considerable trauma for them.

The existence that was barely still Kousuke silently put on a sunglasses outside the window, and then he leaped down while deploying twelve kunais around him like satellites. The next moment,

「I won't ask for forgiveness. Die while resenting me as much as you want. ——"Zekkou Senjin – Hikuusen"」(TN: Hikuusen = Flying Devouring Flash)

The twelve kunais floating around Kousuke flew out all at once. Each of them was heading to a different target like a streak of flash. It went without saying what their targets were.

Including the person who somehow recovered from the shock of witnessing the abnormal maneuver of the helicopter and now was in the middle of preparing the second shot, all the latent berserkers lurking inside the forest immediately got their head's crown pierced in unison and breathed their last.

Kousuke stood midair with black ripples spreading below himw while making floating kunais flying freely. Bernard gave a lukewarm gaze at the pilot who was flustered from seeing such sight while giving him instruction to haste toward the water purification plant.

The pilot cursed「What the hell this is, shit」in small voice, however, he still controlled the helicopter without faltering as fitting for a veteran pilot.

Before long, they could see an open space. The water purification plant and a joined white building that in a glance was unclear what its purpose was, were coming into view. They could also see water supply facility at the downstream slight distance away. The whole water purification plant was surrounded by two

layers of fence with barbed wire on top of them in addition. It seemed that traveling using helicopter was also taken into account from the start, they caught sight of a large open space and a heliport.

「Chih. They had called in just as expected. They are coming one after another. ……Doesn't seem like they are a normal security huh.」

Using a binocular, Bernard saw a great number of people coming out in groups from the joint building toward the open space that was in front of the water purification plant. His face frowned. Most of the people didn't look like honest people, they were people with air that was obviously thuggish in a glance, but among them there were also the figures of slim young man, female, and also old man.

「Oi oi, you mean all those people are going to get turned into monsters? What now Captain Pays? If we descend until an altitude where you can drop down using rope, we are going to get shot down if we are hit by a rock that is thrown by a berserker's power you know?」

「Can't be helped. We can only use sniping or grenade from slight distance away to decrease their number as much as……」

The heliport was already crowded with latent berserkers. The pilot's had a point with his worry, so Bernard decided their tactic with a bitter expression. It was at that timing that Kousuke told them to wait.

「Captain-san. I'll go there. Please open the hatch when we arrive above them. I'll secure the landing place.」

「Don't tell me, you are going there alone? The opponent is a monster group that can only be killed by destroying their brain you know?」

「Yes. But, sniping won't work unless you go through the trouble of making headshot from a flying helicopter, while it's uncertain if grenade can destroy their brain reliably even if it can blow them away. The more time passed, the more the berserkers will come out one after another and we won't be able to take control. There is also the possibility that the crucial targets will run away during that time.」

「That's……certainly, it's just as you say. That was why we decided to land at

the lumbering site five kilometers away from here so that the enemy won't notice us.」

Bernard scratched his head roughly. They got their start spoiled right from the very beginning, and now to make up for that they would make Kousuke who originally should be an unrelated person with this case to clear up the problem. Surely this matter was something shameful for him as a member of security bureau's assault section.

Kousuke who seemed to see through that sentiment of Bernard, clapped on his shoulder thinking that it was unexpected.

「Please don't think that I'm unrelated or anything. Rather, this is *my* battle. I'll eliminate those who stand in Emily's way, protect her, and lead her to where her hand is reaching at. Rather, it's captain-san and others who are our cooperator here.」

「Mister Abyssgate……」

「It's Kousuke. Well, that's how it is, so everyone, please give me *covering* okay? Aa, also just to make sure, I'm Kousuke.」

The words of Kousuke that were said with a fearless smile naturally caused Emily's eyes to grow moist from feeling moved, while Vanessa was making a triumphant look for some reason. And then, because the troops knew about Kousuke's monstrous power, they felt cheered up and sense of trust in their heart.

All of them saluted with a crisp expression and responded to Kousuke's instruction.

「「「「「YES-, ABYSSGATE-!!」」」」」

「That's why-, I told you already that I'm Kousuke-!! Is this intentional!? You are doing this intentionally!?」

「Mister Abyssgate-! We are going to arrive above them before long! It's really okay that I don't lower the altitude isn't it!?」

「Aargh-, pilot! So you too-! The altitude is fine as it is, damn it all-!」

「Abyss! Those guys are starting to turn berserk!」

「Captaiiin! What's with that friendly call name! You want me to punish you with compulsory rope-less bungee jump!? There are about twenty berserkers there huh, son of a bitch!」

「Abyssgate-san! I'm opening the hatch! Good luck!」

「Thank you for the perfect salute! But I'll punch you later! Then, I'll go become the vanguard now!」

「Come all of you! Fix your eyes without blinking! This is the descend of Abyssgate-sama!」

「Danessa. I'll turn you into a lovely villager later you bastaaard! Prepare yourself!」

「Abys——Kousuke-. Do your best!」

「Oi oi oi oi, Emily-chan. You almost called me Abyssgate just now aren't you!? What's the meaning of this!? That's quite shocking though!?」

Even while making fierce retorts, Kousuke leaned out his body from the opened hatch with his head turning toward Emily. Emily was averting her eyes toward the direction of the day after tomorrow. It seemed that she was plainly gotten carried away by the troops saying Abyssgate on and on.

But at the next moment, the helicopter tilted greatly. It seemed that one of the berserkers had thrown a block with a force like a cannon and the pilot took emergency evasion.

As the result,

「Aa」

Kousuke whose guard was down with his head turned toward Emily left behind that kind of stupid voice and got thrown out of the hatch. The troops went「Aa」in unison while staring at Kousuke who was getting smaller away.

「Ko, KOUSUKEEEEEE-」

While Emily's voice was echoing, Kousuke was freefalling face-up while his shoulders skillfully dropped in dejection. To fall like this from the helicopter by incident was really a sloppy way to start a fight.

「Well, I'm this kind of character after all. Surely.」

Kousuke muttered that with a sigh, then with a twirl he rotated midair and looked down to the ground. There, berserkers who were already nearly twenty in number roared while waiting impatiently for the prey.

With those terrifying monsters below, Kousuke took out a sunglasses from his breast pocket and calmly put it on. Right after that, the corner of his lips grinned widely. That was the mark of the descent of the abyss.

「Good work with the welcome. As thanks, I'll present you with a magnificent headhunting!」

He kicked on the air. One of the berserkers waiting on the ground reflexively waved up his hand around like a child seeing the falling prey suddenly changing direction.

Lord Abyssgate shifted his landing point. It wasn't because he wanted to avoid getting surrounded by berserkers. Rather, it was the opposite. He flew toward right in the middle of a spot with the highest concentration of berserkers without hesitation.

And then, just before the landing, *shan*- a clear sound resounded while two short swords were drawn out, his body rotated like a spinning top. Jet black sword flash that could be mistaken as spiral gale was blowing violently, caressing the thick neck of the berserkers that looked like a log.

step, while a light landing sound that was unthinkable coming from a high-altitude descent resounded, the lord stayed unmoving in a chuuni pose. He was kneeling on one knee, the two short swords were held in reverse grip, one at the front and the other one at the back.

At the next moment, four sounds *goto*- resounded behind the four berserkers surrounding the lord. Those sounds unmistakably came from the neck of the berserkers. Looking again, all the four berserkers had cleanly lost everything above their neck. The wounds might be burned or frozen, because no blood spurted out.

The terrifying monsters lost their head that was their only weak point. It was done so easily as though the berserkers were toy that had interchangeable head.

dou- They fell down while raising such noise.

The lord stood up quietly. Of course he didn't forget to sharply push up his sunglasses with one hand while making cool pose of half his body to the back. Seeing the lord like that, the berserkers growled while throwing their killing intent.

The lord took it stride while going「fuh」before he introduced himself.

「A battle is killing each other with strength and will. You all who are lacking will, you won't be able to stop this abyss. Now, let's pull down the curtain. ——Kousuke E Abyssgate, has arrived!!」

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

I caught a cold……

When I went to buy cold medicine, my bicycle's wheel punctured……

When I was ironing my suits, I noticed that a part was torn……

It couldn't be helped, so I drunk the cold medicine and Nico Douga.

John Wick's Udonge is super cute……

Shootout Dream and Battle of Koumakan are lovely.

The next update is planned at 6 P.M Saturday too.